



SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 04

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edits by TheNo1Fan, Pebbles, xXmA5taof5hAdoWZzzXx, Niku @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 04 - Scattered And Smashed

Chapter 301 - The Shining Vermillion Bird's Feather

The atmosphere between Ling Chen and Su'Er completely changed.

From that day when he had saved her onwards, he could always feel there was something hidden in Su'Er's gaze when she looked at him-it seemed that he had not been mistaken. Before, when he heard Xiao Qi saying that Su'Er couldn't stop thinking about the person who had saved her, and that she was head over heels for him, he would always smile. However, this was now problematic for him. After all, Su'Er was engaged to Xuanyuan Xue Yi, and her personality was quite weak. She was simply unable to resist like Yun Meng Xin. As such, she had always silently accepted her fate. But now, when he saw Su'Er looking at him, he felt a bit flustered, as well as pained that she would have to go through such a thing.

The atmosphere was shattered almost immediately as a light flashed and a figure appeared next to Su'Er. Ling Chen immediately put his mask back on before the person could fully appear.

“Ha! Su Su, you didn't even wait for me to finish showering and logged on by yourself. Morning, big brother Ling tian.” Xiao Qi waved at Ling Chen as she smiled. She couldn't feel that there was something different between Ling Chen and Su'Er. She came up to Ling Chen as she said, “I was actually going to find you-my big brother wanted me to tell you something.”

“Oh? Your big brother? What did he have to say?” Ling Chen

asked curiously. He was not very close with Xiao Qiu Feng, but he knew that there wasn't any enmity between them at least, despite the fact that the Battle Alliance was a subsidiary of the Yan Huang Alliance.

"It's very important," Xiao Qi earnestly said, "Today is the day of the Yan Huang Alliance's celebration, so he told you not to go there no matter what. Long Tian Yun has made many preparations, and not only is he not afraid of you going, but he even hopes that you fall into his trap. Apparently there are many scary machines and high level Guards. There's even a trap that can prevent people from escaping-if big brother Ling Tian is trapped by that, and is attacked by high level Guards, it'll be much too dangerous."

"Don't worry, I won't go." Ling Chen casually replied. When Gui Ya had given him the warning either, he hadn't been planning on going either. The Yan Huang Alliance was the Yan Huang Alliance after all. They had just been officially established, and yet they had spent so much money on their defences. If he wanted to destroy their headquarters, it would be almost impossible at this point.

"Good! That day, you said that you would pay them back, so I was worried that you would actually go and attack them today." Xiao Qi breathed out in relief as she patted her chest. She continued to speak, "There's something else that big brother told you to be careful of."

"What is it?"

"Long Tian Yun cancelled the kill-on-sight order for you, but has

instead focused his efforts on finding your real life identity. Big brother said that they've gotten close, so you should definitely be careful. If Long Tian Yun discovers your real life identity, then... then he'll immediately attack you. With the Long family's power, as well as how much he hates you, if he really does find you in the real world, it'll be hard for you to even live in China anymore."

Xiao Qi was extremely anxious as she said this, and Su'Er also looked incredibly worried. Being chased down by the Long family in the real world was much scarier than being chased down in the virtual world. Since the Long family held so much political power in China, wanting to find someone was incredibly simple for them. The girls were all worried that Ling Tian's real life identity would be found out by Long Tian Yun. Long Tian Yun definitely held irreconcilable hatred towards him because of all the things he had done.

"Hahaha," Hearing Xiao Qi's words, Ling Chen did not seem worried at all, but instead laughed, "There's no such thing as an absolute secret. My real life identity is bound to be discovered by Long Tian Yun sooner or later. Even if he finds out my real life identity, he can't do much to me. He had best pray that he doesn't find me though."

When it came to espionage and counter-espionage, there was no one more skilled than him... alright, apart from that red-haired woman. If his real life identity really was discovered by Long Tian Yun, he would know immediately.

"Heheh, I wonder where all that confidence came from, that you're looking down on even the Long family." Xiao Qi laughed,

“Hehe, but then again, only our big brother Ling Tian can say such words without seeming overly arrogant. I believe in big brother Ling Tian, but please be careful.”

“En, got it, please thank your big brother for me.” Ling Chen nodded as he smiled. Xiao Qiu Feng was called the Cold Magistrate, but deep down, he didn’t seem too cold.

“No need to thank us-big brother is very curious about you. If it’s possible, he wants to secretly get to know you and become friends with you. You’re the first person he’s been so interested in getting to know.” Xiao Qi said as she gazed at him, “Oh, by the way, what have you been doing these days? Your level hasn’t risen at all, and everyone’s been talking about that. You were heading to Vermillion Bird City before, so what have you been doing in the last few days?”

Ling Chen thought to the Vermillion Bird’s third condition, he shook his head in annoyance. If he couldn’t find a person with a Flame Soul, all of his efforts until now would be for nought. He helplessly replied, “I’ve been trying to find someone, so I’ve been running around the city.”

“Finding someone? What sort of person are they? If you want, I can get big brother to help. Big brother has lots of people, so finding a person shouldn’t be too hard.” Xiao Qi immediately said.

Ling Chen shook his head. If it was a certain person, then he would have sent his subordinates to look for them. However, he didn’t even know who the person was, and the Vermillion Bird had only given him a single feather, “It’s alright, right now I’m the

only person who can find that someone. Alright, Shui Ruo and them are at the boundary of the Forest Region if you want to meet up with them. You can also go have some fun at the Yan Huang Alliance's celebration if you want. I need to go and try to find that person now, so I'll see you guys later."

As he spoke, Ling Chen took out the Vermillion Bird's feather. As soon as the crimson red feather appeared in his hand, a strange warmth came from it, startling him.

"No way, I don't want to go to anything to do with Long Tian Yun. Right, Su Su?" Xiao Qi never liked Long Tian Yun to begin with due to Meng Xin's circumstances. Now, due to the enmity between him and Ling Tian, as well as her admiration for Ling Tian, she despised him even more.

"En, en!" Su'Er vigorously nodded.

It was as if Ling Chen didn't hear them, as he stared intensely at the Vermillion Bird's feather in his right hand. The feather was currently letting out a flame-red light.

This... Could this be...

"Wah! What a pretty feather! It's red like flames and even shines."

The beautiful feather attracted both girls' attention. The feather that came from a god beast radiated a sense of dignity and beauty

that normal birds' feathers simply could not possess. Ling Chen looked closely at the feather as his heartrate sped up.

It was shining... that meant the person he needed to find was within 10 steps of him!

Within 10 steps was... Xiao Qi and Su'Er!

No way...

Ling Chen held the feather in front of him and walked towards Su'Er. The light became dimmer, and Ling Chen immediately walked towards Xiao Qi. This time, the light began to shine even brighter. Ling Chen looked at Xiao Qi in surprise.

Ling Chen's actions caused Xiao Qi to feel a bit strange. She embarrassedly asked, "Big brother Ling Tian, why are you looking at me like that?"

He had spent so much time walking around in the Azure Dragon City, and had never thought that the person he needed to find was someone by his side.

However, Qi Qi was a player, not a resident of the Forgotten Continent. According to what the Vermillion Bird said about people with Flame Souls, that meant...

Ling Chen immediately put the feather away and calmed himself down, while saying, "Su Su, you should go over to the Forest

Region for now. Shui Ruo and them are waiting for you. Qi Qi, I need you to go somewhere with me.”

“Oh? Where are we going?”

“The Vermillion Bird City, let’s go.”

Without giving Xiao Qi any opportunities to ask more questions, Ling Chen took out a teleport scroll for Vermillion Bird City, and shattered it. He had already given every member of Heart’s Dream many teleport scrolls to the Vermillion Bird City, so they wouldn’t have to go through everything that he did in order to get there.

“I wonder what it’s about? Hmm, it’ll just be me and big brother Ling Tian...” Thinking to here, Xiao Qi giggled to herself, took out a teleport scroll to Vermillion Bird City, and also shattered it.

Even though it was the Vermillion Bird City’s Central Square, there were not many people around. Up until now, the only players who had been to the Vermillion Bird City were the people from Heart’s Dream;

When she arrived, Xiao Qi saw Ling Tian standing in front of her. She walked over as she asked, “Big brother Ling Tian, why did we come here? Could it be that... you wanted to have a date with me? Hehe.”

“Haha, more or less. To be able to have a date with a cute girl like Qi Qi, I’m sure all the other boys would be jealous to death.” Ling

Chen mischievously replied.

Xiao Qi smirked, “Hmph, you’re such a liar. Big brother Ling Tian has the beautiful Shui Ruo always by his side, and big sisters Meng Xin and Mu Bing Yao are much prettier than me. Why would big brother Ling Tian like me?”

Although she said that, her cheeks still became pink, and a small smile of delight formed on her face.

“Why not? Qi Qi’s very charming and pretty as well. Alright, let’s stop joking around, I’m going to take you somewhere.”

“Where?” Xiao Qi excitedly asked as she muttered to herself, “Who’s joking around with you. It’s not like I’d reject a date with you, hmph!”

“You’ll know when we get there.” Ling Chen said as he summoned his Cloud Stepping Mare.

Chapter 302 - Qi Qi's Heart

“Are we going somewhere very far away?” Seeing that Ling Chen had summoned his mount, Xiao Qi's eyes overflowed with radiance. She did not summon her own mount immediately as she looked up towards him and asked.

“It's very far away-we will only arrive in the afternoon even if we ride on our mounts and travel nonstop.” Ling Chen replied. There was no other city between the Vermillion Bird City and the Outer Region of the Lava Purgatory, so they could only head south from the Vermillion Bird City with no shortcuts.

“So it's that far away.” Xiao Qi lowered her head as she mumbled softly. The corner of her mouth hooked upwards as a crafty radiance shone in her eyes. She raised her head as she said with an innocent expression, “But, I don't have a mount.”

“Eh, you don't have a mount?” Ling Chen was startled..... This didn't seem logical. With Xiao Qi's family background, buying a mount of the highest grade from a store was like buying a cabbage from the supermarket; how could she not even have a mount? Without much thought, he turned around and said, “The store selling mounts is not far away from here, let go over there to buy one first.”

“Ah? No need, no need.” Xiao Qi quickly shook her head forcefully as she went over to Ling Chen's side with a few steps and reached out her hand to grab onto the soft fur of the Cloud Stepping Mare, “I will just need to share a mount with big brother Ling Tian and everything will be fine... my speed is definitely

slower than big brother Ling Tian's by a lot, so even if I ride on my own mount, I would only be holding you back. Plus, the Cloud Stepping Mare is designed for two people."

The speed that a mount travels at is calculated by adding the Movement Speed of the rider to the additional Movement Speed from the mount. When two people ride on a mount together, the Movement Speed of the fastest rider is used. Ling Chen's Movement Speed was 175, which was incomparable to normal players. Thus, if Xiao Qi were to ride on a mount alone then she would easily be left behind, and the time taken to reach the Lava Purgatory would be longer.

However, if both of them rode on the mount together then it would seem a little too intimate.

"Can we, please..." Seeing the slightly baffled look on Ling Chen's face, Xiao Qi used both her hands to softly shake the back of the horse. She was like a little girl wanting to get what she yearned for, using a soft voice and acting coquettishly. This caused Ling Chen's heart to beat madly a few times and he nodded his head. He simply didn't know how to refuse, and he told himself that this was the only way not to delay their journey. He reached out his hand and said, "Mmm, okay then, come, sit behind me."

Xiao Qi revealed a smile of joy as she put her fair and smooth little hand into Ling Chen's hand, "Can you let me sit in front? I'm afraid that I might fall off if I sit behind."

At this point, how would Ling Chen not know what she was thinking. The warm and soft touch from a young woman's hands

made his heart limp..... it was not that his determination was too weak, but rather, every girl in Heart's Dream could make a nation crumble and its people suffer, and every girl was irresistible to any normal man. He put some strength into his hands and pulled Xiao Qi onto the horse's back..... letting her sit in front.

Xiao Qi leaned her body backwards naturally as she rested on Ling Chen's chest. The girl who had her wish come true was satisfied as she closed her eyes and enjoyed the warmth and scent of a man. Her cheeks were flushed red and the corner of her lips were gently raised..... This was their first time having intimate contact with each other. No matter where he brought her to, being able to lean on him, she was willing to go to even the most dangerous and frightening places in the world.

With such a beautiful girl in his embrace, Ling Chen's heartbeat became slightly erratic. Xiao Qi had the charms that can topple any guy over and nobody would be able to remain calm with such a girl taking the initiative to lean into their embrace intimately. After taking a deep breath stealthily, Ling Chen slapped on the back of the horse, "Let's go."

"Ah..... so fast!"

Xiao Qi cried out as the Cloud Stepping Mare headed towards the direction of the southern gates of the Vermillion Bird City.

The speed of the Cloud Stepping Mare was extremely fast, and very soon, they had already left the Vermillion Bird City far behind. During this whole time, the only sound that could be heard was the constant galloping sound. Ling Chen and Xiao Qi did

not speak at all and their bodies were cuddled together without separating for even a moment from the beginning to end. They were immersed in a subtle, yet magical, atmosphere, that neither of them wanted to wake up from.

After leaving the Vermillion Bird City, the warm and dry wind from the wilderness swept into their faces. Xiao Qi, who had kept her eyes closed the entire time as if she was asleep, stealthily opened her eyes. She felt a kind of tranquillity that she had never experienced before when lying on Ling Chen's chest..... this was the first time that she had felt this kind of tranquility ever since she was young; even her father and older brother had never given her such a feeling before. She wanted to fall asleep in a carefree manner and enjoy this feeling. However, she could not bear to sleep because once she went to sleep, she would not be able to savour this experience.

“Big brother Ling Tian” Xiao Qi slightly tilted her head backwards as she spoke to the silent Ling Chen.

“Hm?” Ling Chen lowered his head and looked at her.

“My mother passed away the day I was born. From the day I was conscious of my surroundings, I always felt a lack of security. Since I was very young, I always dreamt of having someone who is very powerful, unafraid of everything, who will care for me and protect me. Someone who will cause me not to worry or be afraid when I am with him. Big brother Ling Tian, what do you think, will there be someone like that?”

It was hard to distinctly make out the expression in Xiao Qi's

eyes. She was usually in high spirits and her voice usually had a higher tone than other girls. However, at this moment, her voice was incredibly soft and gentle. Ling Chen pondered for a while before taking out the moonlight treasure box and placed it in Xiao Qi's hands, "Qi Qi, open it up. The person that you see inside is the one who you yearn for the most."

"Ah?" Seeing the especially elegant and beautiful little box, Xiao Qi's face was full of wonder, "Really?"

While marvelling at it, Xiao Qi opened up the moonlight treasure box carefully. Lustrous white moonlight was released immediately, shining into her beautiful eyes. Gradually, a blurred figure appeared in the moonlight and was became clearer and clearer.

"Wah!" Xiao Qi made a lovable cry when she saw a familiar figure while clapsing onto the moonlight treasure box. She gave a bright and sweet smile, "I see it, I see it!"

"What do you see?" Ling Chen smiled lightly as he asked.

"It's big brother Ling Tian."

Ling Chen: "....."

"Not only is this box pretty but it's also fascinating! It can actually project the picture of a person! Is it big brother Ling Tian who put his own image in directly?" Xiao Qi was unable to take her eyes away as her gaze was fixated on the figure in the moonlight.

Ling Chen's words surfaced in her mind..... "The person that you see inside is the one who you yearn for the most."

Could it be..... Could it be that big brother Ling Tian knows how I feel, so he is using this kind of method to confess to me..... is it like that..... is it really like that.....

The young girl's heartbeat accelerated faster and faster and she almost lost her ability to think. She didn't notice Ling Chen's wonderfully priceless expression at all.

..... So her feelings towards me aren't as simple as simply adoring a strong person.

Xiao Qi gently closed the moonlight treasure box. She kept on thinking about Ling Chen's words as well as the figure in the treasure box, and she felt that she was filled with a blissful warmth deep in her heart.

He said that the person in the box is the person who I yearn for the most, so is he really using this type of method to confess to me? Or is this just a prank from him...

However, no matter what, there are some things that I already have no rights to pursue or possess. If this is really your confession, because I like you so much, I simply can't be with you. No matter if it's real or just my wishful thinking, I will just let it settle in my heart. Even if I can't have you, having this kind of moment is already enough for me. So let me retain this moment in my mind in its most beautiful state.....

Until the day I leave this world.....

After putting the moonlight treasure box back into Ling Chen's hands, she laid on his chest and carefreely closed her eyes as she gradually smiled. The corners of her mouth unhurriedly produced a slight murmur, "Big brother Ling Tian didn't lie to me; that person let me find the safest place in this world....."

Ling Chen: "....."

The sound of galloping sounded out unceasingly as they rode in silence. Not long after, Ling Chen secretly leaned forward to take a look at Xiao Qi and found out that she had already fallen asleep, looking secure and blissful.

"Whew....." Exhaling out a breath of air, Ling Chen tried his best to not move his body in case it woke Xiao Qi up. There was still a long way to go ahead.

"Kekekeke, no less than expected from my little master; you have already claimed so many hearts at such an age. Your little sister Shui Ruo loves you to death, and that girl called Bing Yao can also be said to be head over heels for you; she'd be willing to die a hundred times for you. Even little Su'Er's feelings for you have been quite deep since a long time ago. And now, the adorable little Qi Qi is also smitten to the point that she has already lost her soul to you. Oh, there is also a possibility that the little sister called Yun Meng Xin may have already secretly fallen in love with you since you have helped her so much."

Ling Chen rubbed his forehead, “Don’t spout nonsense.”

Qi Yue’s voice was as soft as a cotton, and gently replied, “I’m not spouting nonsense. Although little master’s strength is pitifully weak now, but your ability to ruin girls is stronger by a few hundred times. It’s hard to say whether you will ruin even more girls in the future. Even this poor little me is so deep in love and obsessed with little master.”

“Enough.” Ling Chen had a slight headache and silenced Qi Yue as he said calmly, “You should know that I only love Shui Ruo.”

“Hehe” Qi Yue laughed softly, “Although little master can fool other people and even yourself by saying that, but you can’t fool me. Little master does indeed love little sister Shui Ruo to death, but that doesn’t mean that you can’t like other girls as well. Let’s take little sister Qi Qi for example. If you don’t like her, then why did you agree to riding a mount with her so intimately? Don’t forget, I can feel your heartbeat and even the tremors in your soul, so I am very, very clear about little master’s feelings. There is also little Su’Er; at that time when both of you were together alone, there were many occasions when little master had the impulse to kiss her.”

Ling Chen: “You.....”

“Furthermore, I have even stronger evidence..... which is that the girl called Mu Bing Yao has given her virginity to little master.”

Ling Chen's body swayed as he nearly fell off the horse, "You.....
how did..... how did you....."

Chapter 303 - Heavenly Sun Arteries

“Little master, you want to ask me how I know, right? It’s simple: the reason is because there is a bit of her smell on little master’s body. It’s impossible to get rid of the smell of a virgin. You’re having fun with other girls on one hand while you’re saying that you only like little sister Shui Ruo on the other hand; little master, you’re not honest at all. Furthermore, it’s really cruel to little sister Bing Yao who views you as more important than herself.”

Ling Chen breathed in deeply and replied listlessly, “That was before I knew Shui Ruo. Alright, don’t say anymore. Shui Ruo told me many times that she allows me to like other girls and I know it’s because she doesn’t want me to feel troubled about the incident with Dia Wu. However, the more she behaves that way, the more I feel like I can’t let her down. I am unable to forget about Dia Wu and one day in the future I will find Dia Wu, but other than that, I will not do anything to let Shui Ruo down.”

“Ding.....”

At this moment, a notification for a text message came from his communication device. The only person who would send a text message to him was most likely Su’Er.

He raised his wrist and confirmed that it was indeed Su’Er who sent the text message,

“Big brother Ling Tian, it will be my 16th birthday on the 30th of

October. Would you be able to sneak in to the dinner banquet that day? I just want to see you on that night and I won't let other people know... is that alright?"

Ling Chen was startled for a while when he saw the text message.

"I heard little sister Xiao Qi mention before that little Su Su will officially be engaged to that guy called Xuanyuan Xue Yi on her 16th birthday. Little master, do you understand little Su Su's intention?" Qi Yue said in a playful manner.

Ling Chen stayed silent without saying anything.

"It's really simple. She likes you and it's to the point that she can't help but like you, so she doesn't want to be engaged to Xuanyuan Xue Yi. However, she was already initially an obedient girl, and her family, Xuanyuan Xue Yi's family as well as many other famous and powerful families will be there that day, so she really has no courage to reject him in front of everybody. Only you would be able to give her that kind of courage. Aiya, even I would like to hug such a cute, beautiful, and obedient little girl like her to sleep every day. Little master, are you really willing to let little Su Su, who has already fallen for you, to be with that guy called Xuanyuan Xue Yi?"

In just one day, the atmosphere these two girls and himself, and the feelings he had towards them, had quietly changed in a subtle way. These changes kept attacking his heartstrings which made him to feel restless.

He did not reply to Su'Er's message, nor did he answer Qi Yue as he spurred the Cloud Stepping Mare onwards.

At the border of the Lava Purgatory.

“Qi Qi, Qi Qi.”

Stopping in front of the Lava Purgatory, Ling Chen shook Xiao Qi who was still in her sleep. Along the way, Xiao Qi spent most of her time in her sleep. She slept especially soundly and peacefully, as if she could never get enough of sleep. It was unknown whether she was usually this greedy for sleep.

Hearing Ling Chen's voice, Xiao Qi woke up slowly and blinked her hazy eyes a few times, “Big brother Ling Tian, have we arrived?”

“Mmm, we've arrived. Alright, let's get down.”

Ling Chen reached out his hands and gently held onto Xiao Qi's slender waist as he jumped down from the horseback to stand on the dried-yellow ground. Xiao Qi also reached out naturally to hug him, but she did not let go even after reaching the ground for quite a long while. Ling Chen was not sure if she had forgotten or subconsciously did not want to let go.

“Where is this place?” Xiao Qi asked in surprise as she looked at the sky in front of them that was dyed in red.

“The name of this place is called Lava Purgatory and it is said to be the hottest place in the Forgotten Continent.” Xiao Qi’s body was still leaning on his body softly and Ling Chen could not bear to push her away, so he could only pretend that he did not mind as he answered calmly.

“Is it hot?” Ling Chen reached out with his hand to wipe away the sweat on his head as he asked in concern.

“A little bit, but it’s still okay. Big brother Ling Tian, why did you bring me over to this place? Was it to look at the scenery? Red coloured ground, red coloured sky, and there also seems to be a lot of fire on the ground. It’s all so pretty.” Xiao Qi replied in an infatuated tone. Who knew whether the infatuation was with the scenery or with the person beside her. At this moment, Ling Chen noticed that while he was sweating profusely and feeling uncomfortable even though his tolerance level was a lot higher than normal people, Xiao Qi’s face was rosy as usual and no sign of sweat could be found on her forehead.

After pondering for a little while, Ling Chen did not summon the Vermillion Bird immediately as he asked, “Qi Qi, I have a few questions to ask you. You must answer them seriously, okay?”

“Okay, what are they?” Xiao Qi answered in glowing spirits.

“Are you a fire element esper?” Ling Chen asked.

“Eh?” Xiao Qi’s face was filled with surprise as she shook her

head, “Of course not. Big brother Ling Tian, why did you ask me that?”

She’s not? Ling Chen was stumped. The Vermillion Bird said that a person who possesses a Flame Soul has very strong talents in controlling fire. However, Xiao Qi directly denied it and she doesn’t seem to be lying. Judging from her expression, she’s probably curious why I asked such a weird question. Since she said no to the first question then there’s no need to ask the rest of the questions.

What was happening..... so Xiao Qi didn’t possess a Flame Soul? Then what was the reason for the reaction from the Vermillion Bird’s feather? Could it be that there was something wrong with the feather?

It seemed that the only thing he could do was call out the Vermillion Bird.

Choosing not to answer Xiao Qi’s question, Ling Chen took out the Vermillion Bird’s feather. Under Xiao Qi’s surprised gaze, he faced the Vermillion Bird’s feather that was radiating light and shouted, “Vermillion Bird!!”

In such a vast and spacious area, no echo could be produced. Just when Ling Chen’s voice had completely dissipated among the hot and dry wind, a huge image of a bird slowly appeared in the sky in front of them.

“Ah!!”

Although it was only an image, but the formless pressure and intimidation from the Vermillion Bird's phantasm greatly shocked Xiao Qi. Xiao Qi screamed out as she subconsciously tightened her grip on Ling Chen with both her hands, and her body stuck closely to him as she leaned on his body. Ling Chen said softly beside her ear, "Don't be afraid, this is just the phantasm of the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City. It won't harm us." After that, he raised his head to face the Vermillion Bird's phantasm, "Vermillion Bird, is the person beside me the type of human that you wanted me to find?"

The Vermillion Bird did not reply for a very long time. Ling Chen could feel that the Vermillion Bird's gaze did not fall on him, but on Xiao Qi who was beside him. Under Vermillion Bird's gaze, Xiao Qi had to withstand the pressure from such a huge god beast. She had a nervous expression on her face and did not dare to say anything.

After a long while, the Vermillion Bird's faintly discernible voice resounded in the air, "You carry a Flame Soul in your body, but you did not utilise this heaven bestowed talent for yourself and even tried to suppress it. You even selected the water element as your profession. Are you thinking of using water, which restrains fire, to suppress the fire that may explode anytime out from your body? Little did you know, by doing this, the flames would not be suppressed, but would explode out more violently. You could have had a lifespan of 25 years, but by trying to suppress it, you will die after the flames explode out another five times-due to your five major organs being incinerated. I believe that the last time it exploded out was ten days ago, and the next time it explodes will be in one month! From the next time onwards, the intervals that it explodes out will be shorter than a month, and every time it

explodes out, you may not make it out alive. Which is to say, within half a year, you will definitely die.”

Xiao Qi's body trembled violently and her pair of beautiful eyes opened wide as she stared at the phantasm in the sky blankly.

Ling Chen was also shocked and immediately asked, “Vermillion Bird, what do you mean by that? You're saying that she.....”

“You can ask her if what I said is true or not.”

Ling Chen turned his head to look at Xiao Qi, only to realise that her expression was filled with shock and her face was abnormally pale. Her flickering pair of eyes was looking at the phantasm as she asked in fear, “How..... how did you know.....”

The last time that it exploded out was indeed ten days ago! The ‘fire’ that was in her body was also suppressed from the day she was born. Even choosing to become a water element mage was also in fear of the ‘fire’ that was in her body. The ‘Vermillion Bird’ that was in front of her eyes, a beast in the game world, had actually voiced out her biggest secret.

Xiao Qi's reply gave Ling Chen's heart a big shock. He held her shoulders as he asked worriedly, “Qi Qi, what is all this about? Vermillion Bird said that you have a ‘fire’ in your body, and that you would not be able to live past another half a year..... so you have already known all this? Is this for real?”

His concern and panic made her heart feel very warm and sweet, and if it was possible, she would like to enjoy this kind of feeling for the rest of her life. She lowered her head as she did not dare to look at Ling Chen in the eye. It was impossible for her not to believe what the Vermillion Bird had said. The previous flaring up had come too early, which caught her off guard. And now, she was told that the reason was actually because it was the start of the countdown for her life. Even she herself had not thought that she would only be left with a short half a year's time instead of the two years that she had originally thought.

“Big brother Ling Tian,” she said softly. She had wanted to hide this matter from him until the day she left this world so as to not burden him. But standing near the man who gave her the security that she most desired for, her heart could no longer continue sealing this matter up no matter what.....

“I have told you before that my mother had left me on the day I was born..... from the time when I could remember, my dad and big brother told me that mum died due to a difficult labour. As I grew older, the symptoms from my body became more and more frequent, and they could no longer stop me from knowing the truth. When I was seven years old, the ‘fire’ that my dad had helped me suppress for the past seven years finally exploded out, and that was when I knew the reason why my mum had left me.....

“When my mum was still conceiving me, she had to bear the scorching pain in her body and all her five major organs were severely damaged. However, she relied on her willpower to miraculously persevere till the day I was born. At that moment when I was born, the bedsheet suddenly caught fire and while I

was crying loudly in the fire, my mum looked at me and smiled lightly. Before she had the chance to speak to me, she had left me forever.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Ever since it exploded out when I was seven years old, the ‘fire’ in my body became harder and harder to suppress, and the frequency of it exploding out became faster and faster. It exploded out again when I was nine years old, then ten and a half years old..... then it was half a year, and it became once per few months. The last flaring up and the previous one before that had only a short interval of one and a half months.

“I pestered my dad for a reason and finally one day dad told me while tearing up that I possess the ‘Heavenly Sun Arteries’. Apparently only less than ten people in the whole world in every hundred years will have the same illness as me, and none of them live past 25 years of age. When the illness acts up, all the cells in the body rapidly rise in temperature as if flames were ignited inside of the body. It’s extremely painful, and it may even sever one’s consciousness apart during the final stages.

“My dad travelled almost the whole world just to find a cure, but he always returned empty handed. After all, there was never a case where someone was cured of the Heavenly Sun Arteries. After that, my dad could only find the most powerful ice element espers to suppress the ‘fire’ inside of my body every three months. Even so, the doctor had told me very clearly that I would only live till twenty years old at most.”

Chapter 304 - Believing In Miracles

Ling Chen felt as if he had been smashed in the heart by a hammer. He had never thought that the most playful and joyful girl in Heart's Dream, who was always in high spirits and had a bright smile on her face had such a terrifying illness. This girl, who always seemed so carefree and cheerful, would only live till 20 years of age at most.

“Why didn't you tell me this earlier??” Ling Chen asked as he gently shook her, his heart in pain. Recalling all of her smiles and laughter, he suddenly realised how those were just masks to cover up the pain and sadness within her heart. The Vermillion Bird said that it was rare for those with Flame Souls to live past the age of 20, and Xiao Qi's current state... could it be that her 'Heavenly Sun Arteries' was the 'Flame Soul' mentioned by the Vermillion Bird?

Xiao Qi shook her head and softly replied, “Only a few people know about this apart from my family. Even big sister Meng Xin and Su Su only found out three years ago. I wanted to hide this from you all, because I didn't want you guys to worry about me. After all, it's impossible to change my destiny... Plus...” Xiao Qi looked up, a slight smile on her face, “What's so bad about living until I'm 20? Because my life is going to be shorter than everyone else's, within this period of time, I'm going to live better and happier than anyone else. I'm going to smile and laugh every day, even more than everyone else. I have the best sisters in the world, Meng Xin and Su Su, and they will always be by my side.

I also have a wonderful family. My dad and big brother treat me so, so well, and they always try to satisfy my demands no matter how outrageous they are. My big brother said that I'm his only

little sister, so if anyone dares to bully me, he'll rip them to shreds.

“And now, I also have big brother Ling Tian. Big brother Ling Tian, did you know, your appearance caused my world to become even brighter and more colourful. Just then, while we were riding, although the wind was quite strong, I had a very peaceful and satisfying sleep because I was able to lean against big brother Ling Tian. It was so comfortable sleeping like that, and I wanted to keep sleeping like that and never wake up. To have all of you by my side, even if I had to die immediately, I wouldn't be afraid, so, so...”

“Don't say silly things! Who said you'll die! In this world, there's no such thing as an incurable illness, and nothing is absolute. There's definitely a way to cure your Heavenly Sun Arteries; it's just that no one has found it yet. You're not allowed to say such things anymore!” Ling Chen loudly replied as he cut her off.

Due to his experiences in 'Heaven' and 'Hell' which left him with only hatred and a desire for vengeance, Ling Chen's blood had become completely cold. In his world, there was no such thing as compassion, sympathy or kindness. To him, life was completely meaningless and worthless. However, after meeting Shui Ruo, his icy heart had been gradually melted, until he was like a normal person again. However, his emotions and care would only be for those who were closest to him; everything and everyone else would still be met with his coldness.

At this moment, upon feeling those complex emotions, Ling Chen suddenly realised that the girl in front of him had unknowingly become an important person to him.

Due to fate, they had been brought together in Heart's Dream. They hadn't known each other for a long time, but they grew closer and closer each time they interacted. Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi and Su'Er all had prestigious backgrounds, as well as world-class beauty and beautiful and pure personalities. None of them had the arrogance and shallowness of most high-class ladies. As the saying went, birds of a feather flock together. Only girls like Xiao Qi and Su'Er could become close to someone like Meng Xin.

Heart's Dream was created by and for Meng Xin, but he deeply liked and cared for each of the girls in Heart's Dream. He enjoyed the feeling of working together with them towards a common goal.

Finding out about Xiao Qi's condition had created massive waves within his heart.

Xiao Qi smiled cheerfully, "Big brother Ling Tian, for you to care so much about me, I'm really, really happy. However, you really don't need to worry about me. Being with you guys makes me incredibly happy. Even though I don't want to leave you all, but if that day comes, I won't be afraid, because I have all of you."

Ling Chen gripped his fists together, and gently breathed in. He looked at her determinedly in the eyes, "I won't allow you to die. Meng Xin, Bing Yao, Shui Ruo and Tian Tian won't let you leave them either. Our Heart's Dream has only come together for a short while, so we need you to work hard with us! Trust me, there'll definitely be a way!"

“Ahem, saving her is but a simple matter. Don’t you remember what I told you a few days ago?”

After listening to them for a while, the Vermillion Bird finally spoke out. Ling Chen looked up and asked while frowning, “Vermillion Bird, is Xiao Qi’s Heavenly Sun Arteries the ‘Flame Soul’ you were talking about?”

“Heavenly Sun Arteries? Nonsense, her condition has nothing to do with her arteries or heart. The fire within her body comes from her Flame Soul. Only about one in one trillion people possess a Flame Soul. To you humans, the Flame Soul can be a horrible curse, or a great blessing. If the Flame Soul cannot be controlled, and it is allowed to flare up, then the person will not live past 20 years of age. However, if it can be controlled, then that person’s accomplishments with fire will be something no one else can even dream to match up to.

“Moreover, the Flame Soul can also refine and strengthen her body, allowing her to live thousands, or even more than ten thousand years. However, it’s almost impossible for humans to control fire. Despite this, with my help, this will be an incredibly simple task. If you want to save her, then leave her here. Inheriting my Vermillion Bird’s Flames will not harm her, but will rather be the greatest blessing of her life. With my Flames and her Flame Soul, she will be incomparable in wielding fire.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Xiao Qi: “.....”

After the Vermillion Bird finished talking, Ling Chen and Xiao Qi could only stare mutely.

“What? You are unwilling? Countless creatures have begged me for even a bit of my Flames, but I refused each and every one of them. If it wasn’t to save the Golden Crow’s descendant, why would I pass on my clan’s Flames to a human? What reason would you have to refuse my Vermillion Bird’s Flames?”

“No, you’re mistaken. To be able to receive the inheritance and blessing of a god beast is something that we could only dream of; why would we be unwilling? However, there are some circumstances that prevent us from agreeing immediately,” Ling Chen said as he glanced at Xiao Qi, “We’re not like you, as we come from a different world. What you just said might not apply to us players.”

Virtual games had already developed to an extraordinary level and the NPCs in virtual games were often just as smart and intelligent as humans. Within the games, NPCs acted and spoke exactly like real humans, and some were even more intelligent than most humans. However, in the end, they were still NPCs within games. Xiao Qi’s illness had not been cured after so many years, despite all the efforts of her family. Now, a creature within a virtual game made by humans said that it could easily save her, as well as allow her to live for thousands of years...

Any player who heard these words would be sceptical... even if the creature that said these words was the incredibly powerful and majestic god beast, the Vermillion Bird.

“I know you are humans from another world, but what of it? What difference does it make?” The Vermillion Bird asked in reply.

Ling Chen wasn't quite sure how to answer the Vermillion Bird. He thought for a while before replying, “As players, only our consciousness enters the game. The bodies you see are not our real bodies.”

“Do you know why it is called the ‘Flame Soul’?” The Vermillion Bird once again asked.

Ling Chen shook his head.

“The Flame Soul is a soul of the fire element. Human souls usually do not belong to any element, but her soul belongs to the fire element. What I require is this sort of soul. Though you live in a different world, what comes here is your very soul! What I will give her is the origin flames of my Vermillion Bird's Flames, as well as the memories for how to control the Flames. All of these things only require her soul; why would I need her real body?”

“But...” Although he couldn't completely accept it, Ling Chen couldn't rebut what it was saying. However, no matter how logical it all seemed, a creature in a virtual world said that it could save her, as well as let her live thousands of years... any rational person wouldn't be able to accept and believe such a thing easily.

“You need my help, and I need your help. I have no reason to

deceive you or set up a trap for you. She has, at most, half a year left. This period of time is when the Flame Soul is the most active. If she inherits my Flames during this period of time, the inheritance which would usually take a few years can be finished within a few months. If you believe me, then let her stay here. I will keep my promise and save the Golden Crow's descendant while carrying out the inheritance. If you don't believe me, I won't force you to, and you will be free to leave."

As a god beast and the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, why would it trick players like them? Not only could it save Xiao Qi, it would also give her its Flames-this was something most players could only dream of! This was one of the four god beasts! Moreover, it wanted to find a person with a Flame Soul because it wanted to save Xi Ling.

Ling Chen could not find any reason to refuse.

He turned around and looked at Xiao Qi calmly as he softly said, "Qi Qi, do you... believe in miracles?"

Xiao Qi blinked a few times. Although he was wearing a mask, it was as if she could see his expression and understood what he was thinking. She gently nodded, "Of course I believe in miracles. After all, big brother Ling Tian has created so many already."

"In that case, do you want to stay here? Maybe a miracle really will happen."

Chapter 305 - The Avenger From Hell (1)

“Very good, it looks like you’ve made your decision. Not only is her Flame Soul at its peak, but she’s also free of wickedness. She is the ideal candidate for inheriting my clan’s flames. However, I want to remind you that once we begin the inheritance, you cannot leave at all-not even to your own world.

“Eh?” Xiao Qi and Ling Chen both looked at the Vermillion Bird in shock.

“How long will it take to finish the inheritance then?”

“Under normal circumstances, 3-5 years. However, since your Flame Soul is at its peak, it’ll take less than 1 year. If your talent is exceptional, and you fully cooperate, it’s possible that the inheritance can take half a year.” The Vermillion Bird replied.

“Ah... such a long time.”

Ling Chen frowned, as he asked, “Vermillion Bird, if it takes that long, then...”

“I know what you’re worried about. Don’t worry, saving the Golden Crow’s descendant requires my Origin Flames, as does the inheritance. They can happen simultaneously. During the inheritance, both she and the Golden Crow’s descendant will bathe in my Origin Flames. When the inheritance has finished, she will be saved and the Golden Crow’s descendant will not only be revived, but will also be more powerful than before.”

This answer allowed Ling Chen to let go of his worries. He looked at Xiao Qi... if she made this decision, she would have to stay here for a long time. It was possible to stay online for a whole year, with the current technology. However, only the most crazy players would do such a thing. In the end, humans were meant to exist in the real world. Staying online for a whole year would make one's family worry unceasingly about them. Moreover, not moving around for such a long time could even damage one's body...

“If I inherit the Vermillion Bird's flames, will I... become more powerful?” Xiao Qi asked as she raised her head.

“After inheriting my Vermillion Bird's flames, you will become the first Daughter of Vermillion Bird. Like I said before, if you can attain mastery over the Vermillion Bird's flames, you will be unparalleled among the humans in terms of wielding fire. Moreover, the biggest benefits you'll receive is that you'll no longer be plagued with the pain from your Flame Soul, but instead will be able to use it as you please. Moreover, you'll receive a lifespan far longer than that of normal humans'.” The Vermillion Bird replied.

On earth, the longest a human had ever lived was 126 years old. Even though technology and medicine had advanced by so much, humans had never been able to break this record. The Vermillion Bird had said that if someone with a Flame Soul inherited its flames, they could live up to tens of thousands of years... who could believe such a thing? However, Ling Chen suddenly remembered what had happened when he had first touched the Lunar Scourge.

The memory of the Lunar Scourge trying to devour his consciousness was still vivid, and that realistic feeling was something he couldn't forget. At that time, he had felt that there was something different about this game. It was because of this that he didn't completely undermine the Vermillion Bird's words.

As such, he put his hands on Xiao Qi's shoulders, and looked into her eyes, as he said, "Qi Qi, in this world, there are many inconceivable things. Many things that seem impossible, are actually quite possible. The Heavenly Sun Arteries has never been successfully cured before, but there's now a solution that can potentially perfectly cure it for you. Although it sounds too good to be true, but we have no other choice. Perhaps... a miracle will happen, and you really do get better... of course, this is your own decision. I will support whatever choice you make."

"I... want to believe that a miracle will happen. But, but..." She hesitated, and looked at the Vermillion Bird, "Can you give me some time to think about it and let my family know? If I stay online for such a long time, my family and friends will worry about me. I want to have some time to properly think about this and explain to them."

"Of course. However, you must decide within one month. If you don't appear within one month, we'll pretend none of this happened."

A red light flashed, and a crimson red feather floated down into Xiao Qi's hands, "When you've made your decision, come to this place and shout my name to this feather. I hope that you will make

your decision quickly.”

The Vermillion Bird’s voice faded as its phantasm also disappeared.

“Big brother Ling Tian, if... if I really only have half a year left, I want to spend it with all of you. That way, even if I pass away, I won’t be lonely, and I’ll definitely pass away happily. If I stay here, I might never be able to see you all again, I...”

Although she was hoping for a ‘miracle’, but in the end, everything they had just heard was said by a beast within a virtual game. Any rational person would find it difficult to believe such a thing could happen. Moreover, this disease had never been cured, and yet now she was being told it could be easily cured just from staying inside the game, and that she would be able to live for thousands of years if successful. Xiao Qi didn’t want to risk wasting the rest of her lifespan here, without her friends and family.

Xiao Qi’s words told Ling Chen her answer. If the inheritance only took a few days, then she would be willing to try it out. But at the very least, it would take half a year, which was difficult for her to accept. Ling Chen patted her on the shoulder and smiled, “I said that I would support your decision, no matter what. Don’t worry, you’re our important friend—we definitely won’t let you leave us like this. It’s just a little disease, so I’m sure there’s some way to cure it. We’ll definitely find it! So in future, you’re not allowed to talk about things like passing away, alright?”

“Okay!” Xiao Qi replied as she smiled.

“Alright, let’s go then!”

Since Xiao Qi was unwilling to stay here, the Vermillion Bird would not save Xi Ling. Ling Chen didn’t tell Xiao Qi about Xi Ling, so that she wouldn’t feel any guilt or indecision. He would have to find another way to save Xi Ling.

Xi Ling had lost her life because of him, so he couldn’t give up no matter what. He also didn’t want anything to happen to Xiao Qi either.

After they returned to the Azure Dragon City, Xiao Qi went to the Forest Region to find Shui Ruo and the others. Ling Chen went to an empty alleyway and spoke into the communication device.

“Have you heard of the disease ‘Heavenly Sun Arteries’ before?”

“No.”

“Look for information on this disease, and see if there’s any way to treat it. I want results as soon as possible!”

“Roger!”

Afterwards, Ling Chen thought for a moment before contacting Yun Feng and asking him the same question. After all, Yun Feng was the successor to the Yun family, so he might have access to

information normal people didn't.

“Heavenly Sun Arteries... oh, did you find out about Xiao Qi?”

“Mhmm.”

“Ai,” Yun Feng sighed as he spoke, “Actually, this isn't a secret anymore within the high-ranking circles in China. As such, no one dares to bother the big miss of the Xiao family, including Long Tian Yun. Because of her disease, she won't live past 20, and so Xiao Zhan and Xiao Qiu Feng are extremely doting towards her. It is said that offending Xiao Qi is even worse than razing down the entire Battle Alliance. Even now, the leading medical experts have not been able to find a cure for the disease. One possibility is that it's simply incurable, as it doesn't affect a single region of the body, but every cell. Unless every single cell in her body is replaced... it's simply impossible...”

“I see, thanks.” Ling Chen said as he prepared to hang up.

“Ahhhh don't hang up, there's something I need to talk to you about.”

“What is it?” Ling Chen asked.

Worried that Ling Chen might hang up on him at any moment, Yun Feng quickly talked, “The Yan Huang Alliance's celebration concluded on a brilliant note, and the attendance was overwhelming. From tomorrow onwards, the Yan Huang Alliance

will start expanding to towns and villages near the Azure Dragon City, slowly extending their reach... oh, this isn't the point; what I was going to say is that it's getting closer and closer to one month since Heart's Dream was established, and the protection period is almost over. Although Heart's Dream has been keeping a low profile, and has not been actively recruiting members, it's still sitting in the number 1 position on the Guild Rankings. The Yan Huang Alliance definitely won't be satisfied with being 'number 2'. As such, Long Tian Yun will immediately move to destroy Heart's Dream, so his Yan Huang Alliance can once again rise to the top spot. Even if the 9 other guilds of the 10 largest guilds formed an alliance, they wouldn't be able to do anything to them... so please be careful."

Even though Ling Chen could easily escape from an army of thousands of people, if the Yan Huang Alliance wanted to destroy a guild, even 1,000 Ling Chens would not be enough to protect it.

Of course, Ling Chen had thought about this in the past, and he replied, "Yep, got it."

"Also, your level..."

"Will rise very quickly." Ling Chen said as he hung up.

The Heavenly Sun Arteries was a disease of diseases, and Yun Feng's response very clearly told him that it was simply incurable. If there was a person who could cure Xiao Qi though...

Ling Chen thought of a person, who he had also thought of when

Shui Ruo contracted the Isrock Disease-the Mad Scientist!

That Mad Scientist was a genius of geniuses. Although he called himself the “mad” scientist, he also called himself the “god” of humans. Humans still had not found a way to cure the Isrock Disease, and yet the Mad Scientist had easily found a cure.

He simply didn't know where the Mad Scientist was hiding, or if he had already died.

Over the past few years, he had tried to forget about the Mad Scientist's existence, because he was simply too terrifying. He didn't have any fighting abilities, and was incredibly weak and skinny, but his existence was like 100 nuclear bombs that could go off at any moment. This made it difficult for Ling Chen to relax without having confirmed whether he was dead or not.

Chapter 306 - The Avenger From Hell (2)

The day after Ling Chen and Xiao Qi went to the Lava Purgatory

Tian Tian, wearing light blue pyjamas, sat on a plastic chair on the balcony, staring at a glass cup with a face of concentration.

“That feeling just then. Just a bit more... a little bit more...”

“I have to succeed this time!”

Tian Tian touched her hands together and bit her lips, her face fully serious. She deeply inhaled, as she pointed at the cup with her right hand and held her breath... after a long while, when her little face became red, she opened her mouth, yelling, “Marvel at Tian Tian’s power... turn into two!!”

Under the sunlight, a mysterious light shone, which became blindingly bright.

In front of Tian Tian, another glass cup, exactly the same as the original one, had appeared next to the original one.

“Wah!!!”

Tian Tian stared for a while before standing up with a ‘whoosh’ and excitedly yelling, “I did it, I did it!!”

Her little face became red from excitement, and she carefully picked up the two glass cups to examine them closely. She ran into the dining room with both cups in hand, yelling at Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, “Big brother, big sister, look at this!!”

Ling Chen was lying on the sofa, reading through a story book... in order to be able to tell Leng’Er stories every day, he had to start reading story books. He soon found that... they were actually quite interesting. Hearing Tian Tian’s yelling, Ling Chen looked over, and saw Tian Tian rushing over like a hurricane. He sighed inwardly-it seemed that today’s peace was over. Ling Chen put down the book and asked, “What are you so excited about? I hope you’re not going to drag me to play video games.”

“Big brother, look!” Tian Tian carefully put the two glass cups on the table, and excitedly pointed at them, “Look, I turned it into two! My magic is coming back! Awesome, awesome!”

Ling Chen could feel his face twitching... Bullcrap, we already had two of these anyways. You’re way too inexperienced at conning people.

Ling Chen immediately revealed a mock expression of shock as he exclaimed, “Wow! You turned one cup into two! Tian Tian’s so amazing! No less expected from the Demon Queen herself! Tian Tian needs to work hard to recover her magic, so she’ll be invincible!”

“Mhmm, mhmm!” Tian Tian was in high spirits and she vigorously nodded her head. She stretched out her hand as she said, “Big brother, I’ll show you my magic... I’ll turn these two

cups into three, watch!”

After speaking, little Tian Tian stretched out her hand and yelled, “Turn into three!”

One second passed...

Three seconds passed...

Five seconds passed...

A tumbleweed blew past...

But nothing happened.

Ling Chen: ㄟ ㄎ ㄎ ㄎ

“Ahhhhh!!” Little Tian Tian stared at the cups in disbelief, “It worked just then, so why isn’t it working anymore... I-I’ll try again!”

“Turn into three!”

.....

“Turn into three!”

.....

“Ahem, Tian Tian,” Ling Chen simply couldn’t take it anymore, and he tried to help Tian Tian, who was almost at the verge of crying, get back some of her pride, “You just regained a little bit of your magic, and you just used it not too long ago. If you don’t properly rest before trying again, it definitely won’t work. Don’t worry, it’ll definitely work tomorrow... plus, since your magic has started recovering, it’ll definitely become stronger and stronger as time goes on.”

Hearing Ling Chen’s ‘very logical’ explanation, little Tian Tian did not feel embarrassed anymore, and instead nodded her head, “Yep, yep, big brother’s right! It must be like this. I thought I lost my magic just as I regained it. I’ll perform my magic for big brother tomorrow then! I’m going to go tell big sister now!”

Tian Tian picked up the two glass cups and ran into the kitchen. Shortly after, the two girls’ voices could be heard:

“Big sister, big sister, look, some of my magic has come back and I turned this cup into two cups!”

Ling Chen knew just how doting Shui Ruo was of Tian Tian, and could already predict what her reaction would be.

As expected...

“Wow! Tian Tian’s amazing! Can you teach big sister sometime?”

“Ah? I... I don’t think I can.”

“Alright, that’s okay. Then big sister will teach you how to cook, alright?”

Shui Ruo skilfully redirected the topic to cooking.

“Wuu... can I please not learn? Cooking’s so hard and I’m so bad at it.”

“No way, Tian Tian has been improving by a lot, and even big brother says so. Plus, if Tian Tian learns how to cook, she can cook whatever she wants, whenever she wants. If one day I’m not at home, Tian Tian can still cook for big brother, and big brother will like Tian Tian even more.”

“But I’ve learnt from big sister so many times and yet what I make is still so yucky...”

Looking at the clock on the wall, Ling Chen put down the story book he was reading and quickly sent a text on his phone. He got up and walked into the kitchen, announcing, “Alright, let’s go out for a picnic today!”

“A picnic? Wow, really? Yay! Yay!!”

Tian Tian, who had been unwillingly forced into cooking again, happily jumped up and down. Shui Ruo smiled as she saw Tian Tian like this. She put down the knife in her hands and said, “Big brother, it’s already lunch time, and preparing a picnic will take a long time. How about we have the picnic in the afternoon?”

“Don’t worry, everything’s been prepared already and the location has also been chosen. We’ll leave after getting changed.”

.....

10 minutes later, the three of them walked out and a large and luxurious SUV was parked outside.

“Let’s go. Everything has already been prepared-food, drinks, chairs, barbecue equipment... and a tent apparently.” Ling Chen and Shui Ruo held each of Tian Tian’s hands as they walked towards the car. A man wearing a cap walked out of the side-seat and opened the door for them, then respectfully stood to one side.

“Wow! Such a cool car! Big sister, big sister is this our car? Are these two uncles big brother’s friends?”

“En, they’re big brother’s friends. Let’s get on the car.” Shui Ruo said as she smiled, and helped Tian Tian onto the car. Shui Ruo had never met these two people before, but she could guess who they were. Before, Ling Chen had never told her about his past, or about the powerful organisation controlled by Ling Chen... an organisation filled with monsters who had walked out from ‘Hell’. Ling Chen had only told Shui Ruo about all of this after the

incident with the Sword Emperor. This was the first time she had met these people.

Seeing this, Shui Ruo didn't feel the need to ask anything.

On the way, the two men in the front didn't say a single word... without Ling Chen saying anything, they didn't dare to say anything. They were two of the people always secretly monitoring the house, and their sole job was to protect Shui Ruo. All of them knew just how important Shui Ruo was to Ling Chen-although it seemed like a very easy job, but it was an incredibly important one.

The one who spoke the most was Tian Tian. After getting on the car, she simply couldn't calm down. She would glance out both windows, and would even sometimes try to stick her head out the window, giving Shui Ruo a scare. Many of the things said by her caused even the two men in the front to almost laugh out loud.

Seeing Shui Ruo fretting so much over Tian Tian, Ling Chen sighed in amazement... Shui Ruo was only 16 years old, and was still somewhat a child herself. She liked pretty clothes, eating ice cream, being piggybacked by him, as well as hugging her pillow while rolling around on the bed. However, after Tian Tian had joined them, in order to look after Tian Tian, she had gradually matured and became more and more adult-like. In front of Tian Tian, she would not do any of the childish things she used to do in front of Ling Chen.

There was a saying that a man or woman only truly matured after having a child. Shui Ruo's changes... were evidently because she saw Tian Tian as her own daughter.

After nearly an hour, they had reached their destination.

Ling Chen had originally wanted to go to a park on the top of a mountain, but then suddenly thought of the place they had gone to for their first picnic after Ling Chen had joined Shui Ruo's family. After Shui Ruo had contracted the Isrock Disease, they had not gone out for a picnic. As such, he wanted to find a comfortable place where there would not be anyone else.

This was a small forest with a stream nearby. The sounds of birds and insects, as well as flowing water filled the air. It was an incredibly peaceful and relaxing area, and it didn't seem like there were any other people around.

Chapter 307 - The Avenger From Hell (3)

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo took out a barbecue, as well as a simple 'table', which was soon filled with food, drinks, condiments and cutlery. The ground was full of soft, green grass, so they didn't even need their chairs. Very soon, they lit the fire for the barbecue and their first family picnic got underway. The two men who had brought them here had long since left their sights, so as to give them some privacy.

“Tian Tian, do you want water or juice?”

“Tian Tian, you can barbecue what you want to eat. This is beef, this is lamb, this is a mushroom...”

Although she was teaching Tian Tian how to barbecue her own food, it was still Shui Ruo doing most of the work. Seeing this scene, and remembering how it was him who had enjoyed this treatment in the past, Ling Chen felt a bit jealous. However, he could only smile and ask what Tian Tian wanted to eat as he also served this little ancestor.

“This is pepper, this is chilli powder, this is salt, this is mustard sauce. Don't get them mixed up...” Shui Ruo said as she pointed out the different condiments to Tian Tian. “Actually, let's take out the mustard sauce...”

“I think so too.” Ling Chen said as he put away the bottle of mustard sauce. They had already had enough mustard sauce for a lifetime.

To Tian Tian, this was one of the happiest times of her life. Sitting outdoors in between Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, breathing in the refreshing air, and smelling the delicious meat on the barbecue made her feel incredibly content.

She rubbed her hands together as she continuously eyed the barbecue, swallowing her saliva as she asked, “Can we eat yet... is it ready yet... why is it taking so long?”

“You need to be patient, Tian Tian. It takes a long time when you first start the fire, but it’ll be done soon.” Shui Ruo said as she smiled at Tian Tian. The last time she had come out on a picnic was a long, long time ago. She had suffered from the Isrock Disease for 3 years, and had missed out much during those 3 years. However, that horrible nightmare had passed, and with big brother and Tian Tian by her side, life was simply perfect. Seeing Tian Tian’s saliva leaking out of her mouth, she laughed and asked, “Tian Tian, do you want to hear about big brother’s past?”

Ling Chen tapped on his nose. He was sure that Tian Tian would be interested.

“Sure, sure, tell me, big sister! Did big brother often bully big sister as well?” Tian Tian’s interest was immediately piqued, and she looked from the food over to Shui Ruo.

“Actually, I was found by your big sister, just like we found Tian Tian.” Ling Chen said as he put down his bottle of juice.

“Eh?” Tian Tian looked at Ling Chen with her mouth wide open, “Big sister... found big brother?”

“That’s right, on the streets,” Shui Ruo glanced over at Ling Chen and smiled, “Did you know, Tian Tian, the first time I saw big brother, he was lying on the ground like you. It was very hot that day, and I felt very sorry for him. I went over and woke him up. His body was in terrible shape, and he was very thirsty, so I gave him some of my drink. He drank it all almost immediately.”

Ling Chen finished the bottle of juice in his hand as he listened. He knew that in this lifetime, he would never be able to drink such a delicious drink ever again.

“And then? And then?” Tian Tian grasped Shui Ruo’s hand as she asked.

“Big brother said he didn’t have a home, so we took him home with us. Dad was the best doctor in the world, so after being taken care of by my mum and dad, big brother recovered quite quickly. Did you know, Tian Tian, when I was younger, I always admired girls with big brothers. Big brothers could look after their sisters, play with them, and protect them. As such, I always wanted a big brother. When big brother got better, I asked mum and dad to let big brother stay, but they were against the idea. However, the day after that, when they got home, big brother had made a whole table of food for us to eat. The food big brother makes is incredibly delicious, and mum and dad said it was the best meal of their lives. They even asked big brother if he was a world-renowned chef.”

“World-renowned chef? What’s that? Is it something amazing?”

Tian Tian asked with her head tilted.

“Mhmm, they’re very amazing. After big brother got better, every time mum and dad got home, he would have already finished cooking. When I finished school, big brother would always play with me and help me study. Big brother is really smart and knows a lot-as soon as big brother explains something to me, I can understand it almost immediately. With big brother by my side, even the subjects that I hated became fun. At the end of the year, I got the top marks in my grade. Over that period of time, I grew closer and closer to big brother, and mum and dad liked him more and more, and didn’t oppose him staying anymore.”

When recounting these things from the past, Shui Ruo’s face was filled with happiness and bliss. Ling Chen and Tian Tian silently listened... that year, he had failed at getting revenge, and had almost lost his life. When he recovered, he had prepared to once again carry out his revenge, to destroy the Long family, and nothing could stand in his way. However, Shui Ruo had changed all of that. In just a few short days, he had been smitten by this angelic girl, and his frozen heart began to thaw. In the end, he was unwilling to leave... and even began to give up on his revenge. Later on, through his extraordinary hearing, he heard Shui Ruo crying and begging her parents to let him stay, and he completely gave in, deciding to stay. He even began to think of ways to let her parents give permission for him to stay.

He had always believed that there was something magical about Shui Ruo that made people unable to resist her.

“Ah... so big brother was also found by big sister. Big brother,

why were you lying on the ground when big sister found you? Did you also fall from the sky, like me?” Tian Tian grabbed Ling Chen as she asked.

Ling Chen opened a can of soft drink as he said, “That was because I was fighting with some people. They had a lot of people, and I was fighting them alone. After fighting for a long time, I couldn’t beat them, so I ran and ran until I collapsed.”

Although Ling Chen had casually described what had happened in a few sentences, Shui Ruo knew just how terrible that day’s events had been. She didn’t give Tian Tian a chance to ask for further details as she put a few kebabs on Tian Tian’s plate, “Tian Tian, the kebabs are ready for you to eat now. They smell good, don’t they?”

“Mmmmm they smell so good!” The starving Tian Tian ravenously devoured the kebabs in the blink of an eye. This was the first time she had been to a barbecue, and the taste of the barbecued food was like heaven.

Tian Tian’s appetite had always been extraordinarily large, so they brought a lot of food. Tian Tian’s plate was heaped with food and Shui Ruo patted her on the head, “Take your time, there’s lots to eat. Big brother, you should eat too.”

“I want to hear... about big sister and big... brother in the past...” Tian Tian said, with her mouth full of meat.

“Mm, okay.”

Ling Chen closed his eyes as he listened to Tian Tian devour her food while Shui Ruo continued to tell their story. The time had passed very quickly, and although Tian Tian had ate most of the food, they all felt very satisfied. To Ling Chen, as long as Shui Ruo was healthy and safe, everything was perfect.

Most of the food that had been brought was now safely stored in Tian Tian's stomach. Tian Tian looked at Shui Ruo, then Ling Chen, and smiled, "Big brother was found by big sister, and Tian Tian was also found by sister. Hehe, this is so interesting. Big brother was found by big sister, and will be with her forever, so since Tian Tian was also found by big sister, will Tian Tian also be with big sister and big brother forever?" Tian Tian asked, her face full of expectation.

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo laughed. Shui Ruo held Tian Tian's right hand, and also pulled Ling Chen's left hand over, with their three hands together as she said, "We've already become a family, so of course we'll all be together forever."

"En, forever and ever!" Ling Chen added.

Tian Tian could feel her eyes getting wet, and she vigorously nodded, "Then... it's a promise! We're all going to be together forever. Neither big brother nor big sister can ever leave Tian Tian!"

By now, Tian Tian had already become an important part of their lives. Who would have thought that this little girl who had barged

into their lives would one day become so important to them?

After they finished their food, they were still unwilling to leave. Shui Ruo took out a small knife, and was about to peel an apple for Tian Tian to eat, but Ling Chen took it from her, “Let me do it.”

Shui Ruo knew that he was worried that she might accidentally cut herself, so she gently smiled and handed it over to him. Ling Chen’s control with knives was simply legendary-the peels from fruits that he had peeled could be called masterpieces.

“Tian Tian, are you tired?” Ling Chen asked as he peeled the apple. After having so much food, it was natural for one to feel tired and sleepy.

“Not at all.” Tian Tian shook her head then looked around her. She suddenly asked, “Big brother, where are those two uncles who came with us? Did they go home?”

“No, they’re not too far away. If you yell loudly, they’ll be able to hear you.”

“Eh? Why didn’t they have food with us then? I’m sure they’re hungry after waiting for us for so long.” Tian Tian asked.

“Don’t worry, they brought their own fo-“

Ling Chen suddenly stopped talking as his entire body shuddered. He momentarily lost control of them knife, and it cut

towards his finger.

“Ah!” Seeing this, Shui Ruo cried out in surprise and hurriedly looked at Ling Chen’s finger, “Big brother, did you hurt yourself?”

There was not even a scratch, let alone a cut on Ling Chen’s finger. He casually replied, “Don’t worry, I can’t be hurt that easily.”

“That scared me.” Shui Ruo said as she breathed out in relief. This was the first time she had seen such a thing happen to Ling Chen.

Ling Chen silently finished peeling the apple, and he handed it to Tian Tian. However, he kept the small knife in his hands.

Tian Tian happily ate the apple as she pointed at the forest to the south, “Big brother, can we go there to play? Big sister says there are lots of cute animals there.”

Shui Ruo looked at him, waiting for his answer.

Ling Chen picked up his phone and pressed a few buttons, then shook his head as he calmly replied, “Ruo Ruo, it’s getting late, so you should take Tian Tian home.”

Shui Ruo could immediately tell that something was wrong, “What about you?”

“There’s... something I need to take care of by myself. You and Tian Tian go home first; I’ll head back later.” Ling Chen replied, before he softly added, “This is very important, please do as I say.”

Chapter 308 - The Avenger From Hell (4)

To most people, one person leaving first and the other leaving later was quite normal. However... after Shui Ruo had contracted the Isrock Disease, Ling Chen would always be around her, in order to ensure her safety. The only time Ling Chen had ever left her side was that night when Tian Tian was demanding chocolate in the middle of the night... apart from that time, he had always been not too far away from Shui Ruo.

However, this time, while they were outdoors, Ling Chen wanted them to leave first. Taking into account Ling Chen's reaction just then and the way he talked... Shui Ruo's heart started to beat faster.

“Eh? Why do you want me and big sister to leave first? Does big brother have something to do?” Tian Tian asked, unable to read the atmosphere.

Not too far away, the car that had brought them here slowly drove closer, and then stopped next to them. Shui Ruo picked up Tian Tian and softly said, “Let's listen to big brother and go back first. I'm sure big brother has important things to take care of.”

“Oh.” Tian Tian was curious, but seeing the way Shui Ruo and Ling Chen acted, she decided to be obedient and go home with Shui Ruo.

“Ruo Ruo, Tian Tian.”

Ling Chen suddenly called out to them. He walked over, and looked into Shui Ruo's trembling eyes. He smiled, and said, "Don't worry, I'll be home soon. If you're tired, have a nap on the car. Who knows, I might even get home before you guys."

"En." Shui Ruo nodded, and her lips became a bit paler.

Ling Chen bent down and gently stroked Tian Tian's hair as he gently said, "Tian Tian, make sure you listen to big sister, alright?"

This was the first time Ling Chen had been so gentle and warm to Tian Tian, which surprised her. She lifted her nose as she said, "I always listen to big sister... big brother, you're acting very strangely right now."

"Haha, it's because I'm afraid that you might not listen to big sister and make her angry while I'm not there." Ling Chen said as he chuckled.

"Hmph, I like big sister. I'd never make her angry."

"Alright, that's good." Ling Chen picked up Tian Tian, and put her in the car.

Shui Ruo also got into the car, and looked at Ling Chen. She bit her lips as she softly said, "Big brother, you'll definitely... come back safe, right?"

Ling Chen smiled, "Haha, don't be silly. I just want to meet an

old friend of mine for a bit. There's nothing to be worried about. Alright, you guys get home first. I'll be there soon."

After he finished talking, he made a hand gesture and the door was closed by one of the two 'uncles'. As the man returned to the side-seat, Ling Chen said to him in a voice that only he could hear, "Send them home and make full defence preparations... I've got something important to do here, so make sure you protect them properly when you get back. Before I go back, no one's allowed to come here or contact me. Am I understood?"

"Roger." The man replied.

The car's engine rumbled to life, and they slowly drove away. Ling Chen silently watched the car disappear into the distance.

Wait for me at home...

I'll be there soon... I'll definitely come back...

On the car

When Shui Ruo could no longer see Ling Chen, she turned and hugged Tian Tian tightly.

"Big sister? Are you alright? Are you sleepy... Ah? Big sister, your hands are so cold, and there's so much sweat..."

Tian Tian was scared by how cold Shui Ruo's hands were. Shui Ruo spoke with a very weak voice, "I'm just feel a bit cold. Tian Tian, let me hug you for a bit..."

Shui Ruo's entire body was quite cold now, and her heart beat was irregular. The ominous feeling about what was about to happen left her incredibly nervous and scared.

At the front, the two men looked at each other and frowned. This was the first time Ling Chen had separated from Shui Ruo in such a way.

Bang!!

Ling Chen forcefully crushed the phone and threw it into the stream. He took out the keys in his pocket, and crushed them as well, then threw them away. He gripped the small knife in his left hand, and deeply breathed in and out. His gaze turned cold and serious, as a malevolent aura burst out from within him.

He stared in front of him and smirked as he coldly said, "Come out."

Just as he spoke, the sounds from the birds and insects immediately stopped. His surroundings became deathly silent, as if he had stepped into a different world. The warm air suddenly turned icy cold, and if a normal person was standing there, they would have curled up in a ball as they shivered.

Whoosh—

Countless birds and insects filled the air as they madly rushed away. The sky was suddenly covered with countless black dots, which were fleeing in every direction. Ling Chen looked up, then looked back in front of him. About 10 steps away, a dark shadow had appeared incredibly stealthily.

With all the birds and insects gone, the forest suddenly felt even more quiet, and even the air felt like it had stopped moving. This sort of scene only appeared in movies, and people definitely wouldn't believe a single person could cause such a thing.

Ling Chen's hands were tightly gripped into fists as he stared at the black shadow. He spoke in a low voice, "You... You're still alive."

The person was tall and well-built, and was wearing an ordinary-looking cloak. All that could be seen was his savage-looking eyes. Ling Chen was incredibly familiar with these eyes.

In this world, there were only two people who could make him feel fear. One was the "Mad Scientist", and the other person was the one standing in front of him!

He was meant to be dead! Ling Chen had definitely killed him all those years ago!

“Did you know that I wasn’t dead?” The man coldly replied. This incredibly raspy and coarse voice was very unpleasant to listen to.

Ling Chen’s voice was equally as cold as he replied, “You told me to never believe that someone was dead without seeing their corpse. Back then, we blew up your right hand, and with your remaining hand, you had battled with us, but lost about half of your blood. We stabbed you in three fatal areas, with your heart as the last one... a normal person would have died more than 10 times. However, when you fell into the sea, we thought that you were dead... all these years, you’ve been a blight in my life, making it so that I could never relax. This was because we never found your corpse, and because you are... Hell! Someone who the Mad Scientist called a god among humans! I knew that you wouldn’t die so easily!”

That’s right, back then, his right hand had been caught in an explosion, his right eye had been pierced and Eve cut off his entire right arm... however, this person evidently had two eyes! And under his cloak, it seemed that he had two arms!

What was going on?!

This person evidently had Hell’s aura! No one in the world could possibly copy or mimic this terrifying aura.

“Hahahaha!” The man laughed in a low voice. His voice was even more disgusting and terrifying than that of a demon’s, “No less than expected from the strongest killing machine I raised; someone who was able to escape from the Mad Scientist’s control. You can actually remain so calm after meeting me. To be honest, I

didn't want to see you trembling in fear. After all, the person who can kill me can't just be a piece of trash. I'm very pleased with you, Adam!"

"I'm called Ling Chen. The Adam you knew is dead!" Ling Chen spat.

"Ling Chen? Heh..." The man coldly laughed, "I'm disappointed that you've started to live as an ordinary person. The Reaper that I shaped has given up his identity as 'Adam', and has taken an ordinary human's name, and even has human emotions now! The current you has no point in living anymore."

"Hmph, cut the crap. Since you've come here, only one of us can leave here alive. Let's finish this quickly. I want to get home soon." Ling Chen coldly laughed as he prepared the knife in his hands.

"That's right, only one of us can leave here alive. But do you think it'll be me or you?"

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen's forehead was already covered in cold sweat.

"I taught you that in order to kill your target, you should use any measures. You and Eve followed this lesson very well, by blowing my hand off, then continuously attacking me while I lost blood. In the end, because I had lost too much blood, you were able to defeat me. It was a cowardly and low move, but it was effective. When I

was falling into the sea, even I thought that I was definitely going to die... but it's a pity for you that I'm back. And not only am I back, but my eyes are even better and I have more strength than before. My body is more than 10, even 100 times, stronger than steel."

The man raised his arm and pointed at Ling Chen, "As for you, after 6 years, no matter if it's your body or your skills, you haven't improved at all. In fact, you've been declining, which I'm very disappointed about. Even if you're 10 times stronger, you won't be able to survive. Now, it's time for my revenge."

Ling Chen knew that the man's words were not exaggerated at all. He was at least two to three times stronger than he had been back then.

As for Ling Chen, he had been taking care of Shui Ruo this whole time, and had not fought at all for the past 6 years. His strength, speed, skills, reaction time had all been on the decline.

Chapter 309 - The Avenger From Hell (5)

Six years ago, this man had been defeated by the combined efforts from Ling Chen and Eve. Back then, they had only been able to defeat him because of various factors. Otherwise, even if they worked together, it would be impossible to defeat Hell. They had been able to blow off his right hand with a hidden bomb, but even with just his left hand, he was a terrifying fighter. They had continuously attacked Hell, not giving him a chance to stop his bleeding, and had finally forced him into such a state that he could only jump into the sea... After this battle, they also had countless cuts on their bodies, and their bodies were dyed with blood.

Even against Hell in that condition, they had barely escaped with their lives... in fact, anyone who knew him and heard his name, 'Instructor Hell', would tremble with fear. No one knew where he came from or who he was, or why he wanted to create so many 'Reapers'.

Right now, it was just him against Hell, who was even stronger than before.

Inside his mind, Ling Chen was calculating the chances of his victory...

Zero.

Ling Chen was sensitive to one's aura and pressure, and he immediately knew how overwhelmingly powerful Hell was. As such, he immediately ordered everyone to leave, as well as for

them not to contact him or come to find him. Even if the others came, it would simply be suicide for them!

“Heh, you seem like you don’t want to die. Is it because of those two girls?” The man coldly laughed.

Ling Chen’s face stiffened, and his voice became even colder, “If you dare to do anything to them, even if I’m dead, I’ll pull you to hell with me!”

“Hell? Hahahaha,” The man began to laugh madly, “Hell is the best place in existence. There’s howling, blood, despair-all of the things I love.”

“You’re even more mad than you were before.” Ling Chen replied.

“Really? Thank you for your compliment. However, I feel that I became not only more mad, but also compassionate. I actually let those two people you care about go, as well as those two trash. Aren’t you grateful at all towards me?”

Ling Chen laughed, “You? Compassionate? What a joke. However, you’re right-I don’t want to die. Today, you’ll be the one dying!”

Ling Chen yelled, and killing intent burst out from his body... back then, for Dia Wu, and for his revenge, he had been determined not to die. Today, for Shui Ruo, he wouldn’t allow

himself to die either! Ling Chen released everything he had. Against this sort of monster, he couldn't hold back at all.

He couldn't die no matter what!

If he didn't want to die, he would have to kill this avenger from hell! Otherwise he would never be able to live in peace!

“Wuaaah!”

Ling Chen shot forwards like a bolt of lightning. To normal people, it was as if he had disappeared. Ling Chen's strongest asset was his mental energy, and second to that was his explosive power. He rushed towards Hell and savagely swung his fist at him. His skills had come from Hell, whereas his strength had come from the Mad Scientist. In 'Heaven', his mental energy had grown stronger through the Mad Scientist's torture, and his body, through different medicines and chemicals, had also become incredibly powerful and tough.

To Ling Chen, 10 steps was enough to instantly kill anyone. With his explosive power and speed, there were very few people who could live after being attacked like this. However, he wasn't so naïve as to believe that he could instantly kill Hell. As Ling Chen's fist approached him at an incredible speed, Hell did not move at all, but raised his right hand and swung it towards Ling Chen's.

Bang!!

“Argh!”

As the two of their fists clashed, a massive sound had rung out, as if two massive boulders had crashed into each other. Ling Chen let out a cry of pain as his body flew backwards, and hit the ground 10 metres away. His entire right arm felt numb, and was trembling. Not long after, blood started trickling from his hand and arm, covering half his arm with blood.

“You want to compete with me in strength? You’re so naïve.” Hell couldn’t help but laugh. He hadn’t moved a single step from where he was, and there wasn’t even a scratch on him.

In just one exchange, with Ling Chen attacking, his entire right arm had suffered some damage. Although there weren’t any fractures, but he knew that some nerves had been destroyed.

Hell’s strength was far greater than his, and even 6 years ago, he had been unable to easily receive one of Hell’s attacks.

However, Hell was far more powerful than he was then!

“It was I who saved you and taught you your skills, as well as many things people couldn’t even dream of learning. I even gave my own daughter to you to be your sex toy, and yet you repay me like this. I, who had never experienced what it felt like to die or come close to dying, was almost killed by Adam and Eve, who I placed all of my hope in. Adam, if you hadn’t had so many desires back then, perhaps you would have already surpassed me. However, it’s a pity... in fact, because of you, I’ve even learnt what

‘hate’ is. I’ve hated you for 6 years-tell me, how should I make you suffer?”

“Heh, repay? To you, I was simply a tool or a machine. All we could think of in Hell, including your daughter, was how to escape from your control. Killing you is the best way to repay you!!”

“Hahahaha,” Hell laughed with his raspy voice. It was impossible to tell what sort of emotion there was in that laugh. To him, everything in this world was like ants. If he wanted someone to die, they would die. These ants that he could easily kill simply didn’t have the right for him to hate them or be angry at them, “Well said! Back then, you nearly succeeded. Now, how should I repay you? Hahahaha!”

A gust of wind blew, and the figure in front of Ling Chen blurred, then disappeared. Suddenly, a pressure that felt like a mountain came crashing at Ling Chen. Before the fist had even reached him, Ling Chen could feel his chest about to explode. Under the enormous pressure, even turning his body was incredibly difficult... he sure was that if he was hit by this, his chest, which could deflect even normal bullets, would have a hole gaping out of it.

How could a human have such power!

This was on a completely different level to 6 years ago!

Containing his shock, Ling Chen managed to barely dodge by turning his body, then gathered his entire body’s strength into his

left hand as he swung the knife towards Hell's exposed back.

Boom!!

This full-powered strike from Ling Chen was enough to crush boulders to dust. As his hand and knife smashed into Hell's back, the resulting sound was like a massive hammer had struck bedrock. Ling Chen's face revealed an expression of pain, as if his hand had struck an indestructible board. His wrist made a 'kacha' sound as it dislocated, and many of the bones in his hand fragmented. The knife in his hand had also broken into pieces, but not a single piece had been buried into Hell's skin. Instead, many of them had pierced into Ling Chen's hand. Ling Chen's body once again flew out, and even flipped in the air before crashing to the ground. He clutched his bloodied and mangled left hand with his numb right hand. Pain filled his entire body.

As for Hell, he had only stumbled back by a few steps, and his clothes had been destroyed. However, there was not a single wound on his skin.

Impossible... this was simply impossible! Ling Chen had used all of his strength, and he had hit Hell right in the back. Even if it was Hell, he should have been injured to the extent that he spat out blood. Although the little knife was quite thin, but with enough speed and at the right angle, it should have been enough to pierce him, or at least cut him... it was impossible that there was no wound at all!

Hell slowly turned at him, and his black eyes looked at Ling Chen's horrified face, "Heheheh, that expression is very amusing.

You don't seem to believe your own eyes. It must feel like you're dreaming, right? Hahaha, to be honest, after I was reborn, even I was shocked."

Chi!

Hell ripped off the remnants of the cloak, as well as the clothes on the upper half of his body. Indeed, this was Hell-Ling Chen could never forget this face. He looked around 40 years old and had ordinary looks, but anyone looking at this face would feel intense fear and dread.

He was exactly the same as the Hell from 6 years ago, and hadn't aged at all... in fact, he looked even younger!

Hell's skin was originally black, but now it was strangely white, and there was a glimmer on the surface of his skin...

It was the glimmer of light reflecting off metal!

Chapter 310 - The Avenger From Hell (6)

Restored eyes, restored right arm and a woundless body...

This person was indeed Hell, but it wasn't Hell's body!

“Your body has been modified?!” Ling Chen finally realised something as he coldly asked. Only a certain person could make such modifications to a human.

And that was the Mad Scientist!

“That's right.” Hell curtly replied. He rolled his neck, which released a ‘ka ka’ sound, and folded his arms as he looked at Ling Chen with pity in his eyes, “My body was destroyed by you guys, but because of that, I received an even more perfect body-the most perfect body in the world! You little monsters should know who it was that modified my body right? Heh... that year, it was the Mad Scientist who saved me. I never thought that it would be him who would save me one day. He had been waiting for that day for a long time, because to him, I was the perfect experimental subject. However, he had never had the chance to make me into one of his subjects. It was only because of what you did that gave him this opportunity. He used 6 years to create for me a new body-an unfathomably strong and tough body.

Ling Chen gritted his teeth... so he was right! No wonder why, after Hell had disappeared, the Mad Scientist had also disappeared. So he had been reviving Hell, then hid away.

Hell slowly raised his right hand. It was a snow-white hand, with the palm facing Ling Chen. Ling Chen's eyes narrowed as he readied his body. Suddenly, Hell's entire right hand swung downwards, while his wrist stayed in the same place. With a 'kacha' sound, Hell's fingers were now pressed against his wrist, and a black hole had appeared in the gap between his arm and his wrist.

What?!

Bang!

As something ignited within that dark hole, Ling Chen's body instantly jumped and rolled to the side... BOOM!! A massive explosion sounded out, with the force knocking Ling Chen far away, slamming him into a tree. There was now a 3-metre-deep hole where he had been previously.

“Heheh, as expected from the Adam that I developed. You made such a perfect response in such a situation.” Hell said as he coldly laughed. He raised his left hand, and his hand also swung down, revealing another hole and pointed it towards Ling Chen, “I wonder how long you can dodge. Do your best though, so I can have fun for a bit longer. It'd be too boring if this ended before I could fully test out my new body.”

Ling Chen's eyes contracted as he stared at Hell, and he suddenly remembered a name that only appeared in sci-fi movies...

Cyborg!

This was definitely the work of the Mad Scientist!

The Mad Scientist had actually created such a terrifying being!!

Ling Chen breathed in, and stuck close to the tree behind him as he said, “You... the proud and strong Instructor Hell, were actually willing to give up your pride and dignity to become half-human and half-robot!”

“Hahaha,” Hell was not angry at all, but instead started to laugh, “A long time ago, the Mad Scientist told me that he wanted to give me a body like this, which would make me many times stronger. However, at that time I refused... now that I know how powerful this body is, I know how stupid I was back then.”

Hell stretched out his arms, revelling in his own body, “This is such a wonderful body. The surface of my body is made of a metal that does not come from earth. Its hardness is three times that of the best diamonds on earth. Even lasers can’t harm me much now. My full talent has been unlocked by this body! My internal organs have all been fully restored, and with a body like this, it’s impossible to damage them at all!

“My eyes are from a creature that does not exist on earth, and I can even see 1,000 metres away clearly! My body has exceeded anything you all thought was possible, and my right hand has become a weapon that can turn into 30 different types of destructive weapons... Haha, how incredible, how wonderful is this body. Do you know why I let those two women, as well as

those two trash go? The reason is that I have this body because of you, and so only you are qualified to become the first offering that this body makes. Prepare yourself, Adam!”

A body three times harder than diamond... no wonder that knife was unable to even hurt him.

With this sort of body, even if Ling Chen was 10 times stronger, he still wouldn't be able to harm him!

In other words... he could never kill Hell!

Ling Chen's body didn't feel as numb anymore, and he coldly laughed, “The Instructor Hell I knew definitely wouldn't have given up his basic dignity for power. Although I hated Instructor Hell, but I respected him for his strength. However, now you've become mad-no, you're not even Hell anymore. You're just a monster that's even lower than a human!”

“Moreover...” Ling Chen narrowed his eyes as he swept over Hell's body as he said in a low voice, “Your body's toughness and strength has increased, but after adding so many things to your body, don't you feel heavy...”

As soon as he spoke, Ling Chen suddenly turned, and rushed into the forest behind him. With his speed and explosive power, as well as the cover from the forest, he soon disappeared.

He simply couldn't hurt this damn monster at all. Against him,

Ling Chen only had one choice.

Escape! As far as he could!

Ling Chen disappeared from Hell's field of vision. However, Hell did not panic at all, and did not give chase, but instead coldly laughed, "Did you really think that I would be slower with this body? You're way too naïve... There's something else that I forgot to tell you-my eyes are also equipped with the best tracking devices-even if you escape to the end of the world, I'll still be able to find you... well, I'll enjoy this game of cat-and-mouse. Don't worry, as the Reaper I put all of my hope in, I won't let you die too quickly. I'll prolong this game as long as possible and enjoy your suffering, hahaha!"

One of the fundamental rules of being an assassin was: Do not toy with your enemy.

However, Hell had forgotten this important rule that he himself had drilled into Ling Chen. From another perspective, he had no reason to follow this rule-after all, he wasn't worried that his target would be able to escape or retaliate, and there were not any variables that could change the outcome. The current him, to humans, was simply a 'god'!

Ling Chen desperately ran, and didn't stop even for a second. He pulled out the pieces of the knife from his hand as he ran, and the blood from both his left hand and right arm was beginning to stop. His flesh was repairing at a rate that could be observed by the human eye. This recovery speed was also something given to him by the Mad Scientist.

Thinking to the Mad Scientist, Ling Chen's body shuddered... he was indeed completely and utterly mad. That incredibly skinny, short and weak looking old man with white glasses had again and again created completely monstrous and impossible creations!

From that single attack from before, Ling Chen knew just how incredibly powerful Hell was. Just as Hell had said, even lasers probably couldn't harm him. How could the Mad Scientist create such a monster!!

Right now, even if there were 10 Ling Chens, it would be impossible to kill Hell. His only option was to flee. His only hope was that Hell's speed had been reduced due to the modifications, and he would not be able to catch up to him.

Behind him, he couldn't sense Hell chasing him. It seemed that he had shaken off Hell, but the pressure within his heart didn't disappear at all. Every second that he ran, he could almost feel a pair of eyes watching him, and his body felt like it was locked by something. No matter how fast he ran, or which direction he ran in, he couldn't get rid of that feeling.

What was with this feeling...

Was he being too paranoid?

Yes... that was the only explanation...

Ruo Ruo and Tian Tian are at home waiting for me... I can't die here! I can't let him find me!

Ling Chen wiped the sweat off his forehead. In front of him was a vast piece of farmland. He retraced his footsteps and ran in a different direction.

Without any birds or insects, the only sound was his feet lightly running on the ground, as well as the sounds from branches and twigs that he stepped on. An hour passed, and Ling Chen once again exited the forest, and returned to where he was originally. He stopped running, and looked around him, his body covered in cold sweat.

This pressure and the feeling of being constantly watched...

“Haha, run, keep running. Why did you stop? The Adam that I trained shouldn't be exhausted so easily.”

Ling Chen's body stiffened, and he deeply inhaled and exhaled. He slowly turned around, and looked at Hell, who seemed to appear out of nowhere.

Hell was standing within 10 steps of him, but even with Ling Chen's senses, he was unable to detect him!

“Your eyes contain some sort of tracking ability!” Ling Chen coldly said as he stared at Hell's eyes.

“Your observation’s pretty good. Indeed, as long as someone has been locked on to by me, with these eyes, they’ll never be able to escape. Do you want to try?” Hell asked as he grinned evilly.

Chapter 311 - The Avenger From Hell (7)

Although Ling Chen had taken a very complex route while running in the forest, that feeling of being watched had never disappeared. It turned out that what he had felt wasn't him being paranoid... from the beginning, he had never shaken off this monster at all!

This meant that not only did Hell have terrifying tracking abilities, but his speed was also comparable to Ling Chen's. Although Ling Chen had been running for 2 hours, he had not increased the distance between them at all. It seemed that if Hell wanted to catch him, it would be incredibly easy.

He didn't have the ability to kill Hell, and neither was he able to run away!

Was he really going to die here?

“Oh? You're not going to run anymore? That game of cat-and-mouse was quite amusing. In the end, you're the strongest Reaper that I trained, and was the first person who almost killed me. How could I let you die so easily?” Hell started to coldly laugh before releasing an extremely malevolent and baleful aura, “Before you die, I'll let you taste pain and despair 10 times, no, 100 times that of what I felt!”

“Really?” Ling Chen asked as he smirked, “In this lifetime, I've already experienced 1,000 times as much pain and despair as you have. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to survive in 'Heaven'.

Because I was unable to truly kill you that time, I'll have to accept your revenge. Although you may be able to kill me, but you'll never be able to make me feel fear and despair... in fact, it won't even be that easy to kill me!"

"Hah!"

Ling Chen roared out. He didn't try to escape anymore, but rather shot straight towards Hell. His right hand formed a fist, and rocketed towards Hell's chest. Hell coldly laughed, but didn't move at all, seeming to allow Ling Chen to freely attack him.

Ling Chen frowned, and when his hand was just half a metre from Hell's heart, his fist suddenly changed direction, and became a knifehand strike aimed at Hell's throat... the current Hell was not the same Instructor Hell as back then. Instructor Hell wouldn't have looked down on any attack, no matter how weak it was, and wouldn't have allowed someone to freely attack him.

Bang!!

Ling Chen's right palm smashed into Hell's throat, and the impact caused both his right hand and right arm to become completely numb. Hell slightly leaned back, and his eyes slightly widened, but that was all. He coldly laughed, and smashed his chin downwards.

Crack!

The sound of bone cleanly breaking rang out, causing Ling Chen's face to twist. His right hand was trapped by Hell's neck, and many of the bones had been broken. He tried to pull it back, but wasn't able to... just the power of Hell's neck and chin was incredible. Ling Chen could only raise his left hand and smash it onto Hell's face.

Again, Hell did not dodge, because he knew just how strong his body was. In this world, there was almost nothing that could damage him... even though this person in front of him was a monster.

Bang!!

Ling Chen's left fist smashed heavily onto Hell's mouth. Even Hell's mouth felt like an indestructible steel board, and Ling Chen's left arm also became numb. Ling Chen gritted his teeth, and the moment his left fist hit Hell, a cold glint flashed in between his fingers.

“Argh!”

This howl of pain was not from Ling Chen, but from Hell.

A drop of blood was spat out by Hell, and the pain caused him to release his grip on Ling Chen's right hand. By now, Ling Chen almost couldn't feel anything in his right hand. Ling Chen kicked Hell a few steps back as he coldly smiled, “Looks like your body isn't so perfect after all. Although the outside has been modified, but the inside seems to be the same.”

More and more blood flowed out of Hell's mouth. He reached inside his mouth and pulled out a fingernail-sized shard of the broken knife from inside his mouth.

When he attacked Hell, Ling Chen held a piece of the broken knife between his fingers, and upon hitting Hell's lips, he had flicked the knife shard into Hell's mouth. Ling Chen's fingers were incredibly powerful, and the knife shard had pierced through Hell's tongue, and embedded itself into the top of his mouth.

A human's tongue was one of the most sensitive parts of their body, and having his tongue pierced was enough to make even Hell howl in pain.

Hell easily crushed the knife shard in between his fingers, and wiped his mouth with his hand. His expression was no longer as aloof and arrogant, but rather like that of a mad beast's, "You... made my perfect body bleed..."

"Heh, if it was you from back then, you wouldn't have even given me this opportunity, and even if you were hurt, you would be scarily calm, instead of outraged like this. Looks like not only was your body modified, but your mind was warped as well. I wonder if this change came from yourself, or if the Mad Scientist did it to you." Ling Chen retorted.

"Hmph," Hell released more of his killing intent as the surrounding pressure grew heavier and heavier, "Looks like many years of not fighting and having this perfect body have caused me

to become careless. You were able to successfully damage my body, as well as anger me. I was going to let you live for a few more hours, but I've decided to kill you immediately!"

From the change in Hell's expression, Ling Chen could tell that he had finally decided to kill him. Ling Chen breathed in, and his mind became blank as he cleared all distracting thoughts... all of his willpower and thoughts were gathered on survival... if there wasn't Shui Ruo, he wouldn't have minded dying, but he was determined to live on for Shui Ruo!

Hell stretched out his right hand, which detached and once again revealed the black hole. He aimed towards Ling Chen as he spoke, "Don't worry, I'll find Eve soon and send her to be with you! If you two had behaved well back then, you could have witnessed the creation of a new kingdom, and become a Reaper, standing on top of millions of people. However, you were foolish and made a huge mistake. Now, die."

Witnessed the creation of a new kingdom? What did he mean?

Boom!!

With Ling Chen's body, any normal bullets that were shot outside of 10 metres would be unable to harm him. However, the weapons on Hell's body were all created by the Mad Scientist. Nothing made by the Mad Scientist could be taken lightly. As the fire within the black hole ignited, the feeling of death came over Ling Chen.

Boom!!

The projectile shot through Ling Chen's afterimage, and exploded on a tree. The half-metre thick tree had been completely snapped in half, resulting in a 'boom' as it fell to the ground. Ling Chen had been able to dodge that attack, but both his arms were still numb, and it was difficult for him to maintain his balance. If he hadn't crashed into another tree, he would have already fallen onto the ground. He didn't have any time to breathe as he felt himself being aimed at again, and without thinking, he pushed off the tree and jumped away.

Boom!!

Ling Chen never expected that he would one day face off against a cyborg that only appeared in sci-fi movies. Hell was simply too powerful-his body was incredibly tough and he had even been given ridiculously strong weapons.

Although there was only one of him, but he could singlehandedly create catastrophes!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Ling Chen was incredibly agile, and had incredible senses and reaction speed. Even after attacking more than 10 times, Hell had not hit him even once. Although Ling Chen was not hit, but he would be hit by the shockwaves each time, damaging his organs.

Seeing this, Hell became impatient. He coldly laughed, and stopped firing temporarily. The fiery light within the black hole quickly grew, and was fired 3 seconds later after locking on to Ling Chen's position.

BOOM!!!!!!

Ling Chen had dodged incredibly quickly as the red light exploded where he had been standing. The moment it exploded, massive shockwaves radiated from the area. To Ling Chen, who was still in the air, it felt like he was hit with a sledgehammer in the back. Blood spurted out from his mouth, and his body flew out like a broken kite, then slammed into the ground.

The Mad Scientist's weapons were simply terrifying. It was hard to believe that such weapons were embedded inside a human's body. Even though he had not been directly hit, the shockwaves had almost blown apart Ling Chen's body. Intense pain spread throughout his body, and his head was spinning. He didn't have any strength to run, and even his vision began to blur. Ling Chen stretched his hand out to a tree trunk and dragged himself up. The figure in front of him blurred, and Hell almost instantly arrived in front of him. His pincer-like hand grabbed Ling Chen around his neck, and easily lifted him up.

With Hell's hand around his neck, Ling Chen lost all strength in his body. He was unable to struggle at all, and could not even make a sound. Within his blurring vision, he could almost see a deathgod raising its sickle at him as he heard in his ear, "No less than a body experimented on by the Mad Scientist. You're still alive after taking that attack. Heh, let's see how long the monster who could

resist 15 times mental energy shock can last.”

Hell savagely threw Ling Chen, causing him to smash through a thick tree trunk and continue to fly. In the end, he smashed through 6 trees, and heavily crashed into the seventh tree. The tree shook, and Ling Chen fell onto the ground, unmoving. The only thing he could do at the moment was keep his eyes open. However, his eyes had lost their focus, and couldn't even see anything.

Chapter 312 - The Avenger From Hell (8)

Ling Chen had walked along the border between life and death countless times. This was the first time he had experienced this within the last 6 years, and his strong desire to live helped him maintain his last shred of consciousness.

Although Ling Chen was powerful, in the end, he was still a person. It was simply impossible for him to compete with a monster. Back then, Instructor Hell was already virtually invincible, and was called the most powerful man on earth. Despite this, 6 years ago, Ling Chen was still able to defeat him with the help of Eve. However, this Hell was now a monster...

The pain was almost unbearable, and many of his bones had been broken. Nevertheless, Ling Chen was glad he could feel pain-after all, it meant that he was still alive. He blinked, trying to focus his vision, and wriggled his fingers... however, that was all he could do. He could feel an oppressive pressure drawing closer and closer, and he was once again picked up by his neck.”

“It’s painful, isn’t it? You’re not willing to die like this, right?” Hell asked in a low voice, “What you’re going through is more or less what I went through back then. However, I could come back from hell, but you won’t even have a corpse! Heheh... actually, it’d be fun if I could make you my puppet. It’s a pity that your mental energy is too strong though-strong to the point that you could even escape from the Mad Scientist’s control. Thus, our only choice was for me to come and end you. To be honest, you should be thanking me. Because if you lived on, and had to face what was coming, your fate would be even worse than death, hahahaha!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Die!”

This time, Hell used almost all of his strength as he once again flung Ling Chen towards the thickest tree he could see. With a massive “boom”, Ling Chen crashed into a one-metre thick tree that was probably over 100 years old. The incredibly thick tree was split in half, and the upper half also flew out.

The moment Ling Chen smashed into that tree, his consciousness was once again on the verge of collapse, and he didn't even notice as he fell to the ground. The entire world had become white, and everything had become silent. It was so silent that he could hear his own heartbeat.

My heart... is still beating... I'm not dead...

Ruo Ruo is waiting for me at home; how can I die here... if I die, who will protect her... if I die, she'll be overcome with grief and might even do something stupid...

I can't die no matter what...

Ling Chen's body lay slanted against a large tree, completely unmoving. Beneath his body was a large pool of blood. His eyes

were still open, but they seemed to stare out into the distance, as if he was dead. Even when Hell's body blurred, then appeared in front of him, there was no reaction at all from him. Seeing the strongest Reaper he had trained using his own skills against him, causing him to fall into despair, had filled Hell with boundless fury. Right now, he was no longer Instructor Hell-not only had he received a new body, but his mind had also been twisted. Seeing Ling Chen on the brink of death, he coldly laughed, "If it was that woman Eve, she'd already be in a hundred pieces. You monster, you're still in one piece and alive after all that. No wonder you blocked so many hits for Eve back then, and could even deal a life-threatening strike to me. If it wasn't for the power and weapons that the Mad Scientist gave me, I probably wouldn't be able to kill you."

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen didn't know what sort of condition he was in right now, only that he was still alive. He could feel that Hell was in front of him, and that he was saying something, but he couldn't focus on what he was saying. It had been like this every time he had been on the verge of death, but like every time before this, he wouldn't allow himself to die... he couldn't die no matter what!

It was so hard for Ruo Ruo and I to finally get rid of the Isrock Disease nightmare, and everything has been getting better and better. How can I allow myself to die here and now?

Before, with his sheer willpower, he had been able to resist his consciousness fading, time and time again. However, this time was different. Back then, he could use his willpower to keep his

consciousness intact. This time, it was his body that was going to perish first.

The world in front of him was completely white, and he tried to focus to see what was in front of him. He was unable to move, so he could only focus his mental energy into his eyes... despite this, his vision still hadn't recovered, so the world was still white to him. However, when he had done this, the white world started to spin, and began to spin faster and faster.

“Having a strong body doesn't seem to be that great of a thing either, because I won't ever be able to experience the thrill of fighting. Even if it's you, all you can do is struggle uselessly in front of me. Since it's like this, I should end this game now.” Standing in front of the unmoving Ling Chen, Hell raised his wrist towards Ling Chen, pointing the muzzle towards his head as he said, “Goodbye, Adam. When you're in hell, don't forget to welcome everyone else, hahahaha.”

As he was talking, he didn't notice that behind him, a black shadow had stealthily appeared. This shadow was almost undetectable by the human eye, and it raised its palm towards Hell's back.

As he madly laughed, Hell prepared to open fire when suddenly, two rays of red light appeared in front of him... those two rays of red light evidently came from Ling Chen's seemingly lifeless eyes.

“W-what?”

This sight caused Hell to freeze in shock. The shadow behind him was also shocked, and froze in place, staring at the red light coming from Ling Chen's eyes.

How could a human's eyes let out red light... what was going on? Moreover, this light was blood red!

Ling Chen's world had changed from white to blood red.

He didn't understand what was going on, and didn't know why his vision had turned blood red. He could see a person's silhouette in front of him, and could tell that it was Hell. However, what he didn't see wasn't Hell's face and external appearance, but rather, his arteries, veins, heart, bones, lungs...

This was the inside of Hell's body...

Why would he be able to see such a thing...?

The outside of Hell's body was virtually indestructible, but his organs were still human. If his organs were destroyed, he would still die...

Destroy his organs...

Destroy his organs...

Destroy his organs!!!!

Ling Chen stared intensely at those countless arteries, veins, organs... desperately willing them to explode, to be cut... gradually, the scene before him began to change. He saw the arteries begin to twist, and the organs began to enlarge, as if they were going to explode...

“ARGH!!!!!!”

Hell, who was preparing to deal the final blow to Ling Chen, suddenly gave a horrific shriek, feeling as if his entire body had been pierced by thousands of swords. As he howled, he pressed against his chest with his hands, then fell to the ground, rolling around in pain. As his organs began to rupture and explode, blood began to stream from his seven orifices, splattering the ground with blood.

However, no matter how much he screamed and yelled, the pain didn't stop, but instead became even more intense.

Ling Chen's world became an even deeper shade of red, and he continued to fixedly stare at Hell's exploding blood vessels and organs... he continued to use his gaze to rip them apart and rupture them...

Destroy... all of them!!

All of them!!

Ling Chen gathered all of his mental energy into his eyes, and watched as the blood vessels and organs all twisted together and became a pile of bloodied mush. As his consciousness faded, the blood red world once again became white, then completely black.

Hell's tortured cries finally died down, and stared at Ling Chen as he also lay on the ground. The whole region had become completely silent.

The mysterious shadow that was behind Hell came in front of Ling Chen and stared at him for a while, before softly speaking out in a quivering voice, "Eyes... of... Extermination!!"

Chapter 313 - The Avenger From Hell (9)

The shadow stared at Ling Chen for a long time, and put its hand on Ling Chen's face and neck, checking for breathing and a pulse. After a while, the shadow muttered to itself in shock, "His body was almost completely paralysed, and yet he was able to focus his mental energy into his eyes, and use the Eyes of Extermination. Why would these demonic eyes that could only appear on ancient Demon Gods appear on a human..."

Ling Chen's body was broken in many places, and was covered blood. There almost wasn't a single place that wasn't damaged. His internal organs had all suffered quite a bit of damage as well-after all, being hit by the shockwave and smashed through trees would have already reduced a normal person into meat paste. However, even like this, Ling Chen's body began to regenerate. The countless wounds all began to quickly close at a rate that could be visibly seen.

"All of the wounds have stopped bleeding, and his lifeforce isn't slipping away, but rather recovering... with these sorts of injuries, a normal person could already be declared to be dead, and would not live for more than 15 minutes. Even if they did survive, they would be a cripple for the rest of their lives. What's with this ridiculous recovery rate..."

The shadow continued to mutter itself as it stared at Ling Chen. In just minutes, Ling Chen's body had already stabilised, and was still recovering at an astonishing rate... the recovery rate was evidently boosted by his strong desire to live.

In the distance, the sound of footsteps getting closer could be heard, and the shadow turned, then completely disappeared.

The moment the shadow disappeared, a woman in white rushed over. Her usual cold but extremely beautiful face was filled with worry. She immediately saw Ling Chen leaning against the tree, a large pool of blood beneath him, as if he was dead. Her eyes contracted, and she ran over as fast as she could.

Standing in front of Ling Chen, she reached out with trembling hands. Her tears almost started to come out as she looked at this horrific scene... this was her worst nightmare, and her head started to spin as she continued to look.

“Yao Yao... is... is it you...”

Behind her, an extremely weak voice sounded out. Mu Bing Yao's entire body released a chilling aura as she suddenly turned around and viciously looked at Hell. He was lying on the ground, completely covered in blood. Seeing this person who should have died 6 years ago, she was not shocked at all. Instead, she was filled with pain and hatred, and even her voice became murderous, “You're still not dead... you... killed him!!”

Mu Bing Yao's expression and voice caused Hell to give a pained smile as he spoke incredibly weakly, “He's... not dead... and won't die... the Mad Scientist said that... unless his whole body is destroyed... his powerful mental energy can keep him alive... not only won't he die... but he'll recover quickly... the one who will die is me... all of my organs have ruptured and... I can only talk through my emergency life support system... but... I can't last

long...”

After saying so much, Hell’s originally pale face became even whiter. Mu Bing Yao quickly returned to Ling Chen’s side, and touched Ling Chen’s face with her hand. The warmth from his face caused her to become delirious with joy as she cried out, “Thank goodness... thank goodness...”

Hell could see Mu Bing Yao’s back, as well as her tears falling onto the ground. She had never cried even once for him, even when he had ‘died’ 6 years ago...

After confirming that Ling Chen was still alive, Mu Bing Yao calmed down by a lot. When she turned around, her face had already recovered its cold look, and it was impossible to tell that she had just been crying. She flicked both wrists, and a silver dagger and a silver pistol appeared in her left and right hands. She pointed them towards Hell, with hatred in her eyes as she said, “You dared to injure him... dying a thousand times won’t be enough to atone for it!!”

Looking at the dagger and pistol, Hell’s expression did not change, but began to laugh, “I am the most... pitiful father in the world... back then when he ‘killed’ me... you didn’t hate him, but followed him... now that I injured him... you hate me so much... hahaha...”

“You don’t have the right to call yourself my ‘father’!” Mu Bing Yao spat as she coldly glared at him, “You killed my mother, and made my entire life a nightmare. You only raised me so that I could become one of your killing machines! The only thing that I’m

thankful to you for is giving me to him... he is my sole reason for living, and I won't forgive anyone who hurts him!"

Mu Bing Yao pointed her pistol at Hell's temple, with her finger on the trigger.

"A girl with a mother will never... become an excellent Reaper... that's why I killed your mother... in the end, you're my daughter... in this world, there's no father who doesn't love his daughter... this seemingly peaceful world you see... is about to descend into darkness... only by becoming a powerful Reaper... can you avoid becoming a puppet... I gave you to Adam... because I knew you had feelings for him... and only he is good enough... for my daughter..."

Back then, Hell would never say so many words to her, nor would his words carry any emotion. Mu Bing Yao looked at the dying Hell in shock. After 6 years, he had become a completely different person, and she herself was also different.

Mu Bing Yao lowered the dagger and pistol, then put them away. She turned around as she coldly said, "I hate you, but in the end, you brought me into this world. As such, I won't kill you. You can slowly die yourself."

She came over to Ling Chen's side, and seeing his condition, her tears once again came out. She stretched out her hands, carefully checking Ling Chen's wounds. Behind her, Hell once again spoke with his weak voice, "... Thank you... at least... you still acknowledge that I am your father... only now have I realised that... I tried to do too much in this life... perhaps, like Adam

said... my heart and mind have changed... however, at least... at least I still have a daughter in this world... that's not too bad..."

"Cough, cough... Yao Yao... the Mad Scientist... and a group of terrifying people... are carrying out a fearsome plan... they've controlled the... Cosmos Corporation... don't go into Mystic... M..."

Hell breathed his last breath, and Mu Bing Yao, who was focusing on Ling Chen, didn't fully hear his warning. She looked back at Hell, and silently, a single tear flowed out from the corner of her eye...

Footsteps of people running could be heard, as seven people wearing similar clothing ran at an astonishing speed. Five of them were male, and the other two were female, and they were all between the ages of 20 to 40. After receiving Mu Bing Yao's message, they had all madly rushed here, and upon seeing Ling Chen's body covered with blood, it was as if their heads had exploded.

"Who... Who did this?! Who was it!!"

The man leading the others was skinny and short, but his gaze was like a piercing and sharp blade. His entire body trembled and he howled, as did the others, as if they had fallen into hell.

Mu Bing Yao quickly got up and said in a low voice, "Master is still alive! Gui Ya, Gui Yue, Yao Ying... calm down, and save master!"

The seven of them all froze, then rushed over, checking Ling Chen's pulse. Gui Ya immediately yelled, "Hurry! Carry master into the car... hurry! Hurry up!!"

In the last 6 years, this was the first time they had seen Ling Chen in this state, and it was the first time Gui Ya had lost control of his emotions in such a manner. He turned around and grabbed one of the men behind him by the collar as he yelled, "Gui Dao! You knew that something was wrong, so why didn't you stay back to protect master!! Have you forgotten who it was that brought us out of that hell, and let us live decent lives! There is nothing more important than master's life in this world! If something happens to master... you'll accompany him as well!!"

Gui Dao looked downwards. They had never disobeyed Ling Chen's commands before, and after Ling Chen had told him not to come back or contact him, he had not dared to disobey. However, he felt that something was wrong, and so he immediately contacted the highest-ranking out of Ling Chen's subordinates, Gui Ya. Now that this had already happened, he wouldn't make any excuses. He gritted his teeth as he replied, "I was useless, and didn't properly protect master... please allow me to see master get well first, before I end my life to make up for this."

"You bastard!" Gui Ya threw him to the ground as he said, "Who told you to die! Live on and use your life to properly serve master!"

Two cars quickly drove over, and three of them carefully put Ling Chen inside, before once again speeding off.

Chapter 314 - The Awakened 13223 Drug (1)

In this world, the only ones who were able to harm Ling Chen to such a degree were Hell, and Eve, who couldn't possibly have been there. When they saw Hell lying in the pool of blood, they all gasped in surprise. They thought back to 6 years ago, when Hell had fallen into the sea. They had not seen his body, and though none of them were willing to say it, but they all knew that it was possible he was still alive. After all, they had been taught time and time again that without seeing the corpse, they should never believe that a person was dead. Today, their worst fears had been confirmed. Although 6 years had passed, and it was only his corpse, they all shivered as they looked at him. Hell was simply too powerful-although they all hated him, none of them had the courage or strength to fight against him back then.

Gui Ya walked over, and checked all over Hell's body, before slowly standing up and saying, "The corpse is already cold, and the skin has a tinge of green. He's definitely dead."

"This demon actually came back from hell... no less than expected of master! He actually defeated him by himself!" Gui Ya exclaimed as he gripped his hands into fists, his forehead covered with cold sweat. He was aware of just how powerful Hell was. Back then, Ling Chen had fought with Eve by his side, and even then, they were unable to kill him. However, this time, Ling Chen had actually defeated Hell by himself. He could only imagine how fierce and dangerous the battle was.

"In this whole world, only master would be able to kill Hell. Now that Hell's dead... there's nothing in the world that can threaten master."

After confirming that Hell was dead, all of them felt slightly better. Although Ling Chen had been severely injured, they knew how strong his recovery was. Thinking to the fact that he had singlehandedly killed Hell, their faces all revealed expressions of deep respect and admiration.

“Since he’s already dead, there’s no need to waste anymore time here. Let’s go.” Mu Bing Yao coldly said as she walked towards the remaining car.

Gui Ya nodded, “Let’s go!”

After Shui Ruo and Tian Tian had been safely sent home, one of the men immediately left, while the other one stood guard outside the door. After getting home, Shui Ruo simply couldn’t calm down. Almost every minute she would glance at the clock... 4pm... 5pm... Ling Chen still wasn’t home. She gripped her phone in her hands, but didn’t dare to call Ling Chen, in case she disturbed him while he did something important.

Tian Tian stayed by her side the entire side, and kept comforting her. However, without Ling Chen, Shui Ruo was unable to keep calm. They had only separated for a few hours, and yet she felt so uncomfortable.

Finally, at 6pm, the door was suddenly opened, and the sound of people rushing in could be heard. Shui Ruo rushed out of the bedroom, and saw a group of people coming in. Apart from the two

men who had drove them to and from the picnic, all of them were strangers to her. Before she could ask who they were and what they were doing, she suddenly saw Ling Chen being carried in on a stretcher.

The shirt he had been wearing had been completely stained with blood, and so was every part of his skin.

Shui Ruo's stumbled as she felt the world spinning around her. She rushed over as she cried out, "Big brother... big brother!!"

For the past 6 years, these people had always been staying with Ling Chen and carrying out his orders. Every one of them knew why he had stayed in Zhong Zhou, then came to Beijing. This was all for Ling Shui Ruo. Ling Chen and Shui Ruo's feelings for each other had grown to the point that they both considered the other person's life to be more important than their own. As such, they knew what sort of reaction Shui Ruo would have upon seeing Ling Chen.

Severe shocks could harm one's body and mind, and they definitely couldn't allow Shui Ruo to come to any harm. Mu Bing Yao quickly walked over, and hugged Shui Ruo, preventing her from getting close as she quickly said, "Ruo Ruo, don't worry, master's fine. He's a bit injured, but he'll be fully recovered soon. We all need to calm down so we can properly look after him."

Shui Ruo was much too worried about Ling Chen to ask Mu Bing Yao any questions. Seeing the condition Ling Chen was in, it felt like her whole world was crumbling. Hearing Mu Bing Yao's words, she froze as tears of worry and anguish flowed out.

“Big sister... Ah!!! Big brother!!”

Tian Tian also ran out, and gave a cry of surprise when she saw Ling Chen. Shui Ruo pulled her over and wrapped her arms her as she said, “Don’t cry, Tian Tian, big brother’s just a bit injured, and is sleeping right now... he’ll be fine soon... please, all of you... please save him...”

They could see that although Shui Ruo had taken some shock, she was desperately trying to stay calm and collected. Seeing this, they were able to breathe out in relief. Gui Ya gritted his teeth as he paced around. Unable to contain himself anymore, he barked out, “Why aren’t Yao Ying and Qian Mo here yet!! Master’s life is on the balance!!”

“We’re here!”

The door was suddenly opened, and two women in their twenties ran in, and the other people stepped aside. Many top-notch assassins were also highly skilled doctors. In order to be skilled enough to quickly kill their enemy, one required in-depth knowledge about the human body. Moreover, in order to stay alive, one was also required to know how to treat their own wounds. Within their group, Yao Ying and Qian Mo were the experts. While they were all in Hell, these two had treated most of their injuries.

“Big sister Yao Ying, big sister Qian Mo...”

These two women were the ones who had helped her level up to LV10 in the Novice Village. Now, she finally understood why they had suddenly appeared and helped her. Shui Ruo had already stopped crying, and bit her lips to prevent herself from making any noise... Mu Bing Yao's words had woken her up-only by staying calm could she help big brother.

Yao Ying and Qian Mo began to examine Ling Chen's body, as everyone else held their breath in anticipation. No one dared to say anything, afraid that they would disrupt the two women. Most of them were strangers, but all of them had expressions of deep worry and anxiousness. Shui Ruo knew that they were definitely the people Ling Chen told her about... the ones who were always silently watching over them.

With them watching over Ling Chen, Shui Ruo felt much better. At this moment, Yao Ying and Qian Mo simultaneously stood up, and Shui Ruo rushed over as she asked with a trembling voice, "Big sister Yao Ying, big sister Qian Mo, how is big brother? He's not injured too badly, right...? When will he get better?"

Everyone else also anxiously looked at them.

Yao Ying and Qian Mo also felt pained as they looked at Shui Ruo's tear-stained face. Yao Ying gently smiled, "Ruo Ruo, don't worry. To other people, these injuries would be life-threatening, but they're no problem to master. Big sister promises you that master will definitely wake up within 3 days, and his injuries will be mostly healed by then. He'll be completely fine within a week."

"Yep! We swear on our hearts!" Qian Mo also walked over as she

smiled at Shui Ruo.

Hearing this, every person's face immediately lit up. The Reapers who rarely talked and even more rarely smiled all hugged each other as they laughed and yelled out, "Hooray... hooray!"

Shui Ruo vigorously nodded. Although her heart still hurt, but she was not despairing anymore. She grabbed Yao Ying and Qian Mo's hands as she said, "Please... please heal big brother, I... I..."

"Don't worry, we were telling the truth. In fact, master's life is more important to us than anything in the world. We wouldn't let anything happen to him."

Yao Ying quickly turned around and said, "Fill the bath with cold water, and help master into the bath. Be careful when you're moving him."

After she finished issuing out commands, Yao Ying rushed into the bathroom. Qian Mo went outside, and retrieved a heavy-looking box from the car, and also went inside the bathroom.

Ling Chen's body was carefully lowered into the bath, and the door was shut. Unable see Ling Chen, Shui Ruo's heart once again began to wildly beat as she hugged Tian Tian.

"The person who hurt him was called Hell. He was the only person in the world who could harm him to such an extent." Mu Bing Yao softly explained as she sat down next to Shui Ruo.

Seeing Mu Bing Yao here, Shui Ruo finally understood who she was. She realised that the Frozen Hearted Man-eater joining Heart's Dream was probably arranged by Ling Chen. All along, none of them had known the relationship between her and Ling Chen.

“Hell...” Shui Ruo repeated this name. She remembered that Ling Chen had told her about this person before. It was the person he had killed 6 years ago with Eve, “Didn't he... die already?”

Mu Bing Yao looked slightly surprised, “It seems that master has already told you about some of this. We thought that he had died, but he actually came back to life. Master sensed his aura, and quickly got you all to leave, and wouldn't let any of us go there... because master knew that if it was actually Hell, us going would simply be suicide. Gui Dao felt that something was wrong, so he contacted Gui Ya... by the time we had arrived, it was too late.

“Luckily, Hell had already died-he's definitely dead this time. After being killed by master, there's no one in the world who can threaten master's life anymore. This thorn in our side has finally been eliminated, and although the price was great, this can be said to be a good thing. After all, Yao Ying and Qian Mo just said that master will recover very quickly... so, don't worry, alright? What he needs the most is your care.”

Shui Ruo looked up and nodded, looking at Mu Bing Yao with tears in her eyes. She smiled gently, “Big sister Bing Yao, I never thought you'd be able to talk so much... and be so comforting as well.”

Mu Bing Yao: “.....”

Chapter 315 - The Awakened 13223 Drug (2)

Ling Chen's recovery rate was peerless. In 'Hell', no matter how serious his injuries were, he had always been able to heal incredibly quickly, and there wouldn't even be any scars left. As such, in 'Hell', he and Eve were like monsters to all the others. Ling Chen's recovery rate was simply incomprehensible, and could not be explained by Science or Medicine.

In just two days, all of Ling Chen's external wounds had healed, leaving not even a single mark. The only indication that he had been in a life-and-death duel was that his skin was still a bit pale. Shui Ruo finally stopped worrying, but stayed by his side, waiting for him to wake up. Two days had passed, but Ling Chen showed no signs of awaking. This was because the toll on his mental energy was no less than the damage sustained by his body.

Early in the morning, when Tian Tian woke up, she saw that Shui Ruo was still sitting beside Ling Chen, gazing at his face. Seeing that Tian Tian had woken up, she warmly smiled, "Tian Tian, you're awake. Big sister will go make breakfast soon."

Tian Tian knew that Shui Ruo had gone yet another night without sleeping. So far, she had stayed beside Ling Chen for a whole two days and two nights, and would not leave his side unless she absolutely had to. Seeing this, Tian Tian's heart ached as she cried out, "Big sister, please get some rest... You haven't slept in such a long time, and you'll get sick if you keep going like this. We'll take good care of big brother, and if he wakes up we'll immediately let you know, alright?"

Shui Ruo knew that Tian Tian was worried about her, and she patted her back as she gently shook her head, “Without seeing big brother wake up, I won’t be able to fall asleep... don’t worry, I’m not tired at all. I’ll make some porridge while you have a shower.”

Just as Shui Ruo stood up, her vision suddenly darkened, and she fell sideways. If it wasn’t for the wall, she would have crashed onto the floor. Tian Tian quickly ran over to support her, as she cried out, “Big sister, are you alright? What happened?”

“I’m alright, it’s just that I’ve been sitting down for too long. I felt a bit dizzy,” Shui Ruo said as she smiled, “Tian Tian, I’ll have to trouble you to look after big brother while I’m cooking.”

After going two days and two nights without resting, Shui Ruo was not in very good shape. However, she was determined to stay by Ling Chen’s side until he recovered. Tian Tian could only obediently nod, as she watched Shui Ruo leave the room.

Shui Ruo’s body felt like it was weighed down by something heavy, and she couldn’t muster up much strength. She hadn’t experienced this feeling ever since she got rid of the Isrock Disease. Moreover, her head also felt slightly dizzy. Perhaps it was because she hadn’t slept in a long time, and both her body and mind were incredibly tired, so Shui Ruo didn’t mind it too much. After walking into the kitchen, a piercing pain came from her chest, and she pressed one hand against her chest and the other against her mouth as she coughed. After coughing for a long time, she took her hand away from her mouth and saw that her hand... was covered with black blood. She looked at her hand in shock as her vision became a bit hazy.

Mystic Moon world, Yan Huang Alliance

“Young Master, two pieces of good news!”

Just as Long Tian Yun logged on, Flame Shadow immediately came over to speak to him.

“Speak.” Long Tian Yun replied.

Flame Shadow immediately reported, “The first is that there are only 3 days of protection left for Heart’s Dream, and we have found their headquarters. They haven’t found a proper place for it yet, so it’s still in a small house in the Northern Residential Area. The Guild Sign should be there. That place doesn’t have any defences, so it should be incredibly easy to destroy it.”

“Very good.” Long Tian Yun nodded in satisfaction. He would not allow anyone to sit on top of the Yan Huang Alliance. Even if he had to hurt Yun Meng Xin, he wouldn’t show any mercy, “Ling Tian’s not an idiot, so he might have something hidden up his sleeve. Make adequate preparations, and destroy it as soon as their protection runs out!”

“Roger.” Flame Shadow nodded, as he continued to speak, “The second piece of good news is sure to make young master happy... we’ve already discovered Ling Tian’s real life identity, as well as where he is residing.”

Long Tian Yun's eyes narrowed as he suddenly stood up and asked, "Have you confirmed this?"

"We're 100% certain." Flame Shadow confidently replied, "The evidence that it's Ling Tian is irrefutable."

"Continue."

Flame Shadow immediately sent a photo from his communication device to Long Tian Yun. There were three people in this photo, and Flame Shadow explained, "This person is called Ling Chen and this girl is called Ling Shui Ruo, and is supposedly Ling Chen's little sister. Two years ago, they moved from Zhong Zhou to Beijing, in order to look for a way to cure Ling Shui Ruo's Isrock Disease. Their parents died two years ago from the Isrock Disease. This small girl's name is Ling Tian Tian, and she's allegedly a relative from Zhong Zhou. They're currently living in Number 12, Tian Yuan District. All of our information corroborates, and his surname is even 'Ling', which I'm sure is no coincidence."

"Any conclusive evidence?" Long Tian Yun asked.

"There's quite a lot," Flame Shadow replied, "We found that place because two days ago, there were people who called the police about strangers and strange cars appearing at that District, so we heard about that place by chance. We found that there was a family living there that seemed to match what we were looking for, so we did an in-depth investigation. We discovered something strange though-Ling Chen brought his sister to Beijing to look for a way to cure her Isrock Disease, but everyone said that recently, his

sister has been quite well, and looks completely healthy.

“We received information from Ling Shui Ruo’s doctor, and according to her, Ling Shui Ruo did indeed have the Isrock Disease, and it had even spread to her inner organs. However, she used the 13223 drug, and was temporarily cured. To our knowledge, the only ones within China with the 13223 drug is the Yun family. I also found video footage of Yun Feng going to the Tian Yuan District on the day Mystic Moon opened. The house he went into was house number 12.”

Long Tian Yun: “.....”

“Moreover, based on this we deduced that this was the reason Ling Tian has been helping Yun Meng Xin. If not for the 13223 drug that Yun Feng gave him, he would have no reason to help Yun Meng Xin so much. The relationship between the Yun siblings is quite deep, and it wouldn’t be surprising at all for Yun Feng to help Yun Meng Xin in such a way. The rumour that Ling Tian was helping Yun Meng Xin in order to woo her was just a rumour made up to cover up the real reason. Furthermore, Ling Tian and his siblings have always lived alone, but there were suddenly many strangers arriving in the past few days. The only possibility is that something big had happened. This correlates with Ling Tian and his two sisters not being online for the past few days. The princesses of the Xiao and Su family have been online, but they seem to be quite worried about something. This is enough to prove Ling Tian’s real life identity.”

Long Tian Yun silently listened to Flame Shadow’s report. After Flame Shadow stopped speaking, Long Tian Yun’s eyes narrowed

as he drummed on the table with his fingers, thinking to himself. He suddenly spoke, “Have you investigated the backgrounds of the strangers who suddenly appeared?”

Flame Shadow shook his head, “Those people have excellent counter-espionage skills, so in order not to alert them, we decided not to take any action.”

Long Tian Yun slowly stood up and he coldly smiled, “Very good. Looks like his real life identity isn’t so simple either, and he has capable people supporting him as well. However, unless he’s stupid, he wouldn’t have made mistakes like that, and would have concealed those people around him. Thus, the only possibility is that something happened to him in real life; something big... that means now is the perfect time to strike.”

Flame Shadow looked at Long Tian Yun as he asked, “Young master, do you mean...?”

“No matter who Ling Tian is, he must die... today!!”

Flame Shadow quickly nodded, “I understand. Before midnight tonight, young master will receive the good news!”

Everyone knew that Long Tian Yun completely and utterly hated Ling Tian. Now that he knew Ling Tian’s real life identity, he was going to make sure that Ling Tian was quickly sent to the underworld. Now was the perfect opportunity to make this into reality!

For breakfast, Shui Ruo only ate a small bowl of porridge, and couldn't eat anymore. She told Tian Tian to eat up, then returned to the bedroom and sat next to Ling Chen. She was so focused on him that she didn't even notice when other people entered the room and stood next to her.

Seeing Shui Ruo like this, the cold aura around Mu Bing Yao began to thaw. She felt quite complicated towards Shui Ruo-she had become the most important person to Ling Chen, and yet Mu Bing Yao was unable to hate her or even be jealous. Instead, she actually cared about her and wanted to protect her. Perhaps this was Shui Ruo's charm... the charm that had caused Ling Chen to want to protect her with his life, and to be willing to give up everything for her.

“Don't worry, like they said, he'll wake up by today at the latest.” Mu Bing Yao softly said. As she spoke, her eyebrows shot up when she saw Shui Ruo's face. It was incredibly pale and sickly!

Chapter 316 - The Awakened 13223 Drug (3)

“Ruo Ruo, are you okay? Are you in pain?”

The paleness of Shui Ruo's face caused Mu Bing Yao to feel incredibly worried. Even Shui Ruo's cherry-red lips were now without a trace of blood. Hearing Mu Bing Yao's words, Ling Shui Ruo gently shook her head as she said, “I'm fine. Maybe it's because I haven't rested well these days...”

Her voice was soft and light, as though she was making no effort to raise it. When speaking, she was still blankly looking at Ling Chen, and Mu Bing Yao could see that her eyes were not even focused. Slowly, Shui Ruo reached out with her hand, putting it on top of Ling Chen's as she softly whispered, “Big sister Bing Yao, I ... would like to sleep for a while ... please take care of big brother, alright...”

All of them were desperate for Shui Ruo to immediately get some rest. Hearing her say this, Mu Bing Yao didn't feel anything was off, and breathed a sigh of relief, “Alright, go and rest. When you're awake, perhaps master will already be awake. I'll take you to your room.”

“No need,” Shui Ruo said as she shook her head, “Let me sleep here ... I want to stay with big brother, so that when big brother wakes up, the first thing he sees is me ... I have a lot of things I need to tell him ... So ... So, please don't let me and big brother be separated, okay? ”

No matter how cold-blooded one was, seeing Shui Ruo like this was enough to make their heart bleed. None of them could bear to insist otherwise. Mu Bing Yao nodded, “Okay, have a good rest. Master will wake up soon.”

“Thank you ... big sister Bing Yao.” Shui Ruo weakly smiled. She held on to Ling Chen’s hand tightly as she sat on the chair and rested her upper body onto the bed. Her voice almost became a whisper, “I don’t have the power to protect big brother or take care of him, so in future, please protect him and take care of him... and also, tell big sister Meng Xin, Qi Qi and Su Su... I really like them...”

Then, although in a seemingly uncomfortable position, Shui Ruo drifted out of consciousness and into a deep sleep.

Shui Ruo’s words caused Mu Bing Yao a bit of heartache, but she did not find anything strange about them. She assumed that Ling Chen’s wounds had too much of a mental blow on her, causing her to feel guilty that she couldn’t do anything for him. The latter part of the sentence was probably because she hadn’t see the other girls in Heart’s Dream for a while. Mu Bin Yao faintly sighed, took the bedside blanket and gently covered Shui Ruo’s back, then as best she could, silently tip-toed out of the door.

Upon exiting the room, Mu Bing Yao saw Tian Tian hurrying over with a bowl of hot soup. This was the sweet soup she had finally managed to make. Mu Bing Yao stopped her, and gestured to be quiet, “Tian Tian, don’t go in, your sister is asleep. Let’s not wake her up.”

“Ah? Really?” Tian Tian yelled out in joy. However, she immediately covered her mouth and vigorously nodded. She crept back slowly while carrying the soup, for fear of making any noise.

The summer days were quite long and the night only began to fall after 7pm. Today’s dinner was cooked by Mu Bing Yao. Although she hadn’t cooked in a while, her skills had not slipped by much, if at all. This was evidenced by Tian Tian’s saliva flowing to the ground upon seeing and smelling the food. All afternoon, she did not dare to enter Ling Chen’s room for fear of disturbing the resting Shui Ruo. For Ling Chen, whose body healed extremely quickly, his injury was no worry at all. However, Shui Ruo’s body, on the other hand, was something to be distressed about. She had finally fallen asleep, and everyone was so relieved and could not bear to disturb her. Tian Tian, who wanted to tell Shui Ruo that dinner was ready, gently opened the door. She saw that Shui Ruo was peacefully asleep on the bed, and so quietly closed the door. After eating dinner, she went to the living room, turned on the TV and muted it. She uninterestedly stared at the screen as she waited for Shui Ruo and Ling Chen to wake up.

Outside of the window.

These days, Gui Ya was always close by Ling Chen. Usually, only two or three people stayed here at a time, waiting for Ling Chen’s orders. Only if a major event had occurred, or if he had personally been summoned, would he appear. Because of Ling Chen’s abilities, he did not require any protection-it would be more appropriate for Ling Chen to be the one protecting the others. However, with Ling Chen unconscious, Gui Ya couldn’t feel at ease

without being nearby.

“Gui Ya, we seem to have been noticed.” A shadowy figure behind him whispered.

“Mmm we were noticed from the first day; these three days, there have been seven separate groups of people investigating us, but they’ve never been close. For such a thing to happen, it’s not strange for us to be noticed. I hope that this won’t cause master’s identity to be exposed” Gui Ya said. He was at a dimly lit corner of the roof, where he could see far away into the distance while remaining unseen.

“Yao Ying and Qian Mo said that that master should wake up tonight.”

“What time is it now?”

“It’s just past eight.

“After master wakes up, immediately return to your posts. Don’t neglect the other matters. Hell is dead, so nothing can threaten the safety of master. As for Eve...” Upon mentioning this name, Gui Ya and the dark figure looked at each other, and chuckled.

“Right, how do we deal with Hell’s body?” Gui Ya suddenly asked.

“... He’s Bing Yao’s father, so we should bury him properly. Also,

although Hell is dead, there isn't the slightest sign of injury to his body externally..."

"Who cares; all that matters is that he's dead. Hmph, how can that demon be fit to be Bing Yao's father." Gui Ya spat. Whenever he mentioned Hell, his body would release murderous intent. Ling Chen's recovery was on everyone's mind, but at the same time, there was nothing to be worried about. Their only concern was that this would lead to some unwanted consequences, such as...

The Tian Yuan District was not very well lit, and in the darkness, Gui Ya's eagle-like eyes flashed. He slowly stood up straight and sneered, "Those idiotic troublemakers are making a move."

"5 o'clock, 9 o'clock, 1 o'clock three directions, with around 10 people in each direction. They're within 100 metres, and they seem to be carrying guns and other weapons."

"Since the guests have come, let's give them all a big gift. Get rid of them as quickly as possible, and find out their backgrounds."

The shadow nodded, and disappeared into the darkness.

As the wind blew through the otherwise silent night, Gui Ya stood motionless, his eyes fixed on the distance as he muttered, "Have we been exposed..."

Three groups of people, all from different directions, slowly approached the Number 12 House of the Tian Yuan District. They

were all dressed in plain clothes, casually walking and conversing as if they were a group of friends who had just come back from dinner. Their task was to test the waters, but they never thought that as soon as they had entered the District, they were exposed... after all, they were up against the Reapers from 'Hell', existences that were more like demons than humans.

All of the security cameras in the District had failed at the same time, but the lights of the security hall were still on. However, the doors, both inside and outside were locked, while the staff on duty inside lay in the monitoring station motionless.

As they came closer to their target, they knew that although their goal was simple, they couldn't leave any traces in this important mission. If they couldn't guarantee that, they would have to eliminate their target by any means, regardless. By the time they were only fifty meters away from the target building, they were still talking and laughing – nothing out of the ordinary. However, at this moment, a number of black silhouettes appeared from behind. Then ... a split second later, silence. They all stopped walking, and fell backwards... they hadn't even heard any sounds, nor did they even have an opportunity to cry out before they were killed, much less see who killed them or retaliate.

“We finished them all off, a total of 27.” Very soon, Gui Ya received the news. Killing, to them, was approached with as much nonchalance as mowing the grass. It was still unclear to them where these people had come from or what their goal was, but for the safety of Ling Chen, they would not allow these people to come close to him. Killing them was the best way to guarantee this.

“Their background?” Gui Ya asked.

“The Long family.”

Gui Ya: “!!!!”

The thing he had least wanted to happen, had finally happened.

The Long family’s intelligence network was simply too vast. Long Tian Yun had been investigating Ling Tian’s real life identity for a long time. The people from just then were sent by the Long family. Now that the people they sent had disappeared... Ling Chen’s identity and location had finally been exposed.

“Prepare our defenses; that was probably just a test. Since they’ve started to move, they won’t give us any space to breathe!” Gui Ya quickly ordered. Then, looking out into the distance, he muttered to himself, “It looks like we won’t be able to stay in Beijing anymore. After this ordeal, where will master choose to go...”

“What !? You lost contact with all of them? Hmph, don’t bother trying again-looks like the other side found them and killed them all. It seems that we’re not up against any ordinary people.”

“Since they found out, they must be making preparations... they might even be moving as we speak. What’s our next course of action?”

“Do not give them even the slightest opportunity to breathe or escape. Since they have already been alerted, we do not need to hide; use whatever means necessary to kill the target. Remember to bring heavy weaponry. If the opposition is too dangerous, blow them to kingdom come.”

“But ... but if that’s the case ... ”

“No buts! That man must die-this is an order from young master. The police will not go there, and you don’t need to concern yourself with the consequences.”

“Roger, we’ll definitely complete the task!”

Chapter 317 - A Dark Night

By night time, the Tian Yuan District had become very quiet. Although the lights in many houses were still on, but it was a lot less noisy than during the day. Many large cars started to drive in from all three entrances of the District, the noise incredibly obvious in the quietness. After entering the District, the cars did not slow down, but drove straight towards the Number 12 house.

On the roof of the Number 12 house, Gui Ya picked up his communication device and muttered, "They're here."

"Fifteen cars in total, with 70 or so people. And they're all bulletproof cars! It'll be impossible to destroy them!"

"What?!" Gui Ya's voice was filled with shock, "How many people do we have?"

"Fourteen!"

"Tell everyone to come here!! We can't let these people enter the house! Tell everyone in Beijing to get here ASAP!"

In order to deal with Ling Chen, they had actually dispatched fifteen bulletproof vehicles! These vehicles belonged to one of the Long family's seven most powerful and secret forces. They would only appear in important situations, and were directly under the command of the Long family. Every single vehicle was extremely expensive, and were equipped with state-of-the-art defences. Normal bullets couldn't do a thing to them. In fact, they were

comparable to even tanks. However, this wasn't the most terrifying thing about them-what Gui Ya was worried about was their destructive power. Every vehicle was equipped with extremely powerful heavy weapons!

Bastards! Is the Long family crazy? They actually sent out a force like this in public; are they not afraid of the repercussions! Even if Long Tian Yun hates Ling Chen, this is simply ridiculous!

In the darkness, fourteen shadows gathered around the Number 12 house. Every person's body was releasing a chilling aura. The sounds of the cars drew nearer and nearer, and soon, there were fifteen identical bulletproof vehicles surrounding the Number 12 house. The doors of the cars were almost simultaneously opened, and the soldiers filed out one by one. Every person was holding... a heavy machine gun! Moreover, all of them were wearing thick metallic armour!

It seemed that the Long family was willing to do anything in order to kill Ling Chen!

“Kill them all!”

Gui Ya issued out the command, and as the soldiers were still exiting the cars, more than ten shadows suddenly appeared... they were like ten or so demonic shadows, and stealthily closed in on the intruders before they even noticed them.

Each of them was wearing heavy armour, and holding heavy machine guns that even three or four normal people would have

struggled to hold. Evidently, these people were all formidable existences. On the battlefield, these sorts of people were pretty much humanoid tanks! These people weren't simple assassins-they were one of the most terrifying forces in all of China. There were about 1,000 or so people in this force, and in order to destroy Ling Chen, the Long family had actually mobilised around 100 of them!

Indeed, Long Tian Yun had the authority to order these soldiers. The hatred he held for Ling Chen was such that he simply didn't care about the consequences!

However, these people who had walked out of 'Hell' with Ling Chen were the strongest out of the strongest. They were all world-renowned assassins, and the dark night made the situation extremely favourable towards them.

Seeing these ghastly shadows, the soldiers didn't panic at all, but instead raised their heavy machine guns as easily as raising a pistol. There were no words exchanged. The sound of the heavy machine guns being rapidly fired filled the air, and cries of shock and fright erupted from around the District. All of the houses' lights were now off, and families all huddled together in the corners of their houses. Many of them picked up the phone to call the police, but this was futile. After all, the Long family had already ordered that without their permission, not a single police officer was to go there, no matter what.

The bullets from the heavy machine guns all had incredible destructive power and speed. It would be impossible for these Reapers from Hell to withstand more than a few hits. However, these heavy machine guns had their own drawbacks. Because there

was too much recoil, the accuracy of the guns wasn't great. With their speed and judgement honed in 'Hell', it wasn't too difficult for the assassins to dodge them. After one round of wildly firing, not a single assassin had fallen. However, Ling Chen's house was already riddled with countless bullet holes, and most of the glass had shattered.

The Reapers immediately retaliated. As soon as they got close enough, they turned into deathgods, using countless methods to kill their targets. A flash of light glinted in the darkness...

Clang!

Gui Ya's dagger had struck against his target's neck, but what resulted was the sound of metal clashing against metal. These soldiers were covered from head to toe in armour, and normal bullets wouldn't even be able to hurt them. However, Gui Ya did not despair or panic. Within the darkness, he found his target's eyes, and pierced them with his dagger...

“Arghhh!”

The soldier's scream pierced through the air. Gui Ya kicked him away while grabbing his heavy machine gun, and started to fire at the other soldiers. His vision wasn't hampered by the darkness at all, and he was able to fire both rapidly and accurately. The only part of the soldiers' bodies that was exposed was their eyes. As such, every bullet Gui Ya shot out always hit his target in their eyes or forehead. Every time he shot, agonising cries would fill the air...

After these people reached the underworld, Hades was sure to tell them how stupid they were for angering these demons from 'Hell'!

Compared to Gui Ya, Mu Bing Yao's actions were much more graceful and efficient. Every time she attacked, blood would spurt out from her victims. The dagger in her hands looked ordinary, but it was able to easily pierce through the armour, cutting many throats. The dagger was called 'Icy Hell', and the creator was the Mad Scientist! It could cut through metal as easily as cutting through tofu. It had originally belonged to Ling Chen, but he had given it to Mu Bing Yao.

Whether it was their armour, weapons or numbers... the Reapers were all disadvantaged. This sort of heavy-armoured and weaponed force could even face up against a normal army. However, these Reapers were all true deathgods. They had been trained how to efficiently kill since young, as well as how to keep themselves alive.

If they wanted to take someone's life, they could do it in an instant. However, if someone wanted to take their life, it would be even more difficult than reaching the skies. The tens of heavy machine guns would be enough to strew the ground with corpses. However, although the assassins' bodies were hit multiple times, not a single person fell down. It was impossible for them to dodge every single bullet, but they wouldn't allow their vitals to be hit. Although the soldiers were covered in full-body armour, their eyes were unprotected, which was enough for the assassins to instantly kill them.

The sounds of guns being fired and screams filled the night sky.

More and more corpses fell to the ground, dying the ground blood-red. However, still, not a single Reaper had fallen. Even if they were hit by a bullet, they wouldn't slow down at all. Although this was simply incomprehensible and impossible to normal people, they had gone through experiences like this many times.

Mobilising 15 bulletproof vehicles and close to 100 elite soldiers to eliminate a single target seemed like a joke. To them, using such a force to crush a single person was simply overkill. Usually, with their equipment and skills, just two or three people would be more than enough. As such, they had not felt even the slightest pressure when tasked with this mission. However, while fighting they discovered that they were wrong... completely wrong.

What was awaiting them were fourteen people... no, they weren't humans. They were simply demons!

Under the dense barrage of bullets from the heavy machine guns, not a single assassin fell. Their bodies were covered with blood, and the bullets were hitting them, but none of them made any noise, and didn't slow down at all. On the other hand, the soldiers were equipped with heavy armour, and yet they were screaming and falling one by one...

What was going on! Were these people even human? Even if it was the Xuanyuan family, such a thing would be impossible!

“Big sister, big sister! Wake up, big sister!”

Most of the glass in the house had been shattered, many bullets would fly through the walls. Ling Chen was still unconscious, and a terrified Tian Tian shook Shui Ruo as hard as she could, trying to wake her up. However, no matter how hard she yelled, or how hard she shook her, there was no response from Shui Ruo. She seemed to be in a very deep sleep.

Chapter 318 - Explosion

Tonight, Long Tian Yun did not enter the Mystic Moon world. Instead, he drank tea as he waited for updates in the real world. Because there was a hidden force supporting Ling Chen, he had decided to send 70 elite soldiers from one of the Long family's seven most powerful forces. Just this small force alone would be enough to crush an army of thousands of people. It was simply impossible for them to fail this mission. He looked at the clock and coldly smirked... it was about time.

As expected, Flame Shadow walked in, but what he said was unexpected. Flame Shadow looked downcast as he hurriedly reported, "Young master, things aren't going too well."

"What do you mean?" Long Tian Yun asked with his eyes narrowed. This wasn't something he had wanted to hear.

"Our men have been suppressed, and close to half of them have died already!" Flame Shadow said, a layer of cold sweat on his forehead. Evidently, he was also shocked that such a thing could occur.

"What?!" Long Tian Yun shot to his feet, as his face darkened, "They're the Steel Dragon Corps! Did they underestimate the enemy by not making sufficient preparations?"

"No! The Steel Dragon Corps would never underestimate their enemies. All of them went fully equipped... young master knows how powerful they are, but... but they said that their enemies are a

group of demons!” Flame Shadow said as his voice quivered.

“...How many enemies are there?” Long Tian Yun was extremely clear about how powerful the Steel Dragon Corps were. He would only use them for the most important missions, and they had never failed before.

“F-fourteen.” Even Flame Shadow couldn’t believe this information. With only fourteen people, the enemy was actually suppressing 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers!

Long Tian Yun: “.....”

This number was enough to make anyone speechless. Long Tian Yun’s face darkened even further, but he managed to calm himself down. He coldly ordered, “Use the heavy weapons to blow up that house and everyone inside!”

Flame Shadow already knew that Long Tian Yun would most likely give such an order. Long Tian Yun had grown up showered with praise and admiration. Ling Tian had given him the biggest humiliation of his life, causing Long Tian Yun to become consumed with vengeance. In order to kill Ling Tian, Long Tian Yun simply didn’t care about anything anymore. Flame Shadow deeply breathed in as he replied, “But young master, if we use such weapons, the consequences will be unthinkable. The best case scenario is that there is small-scale chaos and panic... however, the worst case scenario is that there could be international repercussions. After all, this is China’s capital, and the residents of the Tian Yuan District are mostly upper class citizens. Also, also, if master finds out, he...”

“I’ve already taken care of everything on my father’s side. Think about this: ten or so people are able to completely suppress 75 fully equipped Steel Dragon Corps, and yet we’ve never heard about these people before. Moreover, these people will always be our enemies, and will never be able to come to our side. Would my father allow these sorts of people to continue to exist? If they were allowed to live, even my father would be uneasy about it.” Long Tian Yun coldly replied.

Flame Shadow knew that he wouldn’t be able to change his young master’s mind. Moreover, if they didn’t act, it was possible that all of the Steel Dragon Corps would die there. Ling Tian was already a big problem for them in the virtual world; if they didn’t quickly get rid of him, they would also have a formidable enemy in the real world. Flame Shadow could only heed his young master’s commands as he went out from the room. He turned on his communication device and issued out the order, “Young master orders the house to be completely levelled! Young master will take care of the consequences!”

The Steel Dragon Corps had never failed before, and had never felt fear when facing an enemy before. However, that was against normal enemies. Against these fourteen people who did not even have any armour, they felt fear for the first time. Their comrades continued to fall to the ground, screaming in agony, whereas not a single person had fallen on the other side. In the darkness, they could move quickly and stealthily like shadows. Their speed could make even an Olympic sprinter marvel in awe, and their footwork was incredibly complex. Their attacks were also deadly; the soldiers never knew when they would be the next to fall to the ground.

Demons! They were simply a group of demons! They had originally thought that the Long family's Dark Eagle Corps, which specialised in assassination, were the best assassins in the world. However, they were utter garbage compared to these ten or so demons! Against them, the morale of the Steel Dragon Corps quickly plummeted. They had never expected that there would be such terrifying enemies in the world. Even the best armoured troops they had faced off against in the past weren't able to kill and injure them to such an extent.

Gui Ya and the others all had different levels of injuries. The most injured of them had more than 10 bullets in their bodies, and all of them were covered in blood. However, not a single one of them fell down or retreated. Their willpower, and resistance to pain was something that normal humans couldn't even imagine. Although their wounds would be incredibly serious, even fatal, to most humans, this was nothing to them. They had focused all of their willpower into killing their enemies, and completely ignored the pain.

“Wuaah!”

As Gui Ya howled in fury, the bones of two soldiers were shattered by Gui Ya's punches. Bones were some of the hardest parts of the human body, and yet Gui Ya was able to simultaneously break the bones of two soldiers with two punches. The next instant, Gui Ya disappeared into the darkness, causing those who were aiming at him to lose their target... these soldiers began to wonder if they really were facing off against demons.

“The young master orders everything to be destroyed!!”

As they heard the order being issued, all of the Steel Dragon Corps shuddered inwardly. When they had arrived, they never thought that they would have to resort to such extreme methods. All of them threw away their heavy machine guns as they ran towards the armoured vehicles.

“Don’t let them get in!!”

Their actions caused Gui Ya’s eyebrows to shoot up as he suddenly realised something. He charged towards the soldiers nearest to him, but he was too far away. He could only watch as those people entered the armoured vehicle and slammed the door shut. The vehicle was started, and the top suddenly opened, as three dark metal pipes emerged, pointing at the house.

“Stop!!!!!!”

This scene caused everyone to stare in horror. Gui Ya madly rushed over, but the Steel Dragon Corps were too fast. The moment Gui Ya yelled out, three missiles were shot out from the barrels and exploded onto the house.

BOOM!!!!!!

Everyone got down on the ground as the deafening explosion rang out. The beautiful house exploded, as sand, dirt and smoke filled the air.

“Master!! Master’s still inside, as well as Shui Ruo and the kid!!”

Mu Bing Yao didn’t say anything as she charged into the smoke.

“Arghhhhh!!!”

Gui Ya furiously howled, and his body felt like it was burning with anger. He raggedly breathed and jumped onto an armoured vehicle that was preparing to fire, and once again yelled out as he punched onto the reinforced glass... blood splattered everywhere as many of the bones in his hand broke, but the reinforced glass also broke. Gui Ya’s fist broke through the glass and heavily smashed onto the soldier’s forehead, causing it to explode.

Just this was unable to relieve the fury within Gui Ya’s heart. The viciousness and savageness that the Reapers had suppressed after entering the human world exploded out, and they leapt towards the intruders. Even though their bodies were shot many times, they didn’t let out even a single cry of pain.

The massive explosion, as well as the demonic howls once again caused the District to erupt into cries of fear and horror. The residents were still desperately trying to call the police, but the police still had not arrived.

In their hurry, the three missiles had not been properly aimed, and taking into account that this was one of the most luxurious

Districts in Beijing, the firepower had been reduced. After being hit by the missiles, 75% of the house had been reduced to rubble. Only one of the rooms in the corner of the house was still fine, which was where Ling Chen and the others were.

The massive explosion and shockwave caused Ling Chen to suddenly open his eyes as he sat up. His entire body was incredibly sore, and his memories of what had happened before he lost consciousness quickly came back to him. In front of him was a ruined house, as well as dirt and dust everywhere. The semi-destroyed walls and the bed he was sitting on told him that... this was his house. His pupils contracted.

What was going on?! Was he still in some sort of nightmare?

Chapter 319 - Rampage (1)

“Ah! Big brother, you’re finally awake!”

Tian Tian’s joyful, yet fearful voice sounded out beside him, causing Ling Chen to become fully awake. Smoke and dust filled the air, and half the room had collapsed. He could see that the rest of his home had already become a pile of rubble. He looked at Tian Tian, and saw that she was trying to shake Shui Ruo awake.

“Big sister! Big sister... please get up! Big brother’s awake now! Big sister!! Big sister!!”

Tian Tian shouted at the top of her lungs and used all of her strength to shake Shui Ruo. Despite this, Shui Ruo remained asleep. Ling Chen forced his mind awake, and immediately went to pick up Shui Ruo. The moment his hands touched Shui Ruo’s body, his entire body froze.

This feeling...

What was going on... why was her lifeforce so weak... it was even weaker than when she had the Isrock Disease? What had happened?

Shui Ruo’s condition resulted in a deep feeling of fear in Ling Chen, so much that his hands started to tremble. He propped Shui Ruo up, and saw her incredibly pale face... as well as the blood that had come out of her mouth.

It was almost as if something had exploded within him as Ling Chen began to yell, “Ruo Ruo! Ruo Ruo!! Are you alright, Ruo Ruo? Open your eyes! Ruo Ruo...”

From when the Steel Dragon Corps had appeared, Tian Tian had been trying to wake up Shui Ruo the whole time. However, no matter what she did, Shui Ruo did not wake up. As Ling Chen continuously yelled, her eyelashes twitched, and she slowly opened her eyes.

“Big sister!”

“Ruo Ruo!” Seeing Shui Ruo opening her eyes, Ling Chen’s voice became calmer. However, his heart sank as he saw her eyes. Shui Ruo’s eyes were even more beautiful than stars, but currently, there was not a bit of light in them. He tightly hugged Shui Ruo as he cried out in a trembling voice, “Ruo Ruo... tell me... what happened? What’s going on? Are you hurt? Are you feeling unwell somewhere? Is Hell back... quickly tell me what happened!”

After destroying Hell’s organs with his mental energy and eyes, Ling Chen fell unconscious. When he woke up, he was still unaware that Hell had already been killed by him.

Seeing his face and hearing his voice, Shui Ruo’s pale face lit up with a weak smile. She stretched out her hands as she stroked Ling Chen’s face, saying, “Thank goodness, you’re awake... that’s great...”

“Ruo Ruo... are you alright? What’s wrong? Quickly tell me.” Ling Chen worriedly asked. He could feel no warmth at all from her body-in fact, her temperature was slowly dropping. Tian Tian also noticed that there was something strange about Shui Ruo, and she clutched Shui Ruo’s hand as she worriedly exclaimed, “Big sister... what’s wrong... don’t scare me like this... wuu...”

“Big brother...” Shui Ruo’s voice was incredibly soft, and even though she was quite close, it was difficult to hear her, “Can you... promise me... a few things? They’re very... important...”

All around them was the sound of guns, yelling and screaming... and within his arms, lay Shui Ruo, looking incredibly weak and sick. It was as if he was in a terrible nightmare. Ling Chen pulled Shui Ruo even closer, “Don’t talk, I’ll take you to a hospital... you’re going to be fine, you’re going to be fine...”

Ling Chen’s voice was still trembling. Tian Tian had never heard Ling Chen speak in such a voice before, and she started to worriedly cry.

“N-no... big brother... promise me... you have to...” Shui Ruo managed to say before she started to cough.

Shui Ruo’s voice had become panicked, and blood started to flow from her mouth again. Ling Chen felt as if he had been struck with thunder, and he carefully held Shui Ruo in his arms, as he nodded, “Alright... alright... we’ll stay here... I’ll agree to anything you say...”

Shui Ruo calmed down, and within her hazy vision, she could see that Ling Chen's eyes were trembling, and his face was filled with fear... she knew that in his world, the only thing that could make him so worried and anxious was herself. She smiled as her vision became even more blurred, "Big brother... big sister Dia Wu... loves you so much... even as much as I do... she did so much for you... big brother... you must find her... and be with her..."

"Ruo Ruo, I..."

"As well as Qi Qi and Su Su... they're all so cute and kind and pretty... they're all good enough for big brother... and all like big brother a lot... big brother can't give them... to other people... I'm sure big brother will like them as well... and also big sister Bing Yao... I'm not dumb, I could tell that... she loves big brother so much... and she can also protect big brother... so big brother can't leave her either..."

Shui Ruo's words caused Ling Chen's heart to become even more agitated, as he said in a pained voice, "Ruo Ruo! Ruo Ruo... don't say these things... I'm only going to be with you for the rest of my life..."

"No... you promised... you can't go back on your word... big brother... already promised me..."

Shui Ruo's voice became panicked again, and seeing her pale face wrenched Ling Chen's heart. He didn't resist anymore and nodded, "Alright I promise... when Ruo Ruo gets better, we'll make them ours... as long as Ruo Ruo gives her approval, I'll snatch them over..."

“En...” Shui Ruo smiled, then said in a weak voice, “Big brother... the second thing... big brother looks the best when he’s smiling... so no matter what happens, big brother has to live smiling every day... and has to be happier than anyone else... this is my biggest wish... big brother will fulfil this, right...”

Ling Chen nodded-he could only nod, “With Ruo Ruo by my side, I’ll be the happiest person in the world... as long as I can see Ruo Ruo every day, I’ll be happier than anyone else in the world... Ruo Ruo, Ruo Ruo...”

Shui Ruo reached out with her hands and held one of Ling Chen’s and Tian Tian’s hands, and put them together. Seeing Tian Tian’s tear-stained face, Shui Ruo gently said, “Tian Tian, don’t cry... you’re a big kid now, so you shouldn’t cry easily. In future, you need to be obedient to big brother and take care of big brother... alright?”

“Big sister... big sister...” Tian Tian began to bawl her eyes out. All she could do was cry out ‘big sister’. Shui Ruo used the last of her strength to squeeze their hands as she said, “Big brother... make sure you take care of Tian Tian...”

Ling Tian vigorously nodded, “Tian Tian is part of our family, so I’ll definitely take good care of her together with Shui Ruo... Ruo Ruo, you like Tian Tian the most, so you have to hurry up and get well, so you can look after Tian Tian and watch her grow up, right?”

Shui Ruo tried to maintain the smile on her face, so they wouldn't have to painfully watch her pass away, but tears started to stream down her face. She simply didn't want to leave them, and she spoke in an incredibly soft and wispy voice, "Big brother... Tian Tian... we said that we'd be together forever... but... but..."

"RUO RUO!!" Ling Chen cut her off, his face filled with pain, "Don't say such silly things!! We'll definitely be together forever! Definitely! We've been through so much, and we even defeated the Isrock Disease, what could possibly stop us from being together... don't say such things! You'll definitely get better!"

More and more tears flowed out from Shui Ruo's eyes, falling onto Ling Chen and Tian Tian. Her vision became more and more blurred, and she couldn't even see their faces anymore...

"Big brother... Tian Tian... I'm sorry... sorry..."

"..... I'm sorry....."

"....."

As Shui Ruo breathed her last breath, her eyes closed, and her hands lost their strength and let go of Ling Chen and Tian Tian's hands.

At that moment, Ling Chen felt like this entire world was collapsing, and that his heart was being ripped to shreds...

“Big sister...” Tian Tian was shocked out of her wits, and started to cry again, “Big sister!! Big sister... quickly wake up... big sister...”

Death was something Ling Chen was incredibly familiar with, and he could instantly tell that there was not a bit of life within Shui Ruo.

No... this wasn't real... this wasn't happening!!!!

Ling Chen's senses fell into disarray, and he couldn't even hear Tian Tian crying next to him. Everything turned into a bleak grey shade of despair. A hot gust of wind blew past, but it felt icy cold to him. He suddenly shook Shui Ruo's body, yelling, “Ruo Ruo... don't sleep... open your eyes!! I know you're trying to scare me... quickly open your eyes!! I don't want to play this game anymore... Ruo Ruo!!”

“Ruo Ruo!!!”

“Arghhhh!!!!”

Mu Bing Yao had been standing behind Ling Chen for a while, and she watched in shock, her face completely pale. The only part of her that was moving were her hands, which were shaking.

Everyone knew that Shui Ruo's 'death' had nothing to do with the Long family's attack. However, Long Tian Yun had chosen this time to attack, and whether it was truly his fault or not, he would

be the one to shoulder the blame.

Chapter 320 - Rampage (2)

“Arghhhh!!!!!” This howl of rage sounded like it came from a demon, and it filled the entire Tian Yuan District. The sorrow and anguish contained in his howl caused many hearts to tremble... it was one filled with despair and pain, and no one could imagine what had happened for someone to scream out like that.

The battle temporarily stopped, as the howl had partially deafened many of them, and their consciousness had also been jolted by the emotions contained in that howl. The voice was so different that the Reapers didn't even immediately realise that it was Ling Chen's voice.

“This is... master's voice?”

“Arghhhh!!!!!!!”

Another howl pierced through the night sky, completely halting the battle. Every single person stood in their place, unsure of what was going on. The howl was also accompanied by the crying of a young girl. At this moment, a figure emerged from the ruins, and walked towards them... in that moment, an aura of absolute malice and bloodlust overcame every person, and assaulted their body and mind.

The Reapers saw Ling Chen's face filled with pain and hatred, as well as felt the terrible aura emanating from his body. Not a single person dared to look at him in the eyes.

“M-Master...” Gui Ya, who was a complete stranger to fear, spoke to Ling Chen with a trembling voice as his heart also quivered. He knew that something terrible had definitely happened... this was the first time in his entire life that he had felt such a terrifying aura from a person before. Even Hell didn't make him feel so much fear. Gui Ya gulped, and stuttered, “T-they're from the L-Long family...”

Long family... these two words caused Ling Chen's anger to burst to a new level. The murderous aura around him once again grew, and his gaze was fixed on the Steel Dragon Corps soldiers. He howled like a beast into the night sky, “Wuaaaaaaah!!!!”

The howl caused every hearer's heart to clench with fear. Ling Chen's figure blurred, and he disappeared, then reappeared in front of the closest soldier... this caused all of the Reapers to stare in shock. Ling Chen was incredibly fast, but from memory, even Ling Chen at his peak wasn't as fast as this. The movement just then... was comparable to teleportation!!

“Arghhhh!!!!”

The overwhelming pressure and aura caused that soldier to become overcome with fear, and he couldn't even react... in fact, with Ling Chen moving at such a speed, he wouldn't be able to react in time anyways. Ling Chen howled in despair and hatred as he smashed his right fist towards the soldier's head!

Bang!!

The sound was like that of a small cannon discharging, and blood splattered everywhere. The soldier's head, which was wearing a helmet that couldn't even be damaged by bullets, had been blown to smithereens. After taking that hit from Ling Chen, his head was completely gone, with his body still standing in place and blood spurting from the neck. Only after a few moments did the body fall to the ground.

“Arghhhh!!!”

The demonic howl continued, and Ling Chen appeared in front of another soldier. He grabbed onto the soldier with both hands, and pulled apart the incredibly durable metallic armour. The soldier's face became pale as a sheet, and could only scream as he saw the demon plunging its hands towards his body...

Chi!!!!!!

Ling Chen ripped the soldier's body in half, and then threw the two halves away. Seeing how the two soldiers had died, the other soldiers almost had a heart attack. However, the nightmare was about to descend onto them. The incredibly terrifying shadow appeared in front of them, and grabbed two of the soldiers by their necks. Ling Chen squeezed, and their throats, along with the armour, were completely crushed in his hands. He threw them onto the ground and stomped on them with either of his feet, causing cracks in the ground. Ling Chen stomped down with such force that his feet passed through not only the bodies, but also the front and back of the armour. Ling Chen continued to howl as he rained down punches on the soldiers on the ground, with each punch creating a mist of blood. His voice became more and more

dreadful as his punches became fiercer and fiercer. Although he had not taken any damage at all, his body was completely dyed in blood... seeing the scene, no one believed that there was even a fragment of those two soldiers left.

“D-Demon... Demon!!!”

These incredibly tough soldiers had taken incredibly rigorous and strict training that normal humans couldn't even imagine, and had faced death countless times. However, at this moment, their morale had been completely shattered. Whenever Ling Chen looked at a soldier, they would immediately scream and throw away their heavy machine guns, and sprint in the opposite direction.

However, they were unable to escape from this savage demon. A gust of wind blew past, and one soldier was punched in the heart, and he flew through the air. Another gust of wind blew past, and two arms filled with malice and hatred punched through another two soldiers' bodies, crushing their hearts. Ling Chen then raised them up, and threw them onto the ground, mangling their bodies. The peaceful Tian Yuan District was filled with howling, screaming, sounds of explosions and blood. The howls caused all the residents to visibly shake with fear each time they heard it.

It was a complete nightmare.

The Reapers stood transfixed, looking at the crazed Ling Chen. No one could utter a single word. After being in 'Hell' for so long, they had become desensitized to blood and death, but none of them had seen such cruel killing methods before... Ling Chen ripping

apart bodies, crushing them and sending them flying was fuelled by the bottomless pit of despair and anger within him.

Mu Bing Yao tightly hugged Tian Tian, and used her hands and body to cover her eyes and ears. Looking over at her comrades, Mu Bing Yao weakly said, “Ruo Ruo... is dead...”

This news was like a bolt of lightning that struck all of the assassins. They all trembled, and their hearts began to beat like crazy.

They knew that there could only be one possibility for Ling Chen becoming so berserk...

They all knew how much Ling Chen had loved Shui Ruo, as well as that he would never be able to leave her. The position she held within his heart had surpassed everything, including his own life.

Shui Ruo had died... was it because of that explosion... “These bastards, bastards!” Seeing how horrifically these soldiers were dying, Gui Ya originally pitied them. However, after hearing this, he was filled with only fury and hatred. Gui Ya tightly gripped his hands into fists, with his nails piercing his hands, but he couldn’t feel any pain. He knew that Shui Ruo dying was a massive blow to Ling Chen, and they were all similarly affected as well.

In the hot night air, their bodies all felt cold. The Steel Dragon Corps soldiers were dying in terrible ways... not a single one of them was left with a complete corpse. Before dying, they all experienced the greatest fear of their lives.

The last agonising cry came from a bit of a distance away. The fifteen armoured vehicles were still parked around the house, but not a single one of their original riders were still alive. Under the dim lighting, they could see that the entire ground was covered with blood, broken limbs and organs. It was a completely hellish scene.

“Wuaaaah!!!!”

With no more targets to unleash his rage on, Ling Chen stumbled around, blinded in his rage, until he had calmed down.

Tap... tap... tap... tap... Ling Chen walked over, his body looking as if he had just taken a bath in a lake of blood. He had just released such terrifying strength, and yet he was currently walking like an old person. He looked in front of him, but his eyes were completely lifeless.

“Master... Master...” Gui Ya walked over, and tried to talk to him. However, as soon as he got close, he could feel the icy aura of death all over Ling Chen.

Ling Chen did not respond at all to Gui Ya’s words. He slowly walked with heavy footsteps towards where Shui Ruo was.

“Big brother... big brother...”

Ling Chen’s appearance, as well as the stench of blood and guts

completely terrified Tian Tian, but she felt even more sad and pained. Mu Bing Yao hugged her, not allowing her to get close to Ling Chen. Tian Tian's words didn't evoke any reaction out of Ling Chen either. It was as if all of his senses had been sealed, and he was just like an emotionless puppet. Ling Chen walked into the ruins of the house, and slowly knelt in front of Shui Ruo, then picked her up... his actions were incredibly gentle, as if he was dealing with an extremely precious but fragile treasure.

Ling Chen stayed like that for a while. With Shui Ruo in his arms, his expression and breathing became calmer and calmer. Gui Ya, Mu Bing Yao and the others all watched dumbly, and not a single one of them dared to go over, afraid that they would disturb Ling Chen... and Shui Ruo.

Chapter 321 - Bloodbath (1)

What is death?

When a person dies, one will never be able to see their smile, hear their voice, feel their emotions or touch them again. After dying, one becomes ignorant of everything. The person leaves behind the people around them in agony and pain... the greater their feelings towards the person, the greater the sadness and hurt.

Under the moon and stars, Gui Ya sat on the ground, gritting his teeth as he treated his own wounds all over his body. Every Reaper was covered with wounds, with many of them just centimetres away from their vitals. When fighting, they did not pay their wounds any attention. However, after their enemies had all been killed, the pain hit them at once, causing many of them to almost faint. Much of the blood on the ground had come from them. Even the strongest out of them, Gui Ya, was hit by 9 bullets. One of the bullets had passed through his thigh, and he sat on the ground, unable to stand up from the pain.

After all, they were only human. They had been able to suppress the Steel Dragon Corps, but they had also received many injuries. After all, their enemies were one of the seven most powerful forces the Long family had! They had been completely outclassed in terms of both equipment and numbers.

“Gui Ya, it’s too dangerous to stay here.” Gui Dao, who was wrapped in bandages, limped over. Even though he was in quite a lot of pain, he didn’t allow himself to rest. The danger was far from over.

Shui Ruo's death had made them all feel incredibly guilty and useless. They all felt that they had contributed to Shui Ruo's death by not being able to protect her properly.

Gui Ya punched the ground as he resolutely replied, "If master doesn't leave, we won't leave either. However, within a short period of time, we should be safe here. Seeing their 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers being destroyed, the Long family won't dare to act recklessly."

Gui Dao turned around and looked over to where Ling Chen was... a half-destroyed room within the ruins of the house. Ling Chen was hugging Shui Ruo, unable to accept that she was dead. He didn't move at all, and didn't make any noise. No matter how much they yelled or tried to plead with him, there was no response. Seeing that they couldn't do anything, they all retreated outside the house and stood guard. About an hour had passed, and there was still no movement from Ling Chen. They could only wait for Ling Chen to walk out of his pain.

"Master is incredibly strong, and even defeated Hell. He'll definitely be able to recover from this." Gui Dao said as he gritted his teeth.

Gui Ya looked forwards as he muttered, "If it was anything else, I'm sure master would be able to take it. But Shui Ruo's death..."

Gui Dao fell silent. Six years-they had been watching over them for a whole six years. They all knew just how much Ling Chen

loved Shui Ruo, as well as how important she was to him.

Suddenly, a cry of shock rang out.

“Ahh!! Big brother... big brother... big brother!!”

Gui Dao and Gui Ya suddenly stood up, their bodies covered in cold sweat as Tian Tian ran out from the ruins, crying, “Big brother... have you seen big brother... big brother’s gone!!”

“What?!”

Everyone’s eyes widened. Mu Bing Yao rushed into the room, and saw Shui Ruo lying peacefully on the bed, but Ling Chen was not there.

“Master... where did master go? Did any of you see master?” Gui Ya shouted as he stared down each of the Reapers... all of them had very good senses, and had surrounded the house in order to protect Ling Chen. However, not a single one of them had sensed Ling Chen leaving.

Pa! Gui Ya slapped himself in the face, and rushed to where Ling Chen had been kneeling. He touched the ground, and found that it was icy cold. His face darkened and he got up, “Crap! Master has left for quite a long time already. Goddamit, we’re all trash! We didn’t notice at all when he left.”

With Ling Chen’s abilities, it was indeed possible for him to leave

without any of them noticing.

“Big brother... where did big brother go? Quickly find big brother... I want big brother!!”

Shui Ruo's sudden death had left Tian Tian incredibly distraught, and she simply couldn't lose her big brother as well. She grabbed Mu Bing Yao's hands as she began to bawl.

“Everyone... listen up...” Gui Ya calmed himself down as he clapped his hands, “I'm going to look for master right now... I think I know where he is. I want to tell you all that if you want to go with me to find master, the chance of surviving will be less than 1%!! Moreover, if you die, you might even die for nothing. As such, if you still have important tasks you haven't carried out, or if you have dreams you haven't fulfilled, or if you just don't want to die, then don't come with us. You all have the right to choose for yourselves! I can't make this choice for you. If you are willing to die for master, stand behind me!!”

Not a single person hesitated as all of the Reapers, covered with wounds, stood behind Gui Ya.

“Gui Ya you bastard, are you trying to insult us? Are you trying to say that some of us might be cowards who are afraid of death?!”

“If it wasn't for master, we would be living lives that are worse than death. Because of master, we were able to live as humans! Even if we die a hundred times for master, we'd be willing to!”

“What a joke! If I didn’t go, I’d hate myself for the rest of my life. Gui Ya, stop spouting nonsense.”

“Good!!” Gui Ya vigorously nodded, as he looked at his comrades. All of them were in terrible shape, but their eyes were resolute, without even a trace of fear, “Then I won’t waste any more words. Master left in such a manner because he probably didn’t want us to go with him... I’m sure he was worried that we would die if we went as well. In this sort of situation, the only place he could be is the Long family’s territory!! The Long family has countless experts, and six years ago, master attacked there once. That time, he had nearly died, whereas this time, master evidently doesn’t care about living anymore...”

Because of the suffering that he and Dia Wu had gone through, Ling Chen completely hated the Long family. Nevertheless, after meeting Shui Ruo, he had let go of much of this hatred.

However, because of Shui Ruo, his hatred towards the Long family had increased a thousand-fold... Shui Ruo’s death caused him to lose his motivation for living. He would create a bloodbath in the Long family, even if it cost him his life!

“Immediately contact everyone heading over here, and tell them to head towards the Long family’s territory... let’s go!!”

The moment all of them set out, none of them expected to return alive. They existed solely to protect Ling Chen. If Ling Chen wanted to use his life to take revenge, they would do the same. After taking a few steps, Gui Ya stopped, then turned to Mu Bing Yao and said, “Bing Yao, don’t come with us. You have a more

important job, which is to protect Tian Tian. Take her and go to somewhere safe... even if it costs us our lives, we will bring master back safely.”

Mu Bing Yao looked at him, her eyes quivering... finally, she nodded, and walked away while holding Tian Tian’s hand. After walking for a bit, they turned around and watched as the rest of the assassins walked off.

At this moment, no one noticed a hazy shadow appear next to Shui Ruo.

The shadow reached out, and pressed against Shui Ruo’s body from her neck to her stomach. It then drew its hand back, and muttered to itself, “Her body isn’t damaged at all from the outside... it must have been... poison!

“This is interesting... but at this point, the cause of death doesn’t matter anymore. This is a golden opportunity, Ling Shui Ruo, to have someone who loves you so much, you must be happy even in death. Let’s see if his feelings for you will create a miracle...”

The shadow pressed its hand against Shui Ruo’s chest, and a dark silver light appeared. It covered Shui Ruo’s entire body, and after a flash, Shui Ruo’s body was gone... not a trace was left.

The hazy shadow also disappeared. It was as if all of that had never happened.

Only Mu Bing Yao and the extremely worried Tian Tian were left. Mu Bing Yao picked up Tian Tian and softly said, “Tian Tian, let’s go stay next to Ruo Ruo for a bit.”

“Wuu... Wuuuu... big sister... did big sister really leave us... will I never see big sister again... wuuu....”

Mu Bing Yao: “.....”

They entered the ruined room, but Shui Ruo was no longer on the bed.

Mu Bing Yao’s pupils contracted, and she raced over. However, no matter where she looked, Shui Ruo’s body was nowhere to be seen.

A figure covered with blood walked under the streetlights, looking like a vicious demon. It had been six years since he had last been to that place, but he still remembered exactly where it was.

Far away, he looked at that place, which was lit up with lights, and he smiled... that smile was incredibly sinister and malevolent.

Long family... you took away my first life... and caused me so much pain... and now, you’ve even taken away from me the most important thing in my life... all of you... must... die!!!

Chapter 322 - Bloodbath (2)

“What did you say?! Say it again!!”

Long Tian Yun’s expression was extremely dark, and his face twisted in anger. Facing Long Tian Yun’s savage eyes, Flame Shadow gulped, then stuttered, “Y-young master, it’s true... the 75 Steel Dragon Corps... h-have all disappeared... the last we heard from them were their screams. It’s possible that they... they’re...”

Bang!!

Long Tian Yun smashed his fist onto the table. The pain in his fist simply couldn’t be compared to the shock and anger in his heart. He hated Ling Tian to his bones, and in order to ensure his death, Long Tian Yun had sent out 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers. Even he thought that this was overdoing it. Moreover, he had even ordered them to use the heavy weaponry.

He had never thought that the outcome would be like this!

75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers... facing ten or so people!

The Long family had invested unthinkable amounts of time and money into the Steel Dragon Corps. Although the Long family had been around for hundreds of years, they only had 1,000 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers. Losing 75 of them in a single night was a massive blow to the Long family. Moreover, he had made the decision to send them himself. His father would be unimaginably angry when he found out about this.

“Also, master has been alerted of the incident at the Tian Yuan District, and is currently heading home. He will arrive after 1 hour. Young master, what should we do? Do you... do you want to call Xuanyuan and Long Yu? If they help out, I’m sure...”

Long Tian Yun waved his hand. The 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers were like 75 humanoid tanks. Losing all of them had given him an uneasy feeling, “Since it’s already like this, let’s not make any more rash decisions. Since father is coming back... very well, I’ll leave it to father. Perhaps he’ll punish me, but I’m sure that he’ll be even more desperate than me to destroy Ling Tian’s forces. Flame Shadow, keep stalling the police. We definitely can’t allow any police to get to the Tian Yuan District before dawn!”

“Roger!”

In the remaining time, Long Tian Yun sank deep into his thoughts. The information network that he controlled was spread across all of China, as well as some of its neighbouring countries. He struggled to think of which force could possibly defeat 75 of his Steel Dragon Corps with just 10 or so people. However, there was not a single force that came to mind. What was even more terrifying was that he did not even detect that these people were in China.

It was already quite late into the night, but the Long family residence was bustling with activity, as everyone prepared for the arrival of Long Zheng Yang. All of the guards also stood at attention, fully awake. Long Zheng Yang was the highest-ranking political figure in China, and almost didn’t have any holidays. He

would rarely come to the residence, and even when he did, he would only stay for a short period of time. In the one hour of preparation time that they had, the Long family residence had been completely cleaned up, and the number of guards had tripled.

Finally, a fleet of cars drove in, and a deafening chorus of “Good Evening Leader” sounded out. Long Tian Yun shook himself awake and walked out. As he walked out, he saw Long Zheng Yang expressionlessly walking towards him through a group of people.

Long Zheng Yan was in his fifties, but looked like he wasn't even forty yet. His face was extremely calm, and his eyes were like those of a hawk's. Behind him walked two people who looked around his age. Long Tian Yun hurriedly went up and greeted up, “Welcome back, father. I hope you've been well, Uncle Xuanyuan and Uncle Murong.”

‘Uncle Xuanyuan’ and ‘Uncle Murong’ nodded towards him. In this world, apart from Long Zheng Yang, only these two people could cause Long Tian Yun to be so respectful to them-Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian.

The Xuanyuan family were simply legends. All of the upper-class circles held a deep respect towards them. The Long family had three main guardian families that protected them, and the Xuanyuan family was the head of these three. In fact, the strength of the Xuanyuan family surpassed even that of the two other families combined.

In an era when guns were prevalent, cold weapons and martial arts were being used less and less. However, the Xuanyuan family

had been using swords for hundreds of years. Their sword arts were their pride, and their soul. No one knew just how powerful the Xuanyuan family's sword arts were, and not many people in the world had even the right to experience them. Despite the advancements in technology, the Xuanyuan family was still the Long family's most powerful guardian, and whenever Long Zheng Yang appeared, there would always be at least one member from the Xuanyuan family with him. Long Zheng Yang had faced countless assassination attempts over the years, but he had not even come close to harm every time... everyone knew just how powerful the Xuanyuan family and their swords were.

'Uncle Xuanyuan', Xuanyuan Dao was the older brother of the Xuanyuan family's leader, and was also the most powerful person in the Xuanyuan family. With his status as the strongest and eldest of his generation, he was more than qualified to be the family leader. However, he had no interest in power, and wanted only to protect the Long family. Another reason was that he only had a daughter, and did not have any sons. As such, the rest of the family did not mind him rejecting this post. Over the years, he had protected Long Zheng Yang from countless dangers, and had never allowed him to come to any harm. There was even a rumour that out of all those who had been killed by him, not a single one had even seen his sword before. The speed of his sword was incredible—even bullets couldn't compare to it.

Xuanyuan Dao's daughter, was called Xuanyuan Dia Wu.

The Xuanyuan family had always been a small family. Currently, they only had 500 people or so. Although they had so few people, they were all monstrously strong. In the Xuanyuan family, no matter if one was male or female, they would be trained to use a

sword. Every single member was an expert swordsman or swordswoman. Even with a normal sword, they would not even be phased when facing off against guns and grenades. Although there were only 500 of them, trying to get through them to attack the Long family was simply impossible.

Another of the Long family's guardian families was called 'Long Yu'. It was a force that the Long family had created, and were all espers. Espers were incredibly rare, and were either born with, or developed, rare powers and abilities. Long Yu aimed to find people like this, and add them to their ranks. If they were unwilling, they would be 'dealt with'. Over the years, many espers had been added to Long Yu, creating a terrifying force of espers. The head of the seven main forces of the Long family was, of course, Long Yu. Long Yu's Chief, Murong Xiong Tian was a strength-based esper. His strength was simply inhuman, and his body was incredibly tough. His body could block bullets without even being scratched, and he could easily crush boulders. He could even heavily damage reinforced steel with his bare fists. Even the Xuanyuan family's Xuanyuan Dao would have trouble dealing with him.

Long Zheng Yang stood in from of Long Tian Yun as he slightly frowned, then emotionlessly said, "Give me an explanation."

Long Zheng Yang had always been very satisfied with his son. Whether it was his capabilities, charm, intellect, methods, ambition or decisiveness, Long Zheng Yang felt that Long Tian Yun was well-equipped. However, his greatest shortcoming was that he could be impulsive at times-this was something that affected all young people. However, tonight's events had caused Long Zheng Yang to be furious-while he was on his way, he had also heard that 75 of his Steel Dragon Corps were missing or killed

in action. Despite this, he still gave Long Tian Yun a chance to explain. He knew that his son wouldn't have done such a stupid thing without thinking.

Long Tian Yun did not panic, and nodded, "Let's talk inside, father. I apologise for not telling father in advance, but I had my reasons."

They walked into the room and closed the door. Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian stood on either side of Long Zheng Yang with their eyes closed. Long Zheng Yang sat in his chair, looking at Long Tian Yun.

Long Tian Yun poured some tea and gave it to Long Zheng Yang, before talking, "Father, do you remember the Ling Tian that I talked to you about?"

Long Zheng Yang replied, "Ling Chen is Ling Tian?"

Seeing as Long Zheng Yang knew about the name 'Ling Chen', he must have more or less known what was going on. Long Tian Yun nodded, "Indeed. In the virtual world, he antagonised me, and humiliated me many times... he even defeated Xie Yu [TLN: Sword Emperor] and Cang Yan [TLN: Flame Emperor]." Hearing this, both Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian raised their eyebrows.

"He antagonised me again and again, but was not afraid of my retribution-he definitely had a reason for this. As such, I investigated his real life identity, and found it. Originally, I sent a few people to stealthily assassinate him. However, before they

even got close, we lost contact with them. From this we gathered that there were definitely strong people protecting him. As so...”

“And so you mobilised the Steel Dragon Corps?!” Long Zheng Yang thundered.

“Indeed! And even with 75 of them, none of them made it back. What was terrifying... was that there were only fourteen enemies!!”

“What?” Long Zheng Yang’s face changed, and even Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian looked shocked. All of them knew how powerful the Steel Dragon Corps were.

“That’s right, only fourteen people!” Long Tian Yun gritted his teeth as he continued, “Fourteen people were able to destroy 75 fully equipped Steel Dragon Corps soldiers!! And we didn’t even know that there were such people in Beijing. Moreover, they’re evidently hostile towards our Long family. Father, would you be able to have peace of mind knowing that there were these sorts of people around?”

Long Zheng Yang’s face darkened. Fourteen people had actually destroyed 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers. Even if it was fourteen Long Yu espers, they wouldn’t be able to accomplish such a feat.

Bang...

At this moment, a gunshot broke the silence. It came from the

entrance to the residence, and the alarms began ringing. Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun shot to their feet, and Xuan Yuan Dao and Murong Tian looked outside, an icy glint in their eyes.

Chapter 323 - Bloodbath (3)

Long Zheng Yang normally resided in the Central Military District, and the Long family residence was a separate District. All of the Districts were close by, but independent to each other. To the right of the Long family residence was the Xuanyuan family, and Long Yu was to the left. As the main residence of the Long family, not only were the Xuanyuan family and Long Yu close by, but the Long family's seven main forces also resided nearby. The defences of the Long family's residence were quite remarkable. In fact, the Long family was even called the safest place in the world. Unauthorised people were not allowed to get close, and did not have the power to get close. Small problems would be quickly squashed. Larger problems would cause the Xuanyuan family, Long Yu and the seven forces to immediately act. Over these years, there were occasionally small problems, and a big problem just once... that was six years ago. A person in black had actually passed through many of the Long family's defences and security systems, and reached the inner region of the residence. However, no matter how powerful that demon was, he was powerless against the combined might of the Long family's guards. In the end, the Xuanyuan family's leader severely injured him, but he was able to escape. This was the greatest humiliation suffered by the Long family's guards.

Under the moonlight, the person from six years ago had once again come to the Long family's residence. What was different was that this time, he did not stealthily enter. Instead, he walked towards the main entrance. Wherever he walked, it was as if the lighting became even dimmer. He walked at a slow, but steady pace, and his heavy footsteps made everyone who heard them shiver... they were like the footsteps of an approaching deathgod.

“Who are you? Immediately leave, this is the Long family’s residence!”

The Long family’s outer guards appeared. Although they were the lowest-ranking guards in the Long family, each of them were the best of a hundred. Every person was equipped with a heavy machine gun that weighed 30 kg, and there were more than one thousand of them. Although they were the lowest-ranking guards, just them alone made an unbreachable wall. The seven main forces were hidden in wait, and there was also the Xuanyuan family and Long Yu...

As such, Ling Chen had no plans of returning alive.

Since Shui Ruo had died, how could he let her leave by herself.

Hearing the voice, Ling Chen looked up, and his grey eyes shot out a menacing aura... Ruo Ruo, wait for me. I’ll be there with you soon. Let me give them a memory they’ll never forget first...

Ling Chen continued to slowly walk forwards. One hundred metres away was where the Long family’s residence was.

When he looked at them, the malevolent aura caused all of the guards to shudder. Sensing the danger, they all raised their heavy machine guns, “Immediately leave, otherwise we’ll shoot!”

Ling Chen continued to walk...

Bang!!

The gunshot pierced through the silence. The guard resolutely opened fire, and shot Ling Chen in the right kneecap. Without confirming the identity of this person, they didn't dare to kill him. This shot was to incapacitate him. However, when the bullet hit him, they didn't see a spurt of blood. Only after a few seconds did a small trail of blood leak out.

“Wuaaaah!!!!”

The smell of blood once again caused Ling Chen's savage nature to burst out. His eyes widened as he released a demonic howl, and charged towards the person who had shot him. His speed was too fast, and all the guard saw was the blur of a black shadow, followed by screams.

The screams came from two guards who were standing together. Each of their chests had a hand protruding through them, and their scream lasted only half a second.

Before today, Ling Chen had not killed anyone for six years. He didn't want his hands, which held Shui Ruo every night, to be stained with blood. However, Shui Ruo had passed away, so he didn't hold himself back at all.

“Arghhh!!!!”

Ling Chen roared, and threw the corpses into the air, and each of

them flew tens of metres away. Ling Chen had grabbed the heavy machine guns in their hands, and held one of the 30kg heavy machine guns in each of his arms, as he madly sprayed at the other guards.

Bangbangbangbangbangbangbangbang.....

Ling Chen was simply too fast, and everything had happened in the blink of an eye. By the time Ling Chen began to rapidly fire around him, the other guards still had not realised what was happening.

Ling Chen was a Reaper trained in Hell, and was skilled in all sorts of assassination methods. Of course, he was also proficient in using guns. Even though he was blinded by his rage, the two heavy machine guns still accurately took lives like two deathgods. They shot out at least 5 bullets per second, but every single bullet found a target. What's more, all of the places hit were heads, hearts, temples, solar plexuses... the accuracy was incredible.

The sound of heavy machine guns being rapidly fired put the entire Long family on the highest alert. Ling Chen charged towards the Long family's residence with the two heavy machine guns, and the guards couldn't even retaliate before being killed. Very soon, Ling Chen ran out of bullets.

Ling Chen roared as he flung the two heavy machine guns forwards, which accurately smashed into two of the guards who were about to shoot him. With the machine guns flying at such a speed, it was impossible for them to dodge. The machine guns crashed into their heads, causing them to explode. As they fell,

Ling Chen had already rushed in front of them and picked up their heavy machine guns, as he once again sprayed while running forwards. In the blink of an eye, the guards once again began to scream as they fell down.

The rest of the guards finally began to take action, and bullets began to rain down towards Ling Chen.

An expert at using guns was often an expert at dodging guns. Not a single one of the Reapers who had followed Ling Chen out of hell would be afraid of this sort of attack. After all, despite being shot at by 75 Steel Dragon Corps, not one of them had suffered fatal injuries. Ling Chen was even more skilled than them, and now that he had become serious again, it was simply impossible to hit him. In fact, Ling Chen's reaction speed and instincts allowed him to dodge without even thinking.

However, facing this barrage of bullets, Ling Chen did not dodge or retreat, but rather continued to charge. He took tens of lives every time he swept around with his heavy machine guns as he yelled, "All of you... die!!!"

Countless bullets shot into his chest, arms, legs, head and face... causing blood to trickle out from Ling Chen's body. However, this sort of attack that could kill most people a hundred times over didn't even slow Ling Chen down. He rushed into a group of soldiers like a streak of black lightning as he wildly shot, causing numerous screams of pain.

"What's going on?!"

Hearing the guns and screams caused Long Zheng Yang to frown. Just as he spoke, the sound of rapid gunfire once again filled the air. Long Tian Yun calmly replied, “Looks like someone knows that father is here, and so wanted to take this opportunity to attack. How arrogant of them.”

All of them knew how impregnable the Long family’s residence was. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to have resided there for hundreds of years.

“Xiong Tian, do you want to go and see what’s happening?” Long Zheng Yang asked.

Surprisingly, Murong Xiong Tian shook his head as he replied, “Leader, in this sort of situation, I have to remain within 10 steps of you. However, rest assured, with the defences here, no one will be able to break through.”

Long Zheng Yang nodded, and said, after thinking for a while, “Strange, if they were targeting me, the best time to attack would have been when I was arriving. Could it be that they’re not targeting me... Xiong Tian, ask the guards what sort of people have come, and how many there are.”

“Roger.” Murong Xiong Tian immediately picked up his communication device. Just as he was about to talk, Flame Shadow burst in, as he hurriedly said, “Hurry! Master, young master, we need you to move to a secure location. The intruders have already broken through three defence lines, and all of the guards in those

three defence lines have been killed!”

“What?” Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun gaped at Flame Shadow in shock. Although the outer defence lines comprised of the lowest-ranking guards, but every one of them were highly trained, and had some of the best machine guns available on the market. From when the gunshots started, only about 30 seconds had passed... these intruders had broken through three defence lines, and had even killed everyone, in just 30 seconds!!

It seemed that these intruders were no ordinary people.

“Do we know what sort of people they are? How many are there? More than a thousand?” To be able to break through three defence lines in such a short time, it was only logical that the enemy had such numbers. However, what Long Zheng Yang couldn't understand was why they had not been detected earlier.

“I-It's just... one person!! A single person!!” Flame Shadow said breathlessly as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

“WHAT?!”

Chapter 324 - Bloodbath (4)

A single person had broken through 3 defence lines in just 30 seconds...

No matter if it was Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun, or Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian, they were simply unable to believe it. Long Zheng Yang deeply frowned, and ordered, "Contact the control room!"

The video of the scene was soon displayed on the big screen in the hall. It was quite dark outside, but they could clearly see a man covered in blood, madly rushing forwards despite the barrage of bullets. He was hit by countless bullets, but he did not fall or even slow down. He wildly shot with two of the machine guns he had taken from guards, taking down scores of the guards in front of him. Behind him, he left a trail of corpses and guns. Whenever he ran out of bullets, he would simply exchange them for the ones corpses were holding.

The scene made everyone speechless.

"He's... not afraid of bullets! Xiong Tian, could he be like you, a 'metal' esper, the strongest type of strength-based espers?" Long Zheng Yan asked as he breathed in a breath of cold air. Although he had seen much in his lifetime, and knew many strong espers, this scene chilled his blood. The only person he knew who could block so many bullets was Murong Xiong Tian. Murong Xiong Tian was called the strongest esper in China, and Long Zheng Yang believed that there was not a single person whose body could be compared to his. However, the person in the video was evidently

braving the bullets as he charged forwards.

“Not only that, but his speed is terrifying... who is this person... this sort of person can shake the whole world-why haven't we seen this person before?!” Xuanyuan Dao exclaimed.

Long Tian Yun stared at the person on the screen. Suddenly, he stepped forwards, zoomed in and stared at that person's face. Seeing the person's face clearly, his pupils contracted as he yelled, “Ling Tian! It's Ling Tian!!”

Flame Shadow gaped in shock. Long Zheng Yang's face darkened, “Ling Tian... the same Ling Chen who you sent people to kill?”

“That's right! It's him!” Long Tian Yun clenched his hands into fists, and nodded, “I've seen his photo before; it's definitely him... he must be here for... revenge!!”

Seeing this person blocking bullets with his body and kill the guards with ease, he gritted his teeth as he trembled. That person was indeed Ling Tian... he was invincible in the game, and had shocked everyone again and again. However, in real life... he was even more of a monster! No wonder he dared to offend the Long family. Long Tian Yun was secretly pleased-it was good that he had discovered Ling Tian's real life identity earlier, so they could get rid of him as soon as possible. Otherwise, the consequences could have been unthinkable. Even with such abilities, attacking the Long family could only result in death!!

“Wait... master, young master... this person...” Flame Shadow

stared at Ling Chen, as his expression and voice became even more shocked, “This person reminds me... of that person from six years ago! That person also blocked bullets with his bare body and had the speed of a demon!”

Everyone looked at Flame Shadow. Xuanyuan Dao asked in a low voice, “Are you saying that this is the same person who massacred many people in the Long family six years ago, and was only stopped by Xuanyuan Sheng?”

The events from six years ago were a shadow over the Long family. It was the shame of the Long family and Xuanyuan family. The powerful Long family had been stealthily broken into, and the intruder had killed many people, as well as escaped from all of the guards and the Xuanyuan family... this was a great humiliation!

However, back then, Long Zheng Yang, Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian all weren't there, and the person had his face covered. After all those years, they had not been able to find a single trace of that person afterwards.

“It should be him. The feeling that he gives me is very similar to the one that person gave me... plus, how many people in the world can be this strong?” Flame Shadow replied. He was not present at the time, but he had watched the recording. The feeling of terror that he now felt was exactly the same.

Not a single person had forgotten about the events of that year. Flame Shadow's words caused Long Tian Yun's body to stiffen as he said, “If that's the case, then that explains many things. I had always wondered why Ling Tian acted so antagonistically to me for

no reason at all. So it seems that there is great enmity between him and our Long family!”

Long Zheng Yang’s frown became deeper. He turned around and looked at Long Tian Yun as he asked, “How old is this Ling Tian?”

“According to our information, he’s 22 years old.” Long Tian Yun replied. Just as he answered, an icy feeling passed through his entire body, and his eyes widened. Even Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian looked shocked.

Long Zheng Yang nodded, as he slowly said, “Indeed, 22 years old. That means that six years ago, he was only 16 years old. A 16 year old child entered my Long family and caused such an uproar, and killed and injured hundreds of our guards. And he had only been stopped by the leader of the Xuanyuan family, but still escaped... now, he’s 22, and can rip through our defence lines in a matter of seconds. Even the Chinese Army wouldn’t dare to attack our defence lines... Xuanyuan, Murong, could you do such a thing at that age? In fact, is there anyone in the world who can do such a thing?”

Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian fell silent. Only after a while did Murong Xiong Tian reply, “The only person who might be able to accomplish this feat at such an age would be the ‘goddess’ in the west, Eve. But that’s only if the rumours about her ‘godliness’ are true. As for this person, it’s impossible for him to be Eve. After all, Eve is a woman and can’t possibly be here.”

Long Zheng Yang continued to talk, “To be able to do such a thing at his age, if he grew to your age... moreover, this person

seems to have a deep hatred for my Long family...”

Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian’s expressions became serious. Murong Xiong Tian replied, “Indeed, if he is allowed to grow, he will be a deadly threat to us. However, it’s good that he’s still young and impulsive, and came here by himself. Since he came today, he’ll have to stay here forever.”

Long Zheng Yang nodded. He didn’t know what sort of background this person had, as well as what caused him to hate the Long family so much. Despite this, Long Zheng Yang simply couldn’t allow him to live, after knowing what he knew. He had to die!

“Steel Dragon, Dark Eagle, Blood Wolves and Long Yu have all made preparations, and will arrive soon. Don’t worry leader, since he came today, he won’t be able to leave!!”

“Wuaaaaaah!!”

Ling Chen’s roar caused tremors through the air, causing all of the guards’ faces to pale. Along with the roar, a wave of malevolent aura and bloodlust exploded out from his body. The bullets that been embedded into his skin were sent flying away. Countless trails of blood flowed out from his body, but the blood then immediately stopped. Ling Chen looked up and savagely stared at the guards in front of him...

Looking at the bullets that Ling Chen had forced out from his body, the guards all trembled, and almost couldn't hold their machine guns anymore. The cold feeling of death permeated through their entire bodies, causing them to shudder.

This was a monster... a demon!!

In their fear, most of the guards even forgot to shoot. A black shadow flashed before their eyes, and their bodies flew. Ling Chen once again grabbed their machine guns, and began to shoot, causing countless screams of pain. Before most bodies had even hit the ground, Ling Chen had already run past them. The distance between him and the main residence was getting smaller and smaller.

“Don't let him get to the main entrance... Ahhh!!”

The main entrance to the Long family's main residence was tightly shut. On top of the walls, many guards with machine guns and sniper rifles were stationed. However, not a single one of them had fired, as Ling Chen was simply too fast. No matter if it was the machine guns or sniper rifles, none of them could lock on to Ling Chen's position. There was only one target, whereas there were many guards. If they opened fire, they might hit their own comrades, without even hitting the intruder... what's more, the intruder didn't even fear bullets!

By the time he had reached main entrance, Ling Chen's entire body had been covered by his own blood. He had lost count of how many people he had killed, as well as how many times he had been shot. When one didn't care about life or death anymore, the

number of injuries, as well as the extent of their injuries, simply didn't matter anymore. All that Ling Chen wanted to do was to create the biggest massacre of his life... to use his life to turn the Long family's residence into hell!!

He had almost run out of bullets, and seeing the Long family's high walls, Ling Chen roared and jumped up. By jumping with his full strength, he was able to leap more than 10 metres high, causing all of the guards to stare in shock... how could a human jump so high!!

“Arghhhhh!!!”

Ling Chen once again flung his machine guns forwards, causing them to smash into the bewildered guards on the wall. When Ling Chen landed, he was already inside the Long family's main residence. The alarms began to ring even louder, and all of the Long family's servants screamed as they ran away... looking at this familiar place, Ling Chen smirked, looking more and more demonic.

Chapter 325 - Bloodbath (5)

“He’s already within the main residence!” Flame Shadow yelled as they watched Ling Chen leap over the high walls.

“Hmph, it doesn’t matter. Since he’s come in, he won’t be going back out.” Murong Xiong Tian coldly said.

At this moment, the door was opened then closed, and a serious looking man in his forties or fifties walked in. He wore plain clothes, and carried an eye-catching long sword on his back. Behind him were 8 young men who were similarly dressed, and all carried swords on their backs. After entering, he quickly walked forwards and spoke, “Leader, young master, elder brother, I apologise for my tardiness. Who is this intruder? It seems that he has caused quite a bit of commotion.”

This was the current family leader of the Xuanyuan family- Xuanyuan Sheng. Within the Xuanyuan family, his proficiency with the sword was second only to Xuanyuan Dao.

“You’re not late at all,” Long Zheng Yang replied as he nodded at him, then looked back at the screen, “There’s only one person. It’s very likely that... he’s the same person as the one from six years ago!”

“The one from six years ago?” Xuanyuan Sheng looked confused for a moment, before his eyes widened in shock as he suddenly remembered.

“It’s just a possibility. Second brother, you’ve fought with him before, so you should be able to tell.” Xuanyuan Dao said.

Xuanyuan Sheng nodded, and looked towards the screen... he only looked for a few seconds before he frowned and spoke in a serious voice, “It’s him! He’s the one who came six years ago... after fighting with this sort of person, it’s impossible to forget them. It’s been six years... and he’s actually come again! Hmph, very well. Last time, he caused the Long family and the Xuanyuan family much chaos and humiliation. This time, I definitely won’t let him get away. Otherwise, if this sort of monster was allowed to continue to exist, none of us will be able to have peace of mind. Leader, I’ll immediately go and get rid of him! His body is inhumanly strong, and normal bullets and cold weapons are unable to hurt him. Only my Azure Edge Sword can deal a fatal wound to him.”

“No, it seems that there’s no need for the Xuanyuan family leader to act,” Murong Xiong Tian said as he looked at the screen, “The 200 Dark Eagle Corps have arrived, and the Steel Dragon and Blood Wolves Corps, as well as my Long Yu are about to arrive as well. It’s impossible for anyone to escape the claws of 200 Dark Eagle Corps soldiers!”

Xuanyuan Sheng looked at the screen, “Looks like Chief Murong has not underestimated this person at all, going so far as to deploy 200 Dark Eagle Corps. This person is incredibly dangerous. If it wasn’t for my Azure Edge Sword, I wouldn’t have been able to injure him so easily back then... however, with 200 Dark Eagle Corps, that person is good as dead.”

“Put down your guns! No one fire! Kill him immediately and don't let him get any closer!”

The order rang loud and clear in every guard's ears. After entering the Long family's main residence, none of them used their guns anymore. They only had a single target, but he was incredibly fast. It was more likely that they would hit the Long family's members or staff rather than the target himself. Moreover, guns were essentially useless against him, but could be used by him to mow down guards quickly.

Most of the guards stationed in the main residence were equipped with cold weapons, or no weapons at all. However, being stationed within the main residence, they were far stronger than the guards with machine guns outside. The instant Ling Chen landed on the ground, ten or so figures sprang towards him. Ling Chen suddenly looked up, and saw two people smashing their fists towards his head. If these fists landed on a normal person's head, it was sure to shatter immediately.

A murderous light flashed in Ling Chen's eyes. He roared, but did not dodge. Instead, he met their fists with his own fists, and with a “bang”, his right fist instantly shattered the other person's fist. It was like a baseball bat had smashed into a fragile piece of glass. Ling Chen's other hand also smashed into the other person's fist, turning it into a pile of mush. As they cried out in pain, Ling Chen rapidly fired punches around him towards all of the other figures. Every time his fists made contact, an explosion would ring out, and a fist-sized hole would appear in their body...

An almost-indestructible body, overwhelming power and blinding speed... this was the result of him suffering in 'Heaven' and 'Hell'! This was the Mad Scientist's 'experimental subject' that surpassed the rest of mankind,

Whenever any of their heavy attacks landed on Ling Chen's body, what each of these soldiers unexpectedly felt was massive pain and numbness. However, whenever Ling Chen attacked, they would either be instantly killed or crippled. Ling Chen did not show any mercy-each of his attacks was filled with his boundless rage and hatred.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

The terrifying sounds caused every person's heart to tremble. In the blink of an eye, thirty of the Long family's elite inner-residence soldiers had been massacred or crippled. Those who lay on the ground screaming were instantly killed by Ling Chen with either a hand or foot through their bodies. Ling Chen's arms were dripping with blood. After killing so many soldiers, the bloodlust in his eyes had not been reduced at all, but had become even stronger. The soldiers that had not dared to approach him all stood at a distance with pale faces, and could not move an inch from where they were standing. At this moment, a gust of wind blew past, and one by one, shadowy figures suddenly appeared in front of Ling Chen. Seeing these figures, the Long family soldiers began to exclaim in joy as they hurriedly retreated.

The wind stopped, and a fairly short, middle-aged man wearing black clothes stood about 10 metres in front of Ling Chen. He emotionlessly stared at Ling Chen, despite the terrible bloodlust

that he was emanating. Between the fingers of his left and right hands, the man carried three short daggers in each hand.

Behind him, a crowd of people also wearing black appeared. There were 200 of them in total, and they fanned out in an arc facing Ling Chen.

The Dark Eagle Corps was the Long family's main assassination force. Each Dark Eagle soldier had been through hellish training and countless life-and-death battles. All of them were first-rate killers. None of them feared death, and could remain calm under any circumstance. They were proficient in hundreds of killing techniques, and their bodies were covered with numerous killing weapons. Their existence was their enemies' worst nightmare. Even the Long family would shudder when mentioning the Dark Eagles.

Two hundred Dark Eagles, including their leader, had appeared to fight a single target. This was the most uneven battle that the Dark Eagles had ever fought. Murong Xiong Tian did not dare to underestimate Ling Chen at all, and the Dark Eagles never underestimated their enemies no matter what. They all stared Ling Chen down with piercing gazes and released their bloodlust.

Their appearance caused the rampaging Ling Chen to calm down. He stopped roaring, and stood in his place, staring back at the Dark Eagles. He was incredibly familiar with this sort of bloodlust. He was so familiar with it that he despised it.

Whoosh...

A gust of cold wind blew past as the right hand of the person in front slightly moved.

Swish swish swish swish...

Assassins never wasted any words with their targets. In the deathly silence, ten or so shadows flew out towards Ling Chen like arrows. Within their hands was the icy glint of metal.

Chi chi chi chi chi chi...

Their speed was incredible, and these ten or so shadows had passed by Ling Chen's body while attacking him in the blink of an eye. Ling Chen did not move at all. With the assassins moving at such a speed, it was impossible for him to dodge. No one saw Ling Chen move, but they heard more than ten sounds of metal cutting through flesh.

"He's dead... no less than expected from the Dark Eagles." Long Tian Yun coldly laughed. Long Zheng Yang nodded, and just as he was about to speak, what appeared on the screen caused his eyes to suddenly widen.

Thud thud thud thud thud...

Ling Chen had not moved from where he stood, but now, he was holding a dagger that wasn't in his hands before. The thirteen shadows behind him heavily fell onto the ground, as blood spurted

from their necks.

“W-what?!” Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun cried out in shock, and Murong Xiong Tian and Xuanyuan Dao’s faces both darkened.

“Impossible!! The one who should have died is Ling Tian-why did the Dark Eagles die! After being attacked by more than ten Dark Eagles, how is he still alive?! This is impossible!!” Long Tian Yun yelled as he gnashed his teeth.

“Flame Shadow, immediately replay that scene.” Long Zheng Yang ordered.

“Ah... roger!”

The video footage was rewinded, and played at a speed ten times slower. They saw thirteen shadows rushing at Ling Chen from different directions. Within their hands were short, but incredibly sharp, daggers. As the first Dark Eagle came close to Ling Chen, his dagger stabbing towards Ling Chen’s neck, Ling Chen’s hand suddenly stretched out. Even at a speed ten times slower, they were unable to clearly see just how Ling Chen’s hand had appeared there. His hand blurred, and suddenly, the dagger was in Ling Chen’s hand... afterwards, without even moving, he had dodged each of the Dark Eagles’ attacks, while the dagger in his hand had accurately swept past each of their throats...

In less than 2 seconds, his body had twisted more than 13 times, and his hands had sliced more than 13 times... he had dodged every

single attack and had slashed more than 13 throats.

The moonlight reflected off the dagger in Ling Chen's hand, and they saw that there was not a single drop of blood on his dagger.

The Dark Eagles were an incredibly powerful group of expert assassins.

However, their opponent was Ling Chen.

After all, Ling Chen was an expert assassin of expert assassins... he was the king of all the assassins that had walked out of 'Hell'! These assassins' techniques and abilities were simply child's play to him.

Chapter 326 - Bloodbath (6)

It was already midnight. Despite the fact that it was a summer night, everyone trembled as an icy feeling came over them.

Thirteen Dark Eagles had instantly died, whereas their target had not been harmed at all. Although they were all trained assassins, none of them could remain calm, as all of them revealed expressions of shock. Far away, the Long family's soldiers watched with their mouths wide open, completely dumbfounded. While they were still trying to figure out what had happened, Ling Chen disappeared from their field of vision.

He was going to use their blood to show them what a true assassin was like.

The Dark Eagles reacted quickly. Although Ling Chen moved incredibly quickly, they did not lose their target. Ling Chen rushed towards the 200 Dark Eagles, with the dagger in his hand ready to strike... however, at that moment, Ling Chen's speed exploded to a new level, causing him to disappear once again as he rushed into their ranks...

Swish-----

On the screen, Long Zheng Yang and the others saw the light reflecting off Ling Chen's dagger moving in an 's' shape.

Eight Dark Eagles simultaneously hit the ground, with blood spraying out of their necks.

Ling Chen's new level of speed, as well as the 's' shape curve that had taken eight lives caused the Long family father and son to gaze in horror and shock, completely speechless.

The Dark Eagles wore light clothing, and used light daggers. These daggers were deadly weapons in the hands of the Dark Eagles, but became a deathgod's scythes in Ling Chen's hands. The extremely well-trained Dark Eagles were always calm and collected. However, Ling Chen's speed and his skills caused the Dark Eagles to fall into chaos.

Chi chi chi chi chi...

Even if it was the Dark Eagles, whenever Ling Chen chose a target, they were doomed to die. He was simply too fast, and he moved like an illusory shadow within the ranks of the Dark Eagles, not even giving them a chance to react. They were legendary existences to other assassins, but to Ling Chen, they were like a group of clumsy children.

In no time at all, more than thirty of the Dark Eagles had fallen. These assassins that could easily singlehandedly face off against and kill 100 normal soldiers had been decimated in an instant. By the time they were finally able to react, their bodies were frozen with fear.

“Illusory Shadow Killing Formation!!”

The leader, with six green daggers in his hand, turned around

and coldly issued the order. Immediately, all of the Dark Eagles began to move, surrounding their target with many shadows, ready to launch attacks at any time... however, their target with Ling Chen, and their speed and explosive power was nothing to him. No matter how fast they moved, or how bewildering the formation looked, Ling Chen was still easily able to accurately slash their necks. On the other hand, their daggers were unable to even touch Ling Chen. One moment Ling Chen would be within their sights, and in the next, he would be gone. The soldiers could always feel Ling Chen getting closer, but by the time their bodies had begun to move, their necks had already been cut.

All that resulted from the Dark Eagles' 'Illusory Shadow Killing Formation' was even more of their deaths.

The Dark Eagles' leader stood his ground, his face steeled. In order to become a Dark Eagle, one had to pass through torturous training and many life-and-death trials. In the process, hundreds of people had died, become crippled, or gave up. Over all these years, there were only 900 Dark Eagles in total. They had brought such a large force to kill a single person, and yet they were being destroyed like flies. All of their techniques could not harm Ling Chen at all.

“Hah!!!”

The Dark Eagles' leader finally acted. He locked on to Ling Chen's position, and instantly appeared within ten steps of him. He swept with his left hand, and three green daggers accurately flew towards Ling Chen's feet. However, Ling Chen was simply too fast. Before the three daggers had even come close, he had already moved

elsewhere. When the three daggers reached the ground, they unexpectedly exploded.

Boom!

The explosion was not too loud, but intense light illuminated the entire Long family's residence. Within those three daggers were flashbombs!

The blinding light caused everyone to tightly close their eyes. However, within the light, the Dark Eagles did not panic at all, but rushed towards Ling Chen's position... they were all trained to fight in the dark, and could fight easily with their eyes closed. Their other four senses were simply superhuman, and were able to instantly locate a target even without their eyes.

However, if they knew where Ling Chen's skills and power had come from, as well as his strengths, they definitely wouldn't have done something stupid like using flashbombs.

From within the brightness, countless yells of confusion and pain sounded out. After a few seconds the light disappeared. The ground was now filled with bodies on the ground, and only two people were standing... Ling Chen and the Dark Eagles' leader. The dagger in Ling Chen's hand been bent, but it still pierced deeply into the Dark Eagles' leader's neck. The three daggers in the Dark Eagles' leader's right hand were also stabbed into Ling Chen's chest, but only pierced into his chest by less than two centimetres. However, everyone who looked at the eerie greenness of the daggers would know that there was something strange about them.

“Im...possible...”

Feeling his lifeforce slipping away, but seeing Ling Chen stand there completely fine, the Dark Eagles' leader's eyes widened as he slowly fell to the ground. Ling Chen took out the three daggers from his chest, and his chest stopped bleeding momentarily.

“Impossible! Venom Eagle's daggers are coated in extremely strong poison that can instantly destroy one's nerves... even if it was me, if I was even nicked by those daggers, my whole body would be paralysed... how can he be completely fine?!” Murong Xiong Tian yelled as he looked in shock. He had clearly seen those three daggers stab into Ling Chen's body, but Venom Eagle had died, whereas Ling Chen didn't seem poisoned at all.

In fact, even if the poison was ten times as potent, Ling Chen still wouldn't have been affected. How could the godly body that the Mad Scientist created be taken down by poisons made by humans?

“Evidently, using the Dark Eagle Corps was not a sound idea,” Xuanyuan Dao said, “His body is too strong, and the Dark Eagles are far below him in terms of skills. Defeating these assassins was incredibly easy for him!”

The Dark Eagle Corps that the Long family had invested astronomical amounts of time, capital and money on were wiped out by Ling Chen in a short period of time. No matter if it was Long Zheng Yang or Murong Xiong Tian, their hearts bled in pain. Xuanyuan Sheng was unable to remain calm, and once again

insisted, “Leader, let me go and take care of him.”

“No need!!” Murong Xiong Tian furiously yelled, “Our seven main forces are more than enough! The Dark Eagles failed... but the Steel Dragons, Blood Wolves and Long Yu are all there now. He’s definitely dead!!”

Xuanyuan Sheng looked at him, and did not say anything. Ling Chen had singlehandedly wiped out 200 Dark Eagles with ease, and even their leader, Venom Eagle, had died for nothing. This was a massive blow to Murong Xiong Tian, who was in charge of the seven main forces, and aroused his fury. He definitely wouldn’t allow the Xuanyuan family to upstage him!

“Steel Dragon Corps, Blood Wolves Corps, eliminate him at all costs!!”

The equipment of the Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves were relatively heavier and more complex, which was why they arrived later than the Dark Eagles. Seeing the ground littered with the corpses of the Dark Eagles, as well as the figure covered in blood and emanating bloodlust, they all breathed in a breath of cold air. Upon receiving their orders, their fighting spirit were ignited.

One hundred Steel Dragon Corps soldiers and one hundred Blood Wolves Corps soldiers blocked Ling Chen’s way. Upon seeing them, Ling Chen’s rage and bloodlust spread even more... it was because of the Steel Dragon Corps that his home had been destroyed, and Shui Ruo had... “Arghhhhhhh!!!!!!”

The despairing demon within him was once again awakened, and Ling Chen unleashed an ear-shattering howl. He threw away Venom Eagle's daggers, and charged towards the Steel Dragon Corps. The Steel Dragon Corps also roared, charging towards Ling Chen with their heavy armour.

Bang!!!!

Ling Chen's fist ferociously punched through the chest of the Steel Dragon soldier at the front. The fragments of the metal armour buried themselves deep into the soldier's heart, causing him to instantly die. In the blink of an eye, Ling Chen had been surrounded by the Steel Dragon Corps. He did not use his speed to escape from the encirclement, but rather used his brute strength to tear apart their armour and destroy their bodies. The Steel Dragon soldiers' armour could withstand normal bullets easily, but were unable to stop even one of Ling Chen's attacks. Whether it was Ling Chen's fists, feet or elbows, their armour would be pierced like tofu, causing the soldiers to scream out in pain.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The explosions, which sounded like missiles exploding, rang loudly in every person's ears and heart. The Steel Dragon soldiers' armour were not only unable to protect them from Ling Chen's attacks, but slowed them down. The Steel Dragon soldiers were sent flying one by one, and their armour was just as badly mangled as their bodies. They either instantly died or lay on the ground, howling in pain. They couldn't believe that a human could be so powerful. Being hit by Ling Chen was like being hit by a thousand-kilogram-heavy hammer.

Chapter 327 - Bloodbath (7)

The Steel Dragon soldiers' heavy armour didn't delay their deaths by a single bit, but were able to slow down Ling Chen's advancement. Of course, the price that they paid were their lives. By the time Ling Chen had massacred 50 of the Steel Dragon Corps, the Blood Wolves finally appeared.

If the Steel Dragons were humanoid tanks, the Blood Wolves were killing machines. They didn't have the defence that the Steel Dragon soldiers' armour provided, instead wearing light armour, but each person held swords that were one foot long. Their eyes radiated bestial madness... when facing off against enemies, they didn't care about their own lives. The only thing that mattered to them was the death of their enemies.

“Arghhhhhhhh!!”

The appearance of the Blood Wolves caused the entire Long family's residence to be enveloped in bloodlust. The Blood Wolves roared and ran through the ranks of the Steel Dragons, charging towards Ling Chen. Their incredibly sharp swords swung towards Ling Chen's chest and throat... Ling Chen's heavy attacks could annihilate even the heavy-armoured Steel Dragons, let alone these Blood Wolves. The Blood Wolves bloodlust also spurred on Ling Chen's berserk state, as he also swept towards them.

Facing Ling Chen, three of the Blood Wolves showed no fear at all as they ran into Ling Chen's attacks, their swords piercing towards Ling Chen's vitals... they simply didn't care about their own lives.

Bang bang bang!

The three Blood Wolves were rendered into six halves by Ling Chen's kicks, but all three of them drove their swords towards Ling Chen's chest, and deeply pierced into it... three swords also whistled from behind him, as they slashed against Ling Chen's back... in attacking the Steel Dragon Corps, every attack had consumed quite a lot of strength, and his reactions and agility had greatly suffered. However, the three swords could only leave cuts on his back, and were unable to cut into him. The pain caused Ling Chen to become even more berserk as he pulled out the three swords out of his chest, and flung them behind him. The swords spun as they chopped the three Blood Wolves behind him in half, and Ling Chen continued to charge at the Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves as he howled.

The entrance of the suicidal Blood Wolves caused the smell of blood to become even stronger. There was nothing within Ling Chen's heart and mind but endless killing. He swung two swords that he had taken from the Blood Wolves, slicing all who approached him. The Blood Wolves fell one by one, but before dying, they would always use their opportunity to cut or pierce him.

Within the Long family's hall, everyone silently watched the screen. The Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves had come quite quickly, and were also dying incredibly quickly. All the Steel Dragons could do was buy a bit of time, and waste a bit of Ling Chen's stamina, whereas the Blood Wolves sacrificed their lives to injure him again and again. They weren't normal soldiers, but the Long family's seven main forces!

Those who had not been present six years ago finally understood how a single person had thrown the entire Long family into chaos.

The Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves were rapidly dying, but Ling Chen's body was also covered in countless cuts and stab wounds. Gradually, his movements began to slow down. Murong Xiong Tian's heart bled as he watched this, and his fists were tightly clenched into fists. Finally, he gave an order in a low voice, "He can't last for much longer! Long Yu One, attack!!"

Bang! Bang! Bang!!

If the Blood Wolves were a group of bloodthirsty wolves, Ling Chen was a demon god.

Whenever Ling Chen attacked with his sword, the Blood Wolves soldiers would be chopped in half. Whenever Ling Chen attacked with his body, they would explode into pieces. Anyone who didn't personally witness this scene wouldn't be able to believe that such an ordinary-looking body could release so much power. Ling Chen sustained more and more injuries, but he simply didn't care. In fact, he didn't even try to protect himself. He would allow the Blood Wolves to cut him, but would use his sword or body to destroy them one by one.

At the back, a skinny man stood there, watching. He watched as the Blood Wolves died one by one, and his gaze became colder and colder. The murderous intent that his body was releasing also grew and grew.

Crack!

The sword in Ling Chen's hands finally broke as he sliced at a Steel Dragon soldier's armour. The sound finally spurred the skinny man into action. Like a ravenous wolf, he charged past all of his subordinates, and stabbed towards Ling Chen's throat with his claw-like hands.

Shockingly, Ling Chen sensed the threat of death from this attack, and he met it with a punch.

Bang!!!!

A punch that would've been able to destroy both the armour and body of a Steel Dragon soldier had not been able to blast the skinny man away. Instead, the skinny man's fingers in his right hand all broke, and his entire arm became numb. At the same time, five 'claws' also stabbed into Ling Chen's fist, creating five bloody holes that pierced to his bones. The skinny man didn't even frown as his fingers were broken, and his other hand immediately snaked towards Ling Chen's throat.

Ling Chen instantly twisted his body, and the skinny man's claws passed his throat, but sank into his shoulder. All five claws were deeply embedded, causing blood to quickly flow out. The pain from his left hand and shoulder caused Ling Chen to roar in fury as he heavily smashed his right fist into the man's chest... Bang!!!

A spurt of blood rushed out from the skinny man's mouth, landing on Ling Chen. His eyes started to dim, but still held a

berserk look within them. He used his remaining strength to leap forwards and tightly grab onto Ling Chen, as he howled and a light shone from his back. All of the onlookers' faces changed when they saw this.

“Leader!!!!”

“Get down!!!”

BOOM!!!!!!

The light and shockwave from the explosion blinded and deafened everyone nearby. The entire Long family's residence shook, and countless screams filled the air as the Blood Wolves and Steel Dragons who were nearby were blasted into the air. The Blood Wolves were all in pieces, whereas only half of the Steel Dragons had survived. Those who had survived were unable to move at all.

“Leader!!!!!!”

Seeing the devastating explosion, the remaining Blood Wolves cried out in grief. In order to take down this intruder, their leader had used the incredibly destructive bomb that he always had on his back. This explosion had caused all of the Blood Wolves and Steel Dragons nearby to be instantly killed or severely injured. They were all sure that Ling Chen was dead beyond a doubt.

All of the Blood Wolves knelt down as they howled in grief. This

was the only choice they had left-although they had sacrificed many lives, the enemy was simply too powerful. However, the price was the Blood Wolves' leader's life.

After the light and shockwave had passed, everyone could clearly see a crater that was 30 metres wide and 10 metres deep. Within the crater and around it was filled with blood and severed limbs.

In the central hall, looking at the gigantic crater, Long Zheng Yang breathed out a sigh of relief, "It's finally over..."

That explosion was definitely enough to annihilate anyone within its blast radius. Although he was sure that the intruder was dead, he simply couldn't feel at ease. After all, the price they had paid was the lives of countless Long family soldiers, Dark Eagles, Blood Wolves and Steel Dragons... moreover, even the leaders of the Dark Eagles and Blood Wolves had died. To the Long family, this had been a pyrrhic victory.

This was a catastrophe on the level of the one six years ago. What's more, these two catastrophes had actually happened because of a single person.

"Who would have thought that Owl Wolf would have been forced to use such drastic measures. Ai, he probably knew that he was definitely going to die, and although the explosion would kill many of his subordinates, it would be better than them all dying under that demon's hands. No less than expected from the Wolf King. Wolves like him are incredibly rare-who knows when another like him will appear. Ai, if I had known that this would happen, I would have gone to take him down myself." Murong Xiong Tian

said in grief.

The back entrance of the Long family's residence was opened, and people wearing different clothes poured in. It was the Long Yu espers. The scene that greeted them left them completely dumbfounded.

There were less than 50 surviving Blood Wolves and Steel Dragons combined. Half of them could not even fight anymore, while the other half had injuries ranging from light to severe. The Long family's members were still in shock from what had just happened. Even after hearing that the intruder had been blown up, no one dared to venture outside. Just the sheer amount of blood was able to cause most of them to faint. The Steel Dragon and Blood Wolves soldiers began to be sent to the hospital, while Long Yu stayed back to clean up.

Chapter 328 - I Won't Fall (1)

Everything was finally over, but the price they had paid caused Long Zheng Yang's heart to become incredibly heavy. Over 300 elite soldiers from the seven main forces had died under Ling Chen's hands, including the leaders of the Dark Eagles and Blood Wolves. It was a gigantic blow to the Long family. This horrific battle had also caused a great amount of damage to the Long family's residence, and mental effects experienced by every person present, for a long time.

The Long Yu espers finally arrived, and started to clean up the corpses. Long Zheng Yang sighed and said, "Let's also go out and have a look."

As he turned to leave, he glanced at the screen. However, as soon as he saw it, his body froze, as his eyes remained glued to the screen. At this moment, a cry of pain sounded out.

The cry of pain was especially loud, and came from a Long Yu esper who had wandered to the edge of the crater. The esper had suddenly disappeared, and a bloodied hand slowly emerged from the edge of the crater. The owner of the hand pulled himself out of the crater...

All of his clothes had been destroyed, and his body was completely covered with blood. The congealing blood stuck to the scraps of his clothes, hair and skin together. He moved slowly, but was still able to climb out of the crater. The moment he walked out, he swayed, and fell to the ground on one knee. However, he stood up while trembling, and stared murderously at the people in

front of him. Although he looked incredibly weak, the bloodlust he was emitting was incredible... he seemed like a Blood God who had just returned from hell.

“All of you... must... die!!”

His voice was incredibly weak, but it somehow filled the entire residence, causing everyone to tremble with fear.

“T-This is impossible! That explosion... how can he still be alive?!” Long Tian Yun yelled as he stared wide-eyed. Owl Wolf had been clutching on to him during the explosion. Even steel would have been blasted to shreds if it had been so close to the bomb.

“This is... incredibly difficult to accept. It’s simply impossible.” Xuanyuan Sheng also said in shock.

“Is he... a monster?” Flame Shadow said, his voice trembling.

An icy feeling came over Long Zheng Yang. Not even the incredibly tough Murong Xiong Tian would have been able to survive an explosion at such a distance, and not be missing any limbs. This individual couldn’t be described as a human anymore—he was simply a monster!! He just couldn’t understand how the Long family had offended such a ‘monster’, and neither could he comprehend how such a ‘monster’ could possibly exist.

Xuanyuan Dao’s face was also filled with shock. He slowly said,

“This is indeed hard to believe... however, although he’s not dead, he’s been gravely injured, and can’t even stand properly anymore. He can’t fight anymore, so Long Yu should be able to take care of him.”

“Don’t kill him yet,” Long Zheng Yang calmly said, “He’s still alive, but he’s not a threat anymore. Tell the Mental espers to destroy his mind, and ask him why he hates our Long family so much. They can get rid of him afterwards.”

The rest of them all nodded. This person had launched two terrifying attacks on the Long family, but they still didn’t know the reason.

Murong Xiong Tian immediately gave the order, “Xi Feng, go and control his mind, and ask him what he has against the Long family, or who’s giving him orders.”

Ling Chen’s appearance caused all of the Long Yu soldiers to feel incredibly shocked. The Dark Eagles, Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves had all been ripped apart by him, and although he was incredibly weak, they still felt pressured. As they received the order from Murong Xiong Tian, a person wearing a whole body of green clothes slowly walked out, and stood 20 metres away from Ling Chen. He looked up, and a mysterious light shone from his eyes into Ling Chen’s eyes.

All Long Yu espers were either born with their powers or later developed them. They didn’t have a uniform, and all specialised in different things. The most terrifying of them all were the Mental espers. A Mental esper could, without any warning, control

another person or destroy their mind from quite a distance away. However, these sorts of espers were rare. Within Long Yu, there were only eight of them. Six of them were present at the scene.

The person in green clothes was called Xi Feng, and was an incredibly strong Mental esper. As he looked into Ling Chen's eyes, his mental energy swept out and collided into Ling Chen's mental energy.

The familiar feeling of his mental energy being attacked, which he had hated, came into his head... within 'Heaven', he had endured this sort of training almost constantly. Because of this mental energy stimulation, his mental energy had come close to collapsing on numerous occasions, causing it to break through new levels again and again. Apart from Eve and himself, no one would be able to imagine just how torturous the training was, and they weren't even able to use words to express what it was like.

When the esper's attack reached Ling Chen's mind, his mental energy defenses were instantly awakened, completely blocking the attack. It then immediately counterattacked, like a vicious viper.

One second... within one second of the esper, Xi Feng, attacking Ling Chen's mind, his entire body stiffened as his eyes widened. His eyes remained wide open while he fell to the ground, never to breathe again.

All of Long Yu looked on with shock.

“W-What's going on?”

“Could it be that... he’s a Mental esper who’s even stronger than Xi Feng?” Murong Xiong Tian said as he raised his eyebrows. He quickly picked up his communication device and yelled, “Demon Eyes, Soul Chaser, Qian Luo, Crimson Eyes, Azure Snake, go and attack together, and control his mind! He seems to also be a Mental esper, so don’t let down your guards-you must work together! If you can’t control his mind, then destroy it!”

The remaining five Mental espers walked out together, and stood in formation. Their breathing became synchronized, and they released the mental energy towards Ling Chen together. Xi Feng’s failure showed that Ling Chen had incredibly strong mental energy-not only had Xi Feng failed, but the counterattack had even killed him. The effects of counterattacks were becoming unconscious if it was light, or complete destruction of the mind if it was severe. Xi Feng was not the strongest Mental esper in Long Yu, but his instant death raised alarm bells for the others. The five of them worked together, using their full strength... even if the enemy had incredibly strong mental energy, the five of them would definitely be able to overcome him.

Five powerful streams of mental energy intertwined, creating a powerful mental energy beast that rushed towards Ling Chen’s mind.

However, even if the five of their mental energies combined, how would it amount to even 1% of Ling Chen’s mental energy? To Ling Chen, their mental energy beast was like a tiny bug... however, it was still much more powerful than Xi Feng’s attack, and while it did not hurt Ling Chen, it awakened his anger. His bloodshot eyes opened, as he roared.

“Arghhhhhh!!!!”

One second... again, after only one second had passed, the five Mental espers' bodies froze, their eyes widened and lost their colour. Subsequently, just like Xi Feng, they all fell to the ground, unmoving. As he roared, Ling Chen, who couldn't even stand properly, suddenly burst with energy again as he charged at the Long Yu espers, filled with bloodlust.

“This... this is impossible!! Absolutely impossible!!” Seeing the five espers all fall down, Murong Xiong Tian simply couldn't believe his eyes. He believed that Xi Feng had failed because he had underestimated Ling Chen, and did not expect that Ling Chen was also a Mental esper. However, five Mental espers that were working together... had been instantly defeated! Moreover, they weren't just defeated-they had been killed by their opponent's mental energy!

What was going on? Could it be that he was not only a Mental esper, but an incredibly powerful one as well?

A terrifying body, terrifying strength, terrifying speed... and terrifying mental energy as well!

The information clearly stated that he was only 22 years old...

The sinking feeling in Long Zheng Yang, Xuanyuan Dao and Murong Xiong Tian's hearts became worse and worse.

Cries of pain began to sound out, and on the screen, the weakened monster once again sprang into action. His speed had not reduced by a single bit, and he had reached the espers before they could even realise what was happening. Except for the Strength-based espers, none of them could compare to even a normal soldier in terms of their bodies or speed. Even the Steel Dragon soldiers couldn't withstand a single hit from Ling Chen—this was even more so for the Long Yu espers. As soon as Ling Chen got close, all that was waiting for them was death. Ling Chen punched out twice, easily punching through two espers like they were made of tofu. Seeing what was happening, the espers all hurriedly started to use their powers to attack...

This was the first time Long Zheng Yang had felt such fear, and the one who had caused this fear was only 22 years old. If he was allowed to leave here alive, Long Zheng Yang would have to live the rest of his days in worry and fear. He slowly said in a low voice, “He’s nearly finished. This rampage is surely the last of his strength. Xiong Tian, go and immediately kill him!”

“Roger!” Murong Xiong Tian nodded.

Chapter 329 - I Won't Fall (2)

Having survived in 'Hell' for so many years, Ling Chen had killed countless espers. To those who had grown up in 'Hell', espers were actually the easiest type of experts to kill. After all, although these people had special abilities that they were born with or awakened, they often relied on these abilities, and neglected other areas. As a result, their bodies and speed were often quite unimpressive. Their sense of danger was also usually quite weak, and they simply couldn't compare to those who had gone through rigorous training and countless life-and-death battles. Assassins could hide in the darkness or easily overwhelm them with their speed before the espers even had time to use their abilities.

As such, against Ling Chen, who had far superior speed and battle sense, using the Dark Eagles or Long Yu were terrible decisions. The Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves were much more effective.

Just as Long Zheng Yang had said, Ling Chen was almost out of energy. He had been expending huge amounts of strength, and much blood had leaked out from the countless wounds all over his body. However, his incredibly strong mental energy, despair from Shui Ruo dying and his bloodlust gave him the power not to fall. His consciousness was becoming hazy, but he squeezed energy from every cell in his body to defeat the enemies around him.

The espers' abilities all required time to use, just like spells in games that required casting times. With Ling Chen's terrifying speed and power, most espers were unable to even launch attacks in time, and none of them were able to lock on to him or withstand even a single blow from him.

The espers fell one by one, and very soon, Ling Chen had annihilated the majority of them. They were dying far faster than the Steel Dragons and Blood Wolves. Long Yu were one of the seven main forces of the Long family, and possessed abilities that the other six forces could never have. However, against Ling Chen, they had no advantage at all, and were even less effective than the Dark Eagles. The Long Yu espers fell like flies, causing onlookers to tremble with fear... these superhuman existences were like sheep waiting to be slaughtered by Ling Chen.

The door of the central hall was explosively pushed open, then heavily closed. Murong Xiong Tian marched out, and seeing the ground littered with the corpses of Long Yu espers, his face twisted as he yelled, “Get out of the way!!”

“Chief Murong!!”

“Chief... It’s Chief Murong! He’s come to save us! Thank god!”

Murong Xiong Tian was incredibly powerful, and his pride was proportional to his strength. When he faced off against enemies, he wouldn’t let anyone else help him. The Long Yu espers were already completely terrified by Ling Chen, and so they all breathed a sigh of relief and quickly left when they saw Murong Xiong Tian.

Bang!!

After suddenly losing his targets, Ling Chen’s rage quickly disappeared and a wave of pain passed through his head. He

collapsed onto one knee and raggedly breathed as he coughed out pools of blood. He had countless wounds on his body: cuts, stab wounds, claw marks, burns and frozen areas from esper attacks... it was impossible to know just how many wounds there were, but he knew that he definitely had more wounds than when he had fought Instructor Hell all those years ago.

Seeing Ling Chen on one knee, completely unable to get up, Murong Xiong Tian's emotions were quite complex. He hated Ling Chen, as he had caused severe casualties to four of his seven forces, and had caused him to lose much face in front of Long Zheng Yang. However, deep down within his heart, Murong Xiong Tian secretly respected and admired him... Murong Xiong Tian was sure that when he was at the same age, he wouldn't even be worthy to put on Ling Chen's shoes for him. If he was given the opportunity to grow, then his future would be limitless.

“Young man, you're called Ling Chen, right?” Murong Xiong Tian slowly asked. Although Long Zheng Yang didn't want him to waste any words, he simply couldn't stop himself. Indeed, after he killed this young man, he might never meet another like him again. He continued, “Although I don't know what you have against the Long family, but it shouldn't be some kind of irreconcilable hatred. Seeing you like this, it doesn't seem like you planned to go back alive. I'll be honest and say that in my life, you're the first young person to make me feel afraid. Just this alone makes you quite outstanding. In your current state, it's not quite fair to go up against me, but it's not that shameful to die by my hands.”

Ling Chen stopped raggedly breathing, and suddenly raised his head. The killing intent that shot out from his eyes caused Murong

Xiong Tian to freeze, and a cold and hoarse voice that sounded like that of a demon's travelled into his ears, "The person who will die... is you!!"

Ling Chen, who clearly looked completely exhausted, suddenly charged towards Murong Xiong Tian like a ferocious leopard. His right fist, which was covered with wounds and blood, streaked towards Murong Xiong Tian's heart. Murong Xiong Tian could only watch in shock... where did this energy come from? With so many wounds and after using up so much strength and losing so much blood... he was still able to unleash such a blow.

Bang!!!!

Ling Chen's fist savagely struck Murong Xiong Tian's chest, and the sound of bones being dislocated sounded out clearly. Ling Chen flew backwards, and crashed into the ground. His entire right fist was mangled, and the massive pain that erupted from it caused him to almost lose control of it. Murong Xiong Tian's upper body slightly leaned backwards, and there was a large hole in his clothes where Ling Chen had struck him. Bronze coloured skin could be seen within the hole, as well as a bright red fist print. The burning pain that the punch gave him caused Muong Xiong Tian to frown. Ling Chen was able to unleash such a powerful attack in such a weak condition-he was definitely qualified to be called a monster!

Ling Chen slowly stood up, with his left hand covering his right hand. He suddenly wrenched his right hand, and the bones in his right hand were forced back together with a "crack". He roared, then charged towards Murong Xiong Tian, using his right hand to once again punch towards his heart. This time, Murong Xiong Tian

did not stand still. He gave a low yell as he punched out to meet Ling Chen's fist.

Bang!!!!

“Arghh!”

Murong Xiong Tian's body swayed, whereas Ling Chen's body was once again blasted away like a sandbag. He flipped over twice in the air before hitting the ground, and his entire body was in massive pain. His entire right arm hung limp, but he gritted his teeth and used his left arm to stand up again. Just as he stood up, blood spurted out from his mouth, and he fell down once more.

“Hmph, he wanted to compete with Uncle Murong in strength? How audacious.” Long Tian Yun said as he coldly laughed. Although the Long family had suffered great losses, but Ling Chen was evidently almost spent. Now that Ling Chen was so powerless, Long Tian Yun could finally relax again, and without Ling Chen, the greatest thorn in his side would be gone.

“If he was in his best condition... he might not lose.” Xuanyuan Dao calmly said.

Everyone fell silent.

Ling Chen once again stood up, and his aura was so weak that Murong Xiong Tian almost couldn't feel it anymore. With another “crack”, Ling Chen's dislocated right arm was pushed back into

place by his left hand. From beginning to end, he had not let out a single cry of pain. Murong Xiong Tian frowned as he said, “Ling Chen, you should know that in your current condition, all of your struggling is useless. This will just prolong your suffering.”

“The one who will die... is you!!” Ling Chen rasped as he glared at him.

Murong Xiong Tian’s eyes narrowed, and he lifted up both hands, “Forget it, I’ll send you on your way now.”

“Arghhhhh!!”

Ling Chen stood up straight, and howled as he charged at Murong Xiong Tian and swung at him in the exact same way as the previous two times.

“Hmph.” Murong Xiong Tian coldly harrumphed as he gathered his strength into his right fist. He completely ignored Ling Chen’s attack, as he swung towards Ling Chen’s head... if this punch hit him, Ling Chen’s head would definitely be blown to pieces.

However, just as their bodies were about to clash, the figure in front of Murong Xiong Tian suddenly blurred, then disappeared. Murong Xiong Tian’s full-strength punch only hit an afterimage, causing him to fall forwards. From his side, an incredibly sharp knife came whistling at him... Ling Chen’s fist had opened into a knifehand strike, and stabbed towards his head... Murong Xiong Tian could only watch as it stabbed into his temple.

Bang!!!

Being hit by Ling Chen's knifehand strike made it feel like millions of wasps had suddenly flown into his head, causing Murong Xiong Tian's world to blur. Despite the fact that he was a metal esper, the attack left him shaken. His consciousness was scattered, and his body lost its balance. Murong Xiong Tian fell forwards, smashing his head onto the ground.

“Wuaaaaah!!!”

Ling Chen hoarsely roared, and his blood-stained body leapt high into the air. He gripped both his hands into fists and used all the strength in his body to smash them downwards... BOOM!!!!

Stones and sand filled the air as the devastating strike shook the ground. Murong Xiong Tian's entire head had been buried into the ground, and blood leaked from all seven of his orifices [TLN: eyes, nose, ears, mouth], dyeing the ground red.

After delivering that strike, Ling Chen weakly sat on the ground. Murong Xiong Tian's body was twisted, and did not move at all. Even if he had a body that was as solid as metal, it was impossible to withstand two strong, direct hits to the head.

“Chief!!”

“Chief Murong!!”

All of the Long Yu espers stared in shock and fear. All of the people in the hall also gaped at the scene. Long Zheng Yang immediately turned and yelled, “Xuanyuan! Hurry and go!!”

“Roger!!” Xuanyuan Sheng did not hesitate at all as he yelled, “Move out!” He opened the door and quickly left with the eight people he had brought with him as he pulled out the Azure Edge Sword... that sword could cut through metal like butter. Six years ago, it was this sword that had injured Ling Chen countless times, causing him to flee, and almost die.

Chapter 330 - I Won't Fall (3)

Although it was near midnight, the number of players online in Mystic Moon wasn't any less than during the daytime. In a dangerous area where the monsters' levels were much higher than the average player level, Xiao Qiu Feng was training by himself. He was swinging a black longsword with two hands as he whirled around in a mob of terrifying-looking monsters, causing wind to swirl around him. Suddenly, his communication device rang. Xiao Qiu Feng frowned, and quickly retreated to a safe region where he answered the call.

A low voice spoke out, and after listening to three sentences, Xiao Qiu Feng deeply frowned as he yelled, "What did you say? Ling Tian?"

He ended the call very quickly as his face darkened. He thought for a while before contacting Yun Feng and got straight to the point, "Something big happened."

"What?" Yun Feng still wasn't aware about what had happened. From the silence in the background, it was evident that Yun Feng was also training alone. Those who were truly strong sought to gain power by themselves through their own efforts.

"Ling Tian's real life identity was found out, and he was attacked by the Long family... it is extremely likely that it was Long Tian Yun who issued the order." Xiao Qiu Feng said darkly.

"W-What...?" Yun Feng was extremely shocked, "This... This is

impossible. With Ling Tian's abilities, how could he be found so easily? And even if he was found, he should have known... could it be that they found the wrong people?"

Tian Yuan District, Number 12 House. His real name is... Ling Chen." Xiao Qiu Feng slowly said. His Battle Alliance was the largest underworld faction in China, and had quite an impressive information network. He already knew what had happened.

"!!!!" Yun Feng immediately burst into cold sweat, "This... how..." He suddenly thought of something and asked, "And then? Was Ling Tian able to escape? And what about his little sister, Shui Ruo? Was anyone hurt?"

Xiao Qiu Feng slowly breathed out and replied, "Long Tian Yun completely and utterly hates Ling Tian, and in order to destroy him, he decided to deploy a whole 75 Steel Dragon Corps soldiers... however, the result was completely unexpected-the 75 Steel Dragon Corps were all annihilated. However... the Steel Dragon Corps actually used their heavy weaponry, completely destroying Ling Tian's home. It's likely that someone he cared about was killed, causing him to go berserk. His screams and roars were heard by almost every single family in the Tian Yuan District..."

"Someone he cared about... who was it?" Yun Feng's voice started to tremble. A terrifying possibility emerged in his mind, but he desperately hoped it wasn't true. To cause Ling Chen to go berserk... could it be that...

"According to the information, after the explosion, no traces of Ling Tian's little sister could be found, and the little girl was

crying for her big sister. It's possible that..."

Clack... Xiao Qiu Feng heard something falling to the ground on the other end of the line.

Yun Feng would never forget that the first time he had met Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, Shui Ruo had been sitting on a wheelchair, with Ling Chen slowly pushing it. He was extremely tender and affectionate towards her, and his eyes were filled with love and adoration. It was clear that he viewed her as more important than himself. Moreover, Yun Feng could still remember the exhilarated reaction that Ling Chen had displayed upon obtaining the 13223 drug, as well as the dedication he had shown to Shui Ruo when she had the Isrock Disease...

From the very beginning, Yun Feng knew just how important Shui Ruo was to Ling Chen, as well as what would happen if she left him...

And that was absolute, catastrophic despair and grief.

"Then... Then... Ling Tian, he..." Yun Feng's voice was shaking by now. He felt like he had been struck by lightning upon hearing this news.

"He attacked the Long family, alone, and killed many of their people. He's inside their residence now, and is exacting his revenge... as well as trying to die."

Click!

Just as Xiao Qiu Feng finished talking, Yun Feng immediately hung up. Xiao Qiu Feng thought for a while before once again lifting up his communication device...

“Qi Qi, are you still awake? There’s something I need to tell you, but you need to stay calm...”

Murong Xiong Tian’s condition caused all of the Long Yu espers to become frenzied, and they madly rushed towards Ling Chen, wanting to save Murong Xiong Tian. At this moment, a man shouted from behind them as they saw a cold flash of light burst forth.

Woosh!

The icy cold light from the sword cut through the darkness of the night, shining into all the onlookers’ eyes. This sword light came from the Xuanyuan family’s strongest sword, the Azure Edge Sword. The light caused all of the Long Yu espers to stop in their tracks as they all revealed expressions of joy. The leader of the Xuanyuan family was here to save them!

The deadly light pushed Ling Chen’s body to lean backwards. However, he put his strength into his legs and managed to stay upright, although he was pushed back more than 10 metres by the light. The sword light could not fatally wound him, but there was

now a long cut on his forehead, and a lock of his hair also flew into the air.

The Long Yu espers immediately ran over and hurriedly pulled Murong Xiong Tian out. Murong Xiong Tian was bleeding profusely from his mouth, nose, eyes and ears, and was completely unconscious. However, seeing that he was still breathing regularly, they all breathed out in relief. They quickly moved him to a car and sent him to the hospital... the mighty Chief of Long Yu, the strongest esper in China, a god to all soldiers, had been injured by the exhausted Ling Chen to such an extent... just what was this Ling Tian?!

Ling Chen's body shook as he touched the cut on his forehead, causing the fresh blood to flow over his hand. He was now surrounded by eight men who were all around 20 years old, all of whom were pointing their long and thin swords towards him. He looked up towards the serious-looking man in his fifties, who was carrying an azure-coloured longsword. Ling Chen coldly spat out two words, "It's... you!!"

Xuanyuan Sheng's eyes narrowed as he calmly stared back at Ling Chen, "Huh, I never thought that you would remember me. You were able to escape six years ago, but in the end, you're still going to be slain by my Azure Edge Sword. After killing so many people and even severely injuring Murong Xiong Tian, it's about time... for you to die!"

How could Ling Chen not remember this person. When he was young, he was always looked at with cold and condescending gazes by many people. When he was together with Dia Wu, this man

would often be there, telling Dia Wu to stay away from him and not to interact with him. Six years ago, it was also this man who had left him with six injuries, three of which were almost fatal... of course, that was because he had been completely exhausted and covered in injuries after fighting so many people from the Long family. Otherwise, how could he lose to a mere Xuanyuan Sheng!

Xuanyuan Sheng had trained for decades, and was indeed incredibly powerful. However, the training that Ling Chen had undergone in 'Heaven' and 'Hell' was something that normal people could never imagine. His body, strength, mental energy and speed were all far above those of normal humans'. How could he be afraid of a human wielding a cold weapon!

Since he was young, he had always hated Xuanyuan Sheng-in fact, he hated everyone in the Xuanyuan family except Dia Wu. He also deeply remembered the injuries Xuanyuan Sheng had given him six years ago, which fuelled the humiliation and hatred within him. Now, seeing this man in front of him, the feelings of hatred and humiliation once again bubbled up to the surface... Ling Chen's body was incredibly weak and tired. He didn't mind dying, but he definitely wouldn't allow this man to kill him.

Ling Chen gripped his incredibly sore and numb hands into fists, as blood dripped from his body onto the ground. He slowly spoke, "Try and kill me... in your next life... The only person who will die today... is... you!!!"

Xuanyuan Sheng coldly laughed, "Very impressive. Your strength and speed are indeed quite terrifying, and you were able to even seriously wound Murong Xiong Tian in that condition.

However, what you just did cannot happen again.”

“Don’t waste time; hurry up and get rid of him.” Long Zheng Yang’s instructions rang out in Xuanyuan Sheng’s ear. This person was simply too monstrous-every second that he was alive was a nightmare to the Long family. Xuanyuan Sheng straightened up and pointed his sword towards Ling Chen, “Stop struggling... I’ll give you an easy death.”

“All of you get back!”

The eight men surrounding Ling Chen dispersed and retreated. Xuanyuan Sheng did not wait anymore as he sped towards Ling Chen. He wanted to kill Ling Chen in a single strike, and so he put all of his strength into this very first attack. He reached Ling Chen in an instant, and the Azure Edge Sword in his hand disappeared, turning into countless images of swords which all shot towards Ling Chen.

The feeling of death rushed towards Ling Chen, which felt like countless needles stabbing into his consciousness. Ling Chen’s eyes widened as his body twisted and sprang backwards... however, in his semi-conscious state, he barely had any control over his body, and he was still hit by many of the swords.

Chi~~~

Thirteen sounds of cutting and shredding merged together, creating a piercing ripping sound. Ling Chen’s body flew far away, and a mist of blood suddenly appeared in the air. When Ling Chen

landed on the ground, thirteen long and deep cuts could be seen on his chest, arms and legs.

Thirteen strikes in an instant-this was the power of the man second only to the Sword God, Xuanyuan Dao.

“So we finally get to see Uncle Xuanyuan in action again. His skills are just as incredible as ever.” Long Tian Yun said in admiration. He looked at Ling Chen on the ground, lying in a pool of his own blood as he coldly laughed, “He should be dead by now. If he isn’t dead, then he’ll be a real monster.”

“Indeed, he still isn’t dead.” Xuanyuan Dao said as he coldly looked at the screen.

On the screen, Ling Chen slowly stood up... the thirteen incredibly long and deep cuts looked extremely terrifying. The wounds he had already received were enough to kill a person countless times, and now he was also hit by the Azure Edge Sword thirteen times... and yet, he was still able to stand back up.

Xuanyuan Sheng had wanted to cut Ling Chen’s body into ten or so pieces. However, just as the Azure Edge Sword was about to hit him, Ling Chen suddenly moved backwards. Thus, Xuanyuan Sheng was only able to cut through his skin and some muscles, rather than his organs.

Seeing that such a weak and exhausted person had survived his fatal blow, Xuanyuan Sheng was incredibly shocked, and secretly furious. Seeing Ling Chen getting up, he deeply frowned, and once

again attacked, not giving Ling Chen any time to recover. He leapt up three metres into the air and gathered his sword intent into his right hand. The Azure Edge Sword burst with light, and swept downwards towards Ling Chen... this time, there was only one sword, but it contained all of his strength and sword intent. Xuanyuan Sheng was determined to split Ling Chen in half.

The monstrous blade descended towards Ling Chen, and before it had even reached him, the pressure from it caused Ling Chen's consciousness great pain. Ling Chen suddenly looked up, and his colourless eyes suddenly let out a red glow...

“The one who will die... is you!!”

Chhhhh!!!

Xuanyuan Sheng's sword heavily cut into Ling Chen's shoulder and continued to sink downwards... The ten-centimetre wide sword cut through half of Ling Chen's shoulder, almost chopping it off...

But it could not cut any further.

The Azure Edge Sword which could easily cut through metal, which was wielded with all of Xuanyuan Sheng's strength and sword intent... could only cut through half of Ling Chen's shoulder. No matter how much he tried, Xuanyuan Sheng simply couldn't cut any deeper.

Xuanyuan Sheng's pupils contracted, and Xuanyuan Dao simply couldn't believe his eyes either. Stopping the Azure Edge Sword with one's body... this was simply impossible!! How could something like this happen?!

“Wuaaaaahhhh!!!”

The sheer shock and incredulity from this caused Xuanyuan Sheng to lose control of his breathing. He heard a roar of pain and despair, and saw a pair of crimson red eyes that should not exist on a human. He felt two icy cold hands grabbing onto his right arm and right shoulder respectively, and a demonic howl filled his ears...

A horrifying ripping sound swept through the air...

“ARGHHHHHH!!!!”

The incredible pain overwhelmed Xuanyuan Sheng's mind, causing him to roar out in pain. He watched as his blood spurted out and his arm was ripped off by Ling Chen...

Chapter 331 - Dia Wu... Dia Wu... (1)

The pain of one's arm being ripped off was simply unexplainable. The mental pain and anguish from seeing one's arm being savagely torn off also greatly added to Xuanyuan Sheng's suffering.

The Long family's father and son watched in shock, and Xuanyuan Dao's entire body stiffened. All of the Long Yu espers, as well as everyone else around instantly went pale, and felt as if their hearts had been stabbed with countless frozen thorns. They were unable to believe what they had just seen. This was the leader of the Xuanyuan family, who had an incredibly high cultivation in the way of the sword and was hailed as a legend. And yet, his entire right arm had been ripped off by Ling Chen who was covered in wounds, and couldn't even stand up properly.

“Sect leader!!”

“Sect leader Xuanyuan!!”

Countless cries of concern filled the entire Long family residence, but the only response was Xuanyuan Sheng's heart-wrenching scream. Ling Chen revelled in this scene through his hazy vision, and his lips curved upwards in glee. He threw Xuanyuan Sheng's severed right arm far away, and the Azure Edge Sword that was in the right hand flew into the air. Ling Chen raised his head and watched as the sword fell, and grabbed it with his hand, then pierced towards Xuanyuan Sheng's throat...

“STOP!!!”

The doors of the central hall were explosively thrown open as Xuanyuan Dao rushed out towards Ling Chen like an enraged lion. His sword flew in front of him as it streaked towards Ling Chen like a meteor. Ling Chen looked through the opened doors, and suddenly saw Long Tian Yun... in that moment, he felt as if he had been struck by lightning. All of the hatred and despair within him madly stirred within him, and his eyes became completely red.

“Arghhhhhhh!!”

This roar was even more monstrous than that of a wild beast's, and Long Tian Yun involuntarily shuddered. He couldn't help but turn around, and his gaze met the crimson red eyes. They were the eyes of a demon, and upon seeing them, his entire body froze and became paralysed. Those eyes seemed to be desperate to devour him and drag him into the abyss of death.

“Die!!”

Xuanyuan Dao's sword flew at an incredible speed, and even caused the dust on the ground to fly into the air. Ling Chen watched as the sword flew closer and closer to him, as well as Xuanyuan Dao that was charging over... all of them blocked his view of Long Tian Yun. In his fury, he glared at Xuanyuan Dao and furiously yelled...

“PISS OFF!!”

Xuanyuan Dao's eyes met Ling Chen's crimson red eyes, and

instantly, he felt as if a thousand-kilogram—heavy hammer had smashed into his head. His head buzzed, and his world became white. He couldn't see anything, nor feel his body anymore...

Swish!!!

The longsword flew past Ling Chen, but the wind that it carried caused Ling Chen to stumble back by three steps. Ling Chen did all he could to stay upright, but he was unable to stab the Azure Edge Sword into Xuanyuan Sheng's neck. Ling Chen immediately reacted, and he swung his arm and sent the Azure Edge Sword flying towards Xuanyuan Sheng.

The Azure Edge Sword whistled through the air and savagely stabbed into Xuanyuan Sheng's body. It pierced into the right side of his chest and stabbed through his back... however, the sword did not stop there. It continued to fly and accurately pierced into Xuanyuan Dao's body. The Azure Edge Sword did not completely pierce through, but rather brought Xuanyuan Dao's body with it as it flew another 20 metres before it finally slammed into a wall, nailing him in place.

This scene caused all of the onlookers' throats to go completely dry, and their hearts almost burst out of their bodies. Although they had personally seen what had just happened, but they simply didn't dare to believe it... most of them began to believe that none of this was real - all of this had to be some sort of illusion or nightmare. How could this sort of thing happen in reality?!

“Arghhhhhh!!”

As everyone watched in horror, Ling Chen did not stop at all. There was no longer anything blocking him, and the boundless hatred ignited the hidden strength within him. He charged towards Long Tian Yun at a terrifying speed. Everyone only saw the blur of a black shadow, and by the time they called out in fear, Ling Chen was only less than ten steps away from the central hall.

“Leader!! Watch out!!”

“Ah!! Leader! Young master!!”

“Danger!!”

However, apart from yell out, they could do nothing at all. Murong Xiong Tian was severely injured, it was unknown whether Xuanyuan Sheng was still alive and Xuanyuan Dao was still nailed to the wall. All of the strongest bodyguards had fallen, and there was practically no one to protect the Long family father and son.

They could only watch as the black shadow charged into the central hall, directly towards the terrified Long Tian Yun.

An overpowering stench of blood filled the hall, and Ling Chen’s murderous aura and killing intent caused the originally hot hall to become incredibly cold. In his horror, Long Tian Yun couldn’t even make a sound anymore. Flame Shadow and Long Zheng Yang seemed to subconsciously stand in front of him, as if to block Ling Chen’s way. However, how could they block this raging demon? Flame Shadow and Long Zheng Yang were blasted away by just

Ling Chen's berserk aura, and they were sent flying into the walls of the hall. Long Zheng Yang coughed up a mouthful of blood, whereas Flame Shadow instantly fainted.

Suddenly, the pair of crimson red eyes were right in front of Long Tian Yun, and a pair of hands that were cold as steel and dyed red with blood grabbed on to his neck... in that moment, Long Tian Yun could clearly sense his impending death.

All of the Long family's members felt like their hearts were about to explode. Long Tian Yun was the sole heir of the Long family. If he died, then the Long family would be unable to continue. All of the people cried out in fear and despair as they madly charged towards Ling Chen. However, Ling Chen was able to defeat Murong Xiong Tian and rip off Xuanyuan Sheng's arm... breaking Long Tian Yun's neck would take an instant.

Long Tian Yun's eyes widened as he struggled to breathe, and his eyes rolled back... one second passed, two seconds passed... apart from being unable to breathe, he didn't feel any great pain, nor did he feel he was getting closer to death. In fact, his vision began to clear, and he could once again see those terrifying eyes. However, those eyes were becoming dimmer and dimmer... the hands on his neck gradually let go, and Long Tian Yun fell heavily onto the ground.

Thump...

With all of his strength sapped, Ling Chen slowly fell to the ground and did not move anymore.

Long Tian Yun scrambled backwards on his hands and knees, his face white as a sheet. He gasped for breath as his entire body trembled, and was unable to even stand up.

That moment would become the most unforgettable shadow and nightmare of his entire life.

“Young master! Young master!!”

“Young master, leader, are you alright?”

The Long family’s people rushed into the hall, and helped Long Tian Yun and Long Zheng Yang up... Ling Chen had fallen, and was completely out of energy. Otherwise, he definitely wouldn’t have left Long Tian Yun alive. However, the terror he had brought tonight caused all of the people to stay far away from him despite the fact that he was powerlessly lying on the ground. Although he was completely still, the terrifying aura that he emanated still chilled those around him to the bone.

Long Zheng Yang gradually recovered from what had just happened. The shock and fright had almost stopped his heart. Seeing Ling Chen lying on the ground with a massive pool of blood around him, he knew that this time, he was down for good. He was either completely out of energy or dead. However, his heart was still beating like crazy, and wouldn’t stop beating like that for a while. Seeing Ling Chen’s body, Long Zheng Yang couldn’t help but shudder.

“What happened... to Xuanyuan?” Seeing Long Tian Yun, whose face was incredibly pale, but looked otherwise unhurt, Long Zheng Yang managed to croak out a question.

“The leader of the Xuanyuan family has been sent to the hospital. He wasn’t hit in the heart, so his wounds shouldn’t be life-threatening. However, sect leader Xuanyuan...”

“I’m... fine...” An extremely weak, but confident voice came from outside. Xuanyuan Dao’s mind had recovered from the blow of Ling Chen’s mental energy, but he was still nailed to the wall. He was simply unable to pull out the Azure Edge Sword by himself. He said in a low voice, “Don’t worry about me... immediately kill him... don’t let him live any longer. This person must... must die!!”

The ground outside was littered with corpses... Long family guards, Dark Eagles, Steel Dragons, Blood Wolves... there were also Murong Xiong Tian, Xuanyuan Sheng and Xuanyuan Dao, who were all seriously injured. Ling Chen had even come extremely close to killing the Long family’s young master...

Even if he was dead, this person would still be able to cause them countless nightmares. How could they possibly allow him to continue to live?!

At this moment, a light breeze passed by outside, and a black shadow soundlessly entered the hall. It walked into the centre of the hall and silently observed everything around it. This person was completely wrapped up in a black cloak, and they were wrapped up so tightly that their eyes and hair couldn’t be seen. The cloak was so large that even the shape of the person’s body

couldn't be clearly seen.

Seeing this person arrive, Xuanyuan Dao weaklessly yelled, "You... You're late... Hurry up at kill that person, he's too dangerous!"

"Xie Yu, finish him off. Everything that happened today was because of him. To force him to this state, my Long family and your Xuanyuan family had to pay a great price. You can be the one to end this nightmare." Long Zheng Yang feebly said.

An expressionless gaze fell onto Ling Chen's body, and a sword appeared in her hand. She slowly walked towards Ling Chen...

Chapter 332 - Dia Wu... Dia Wu... (2)

Just like this... is everything over...

My life is about to end in this way... in the place where I was born...

That's fine, though. The sooner I die, the sooner I can be with Ruo Ruo, so she won't be lonely. Ruo Ruo, wait for me-I'll be there soon. How can I live in a world without you... and how can you be in a world without me... no matter where you go, I'll be there by your side. I'll never, ever leave you...

It's just that I can't accept it... I was so close to getting revenge for you and revenge for myself... so, so close...

But I don't have any strength left at all...

I've lived for 22 years. In these 22 years, I've experienced pain countless times, come close to death countless times, experienced despair countless times, as well as warmth and happiness countless times. No matter how I think about it, 22 years is so short-I didn't get to marry Ruo Ruo or have children with her, or meet Dia Wu again. I wish I could let her know that I was alive all these years...

Dia Wu... Dia Wu... "Big brother Tian Ya, you're a man, so you can't... you can't cry... we all can't cry... nothing's going to happen to you... no matter what happens, I'll stay with you... my everything belongs to my Tian Ya. If big brother Tian Ya really died... I... I will also die... no one will ever

see my eyes again, no one will ever hear my voice...”

.....

“This piece of red string is a symbol that the God of marriage has bound us together. One end is attached to you, and the other end is attached to me. Big brother Tian Ya, do you know what this means? Hehe... it means that from now on, I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, has become big brother Tian Ya’s wife, from now till forever. Big brother Tian Ya is my husband, and we’ll always be together. No matter what happens, we’ll never be separated.”

.....

“I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, am willing to become big brother Tian Ya’s wife. We were born on the same date in the same month and year, and I’m willing to die with him on the same date in the same month and year. This entire life, I’ll only belong to big brother Tian Ya. Heavens, please be the witness of everything I’ve said. If I go back on any of my words, let me suffer eternal punishment. Please bless big brother Tian Ya and myself so that no matter what happens, we can always be together.”

.....

Dia Wu, you gave up so much and endured so much for me. You were the Xuanyuan family’s princess, and could have enjoyed a life of fame and riches. However, because of me, your life was turned upside down.

It's just that what I owe you can never be repaid in this lifetime...

Dia Wu, if there's a next life, then I hope I'll be able to meet you and Ruo Ruo again...

Ruo Ruo, I'm coming to be with you...

Dia Wu... Dia Wu...

If there's a next life, I want to... watch the stars with you...

.....

Feng Xie Yu stood in front of Ling Chen, and slashed down towards him. She had severed her emotions a long time ago, and the only reason she continued to live was to repay her family. After so many years, she did not find any meaning in living, and her feelings and emotions were all nearly dead. Life, death, happiness, sadness... were all meaningless and worthless to her. Xuanyuan Dao and Long Zheng Yang both wanted her to kill this person, so she would kill him, like a robot carrying out its orders.

The long sword swung in a beautiful arc, slicing towards Ling Chen's neck. Although the speed of the sword seemed quite slow, but it contained formless sword intent that could pierce through mountains and split the earth. This slash was entirely capable of cutting Ling Chen's head off instantly. The sword descended, coming closer and closer to Ling Chen's neck... however, just when it was millimetres away, it suddenly stopped.

... What's going on...

If I can just swing my sword down, then I'll be able to complete my orders... but why did my hand stop... why can't I finish him off...

What is this pain I feel in my heart...

I definitely cut off all of my emotions... but why is my heart beating so fast... why can't I kill this person... what is happening to me... this feeling that makes me want to shed tears... why... why...

Every person was looking at Feng Xie Yu's sword. When her sword stopped in place, it was as if time had stopped as well. The entire central hall went deathly silent.

Feng Xie Yu was calm and distant from everything. She would never show compassion or hesitate. She was simply a cold-blooded killing machine. This scene before them caused everyone to stare in shock. Long Zheng Yang frowned as he said, "Xie Yu? What are you waiting for? This is an extremely dangerous person - finish him off immediately!"

Feng Xie Yu: "....."

She had closed herself off from all emotions, but that door to her emotions was suddenly wrenched open. Countless memories flooded into her mind, causing her to feel many emotions. Despite

hearing Long Zheng Yang's command, she did not move. The sword in her hand remained millimetres away from Ling Chen's neck, but no matter how hard she tried, she couldn't close this distance.

Within her chaotic world, she heard the man beneath her mutter in an incredibly weak voice, which she could barely hear.

“Dia Wu... Dia Wu...”

“If there's a next life, I want to... watch the stars with you...”

Clang!!

Feng Xie Yu's entire body trembled, and her sword fell to the ground.

At this moment, a deafening explosion rang out from outside.

BOOM!!!

Ling Chen's attack had put the entire Long family on highest alert, and they concentrated all of their forces on him. Currently, all of the Long family's main defences were gathered around the central hall, and no one noticed the new enemies. None of them had the time to wonder why Feng Xie Yu's sword had suddenly fallen to the ground before they all reacted to the explosion.

“Enemy attack!!”

“Who is it??”

“Protect the leader and young master!!”

“Go and see what’s going on!!”

The explosion was followed by screams of terror and pain, then a hoarse voice which was yelled with all of that person’s might, “MASTER!! Master, where are you?! Hurry up and reply!! Master!! You can’t die!! Master!!!”

This yell was filled with many emotions... fear, anger, determination and ferociousness... the remaining Long Yu espers and the Xuanyuan family’s people all rushed outside.

The Long family’s gates had been tightly closed, but within the residence, there were 20 or so figures. All of these men and women were under 30 years of age, and around 10 or so of them were covered in a multitude of injuries. However, all of their eyes looked more savage than those of wild wolves’, and their murderous aura shot to the sky.

All of the Reapers had finally come together. When they arrived, they hadn’t heard any sounds of fighting, and their hearts were struck with worry. All of them were filled with hatred and despair. This was because the lack of fighting sounds meant that everything had come to an end... their master could already... already...

“Who are you all?!” The Long family had just suffered a massive blow, and although there were not many of these intruders, and many of them looked badly injured, their eyes and auras caused everyone to shudder.

Gui Ya stood at the front of the group. The bandages on his arms and legs and become completely tattered, and his body was covered with wounds. However, the savage light in his eyes shone viciously. He opened his mouth, and all of his words were filled with coldness and savageness, “You pieces of trash... if something happened to our master, then all of you... including the Long family... will have to pay with your lives!!”

The cold voice covered the entire Long family residence, and was heard by Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun. They instantly thought of the 10 or so people who had protected Ling Tian’s family and destroyed the 75 Steel Dragon Corps...

The ‘master’ who they referred to was the fallen Ling Tian!!

Ling Tian was an absolute madman, a madman who caused them to taste absolute terror. His subordinates were also crazy as well! Ling Tian definitely couldn’t be allowed to live, otherwise they would never be able to have peace of mind. These subordinates couldn’t be allowed to live either, otherwise their revenge in future would be terrifying.

Long Tian Yun had more or less recovered from the shock, and he gritted his teeth as he said, “Father, since they’ve come to our

doorstep... we'll finish them all off. We can't let a single one of them go. We'll use the entire Xuanyuan family's forces to finish off all of them!"

Long Zheng Yang nodded. What Long Tian Yun had just said was exactly what he was thinking as well. He immediately gave the order, "Kill all of the intruders!!"

This order caused the Long family's residence, which had just settled down, to once again erupt into chaos. The sounds of fighting and screaming immediately sounded out, adding to the chaotic atmosphere. At this moment, Xuanyuan Dao walked in, holding a bloodied Azure Edge Sword in his hand. The massive wound in his chest had already stopped bleeding. Although he was the "Sword God", but the Azure Edge Sword had pierced through his body, so he was still in a terrible condition. He limped in with two people from the Xuanyuan family supporting him. Long Zheng Yang hurriedly went over and asked, "Xuanyuan, are you sure you're fine?"

Xuanyuan Dao shook his head, "This sort of injury isn't enough to kill me... cough, cough. Leader, these people are all a bunch of savages like Ling Chen who don't care about their own lives... you can't... spare any of them."

As he spoke, he suddenly saw Ling Chen on the ground. His extremely sharp senses determined that Ling Chen still had a bit of life in him, and he yelled, "Why isn't he dead yet... immediately kill him!! This person is extremely hard to kill... if... if he's saved by those savages, then we'll all be finished. Quickly finish him!! Forget it, I'll do it myself. His body is special, so even if he's not

moving, it'll be hard to deal a fatal blow to him.”

Xuanyuan Dao swept out with his right hand, and gathered his sword intent into the Azure Edge Sword. Although he was severely injured, but he was still the Sword God, who was unmatched in the way of the sword. He then sent the Azure Edge Sword flying towards Ling Chen's neck... they were all terrified-completely terrified of Ling Chen. Even Xuanyuan Dao was unwilling to let Ling Chen live for an extra second.

All of the onlookers expected Ling Chen to be beheaded in the next second. However, just as the Azure Edge Sword was about to slash into Ling Chen, a hand wrapped with black cloth stretched out like lightning. It pressed against the blade of the Azure Edge Sword as it sped past, and released boundless sword intent into it. Xuanyuan Dao's sword intent was dispelled, and the hand casually flipped the Azure Edge Sword and caught it by the hilt. Of course, this hand belonged to Feng Xie Yu.

This completely unexpected scene caused all of the people to stare in shock and disbelief.

While holding the Azure Edge Sword, Feng Xie Yu suddenly picked up Ling Chen, rushed outside, and disappeared...

Chapter 333 - Escaping!

“Xie Yu, you!!”

This sudden, unexpected action by Feng Xie Yu caused everyone great shock and fright. However, Feng Xie Yu was simply too fast, and everyone was too shocked to react in time. As such, she was able to escape without anyone even trying to stop her. By the time Long Zheng Yang and Xuanyuan Dao yelled out, Feng Xie Yu was already long gone.

“Quickly stop her!! Don’t let her take Ling Tian away, no matter what!!” Thinking of the consequences if Ling Tian was saved, the Long family father and son yelled out madly. All of the people in the hall immediately rushed out, and only Xuanyuan Dao was left to protect them.

“Xuanyuan! What’s going on... could it be that Xie Yu and that Ling Tian... have some sort of relationship?” Long Zheng Yang asked as he stared at Xuanyuan Dao.

“Impossible!” Xuanyuan Dao shook his head, “After she ‘died’ thirteen years ago, she cut off all of her emotions, and dedicated herself to the way of the sword. She’s lived like a dead person, and has never even been outside-how could she know an outsider? I don’t know what’s going on either!” After speaking, Xuanyuan Dao thought for a moment before gnashing his teeth, “No... I must go and personally stop her! Because she completely emptied out her heart, her progress with the sword has been incredibly fast. In fact, her skill with the sword, as well as her sword intent, is almost on par with mine. Now that she has the Azure Edge Sword, if she

wants to leave, no one can stop her except for me! If Ling Tian is allowed to continue to live... the consequences will be unthinkable!”

“But, your wounds...”

“These wounds are nothing!!” Xuanyuan Dao roared as he stretched out his right arm. The sword Feng Xie Yu had dropped spun into his hand. His heavily injured body sped off with a gust of wind, and disappeared from the Long family father and son’s vision. Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun’s breathing were all ragged and irregular. Everything that had happened tonight had completely stunned them. They simply couldn’t understand why Feng Xie Yu, who viewed herself as a ‘dead person’, would do such a thing.

If Ling Chen didn’t die, he would be a catastrophe waiting to happen at any moment for the Long family.

Soldiers from the seven main forces all hurried over, and the Xuanyuan family’s people also began to arrive. With more and more people arriving, the scene became even more chaotic. The 26 Reapers were like 26 Demon Gods, battling and slaughtering enemies on all sides. They expressionlessly took life after life with their terrifying skills, each one of them emanating incredible killing intent and the aura of death. Every single attack hit vital areas of their enemies and completely disregarded their attacks. They only had 26 people, but they were not suppressed by the Long family’s forces at all, but rather caused them great fear.

They were like Ling Chen, a group of savages who did not even

care about their own lives!

Feng Xie Yu was as fast as lightning, and streaked past crowds of people. Everyone in the Long family was familiar with her attire, and in the darkness and chaos, no one could see clearly just what she was carrying. As such, not a single person stopped her. However, the Reapers' senses were just as sensitive in the darkness. Gui Ya's eyes suddenly locked on to Ling Chen's body, and all of the blood in his body boiled.

Ling Chen's clothes were in tatters, and his entire body was dyed red with blood. Although Gui Ya couldn't see his face, not even any of the Reapers wouldn't be able to recognise Ling Chen's aura!

“Master!!! Ahh.... Return master to us!!!”

Gui Ya suddenly roared out as he saw Feng Xie Yu running. He completely ignored the enemies around him as he madly rushed towards Feng Xie Yu.

The crazy, murderous aura from Gui Ya caused Feng Xie Yu to hesitate. Under her cloak, she revealed a complicated expression. She quickly thought, then pushed Ling Chen through the air to Gui Ya.

Gui Ya's pupils contracted, and he sped faster to catch Ling Chen as Feng Xie Yu also came closer. Catching Ling Chen in his arms, he, unable to move, just stared at Feng Xie Yu. The blade in her hand shone with a green glow, and swept towards him, but it did not touch his body. Instead, cries of pain came from behind him,

and three Xuanyuan family experts were sent flying. Blood was seeping out from all of their wrists - this attack had contained so much force that it not only severed the tendons in their wrists, but also blasted their entire bodies back.

Gui Ya could immediately tell that Ling Chen was still alive, albeit incredibly weak. He was so delirious with joy that he almost cried. They all knew that even if he suffered injuries that could kill normal humans a number of times, he wouldn't die, because he was Adam! If he had enough time, he would be able to fully recover!

Gui Ya looked up and stared at Feng Xie Yu. He said in a low voice, "Words cannot express my gratitude for this great kindness! I will remember this for my entire life!"

After speaking, he immediately took Ling Chen and fled towards the gates.

On the ground, the three Xuanyuan family experts screamed in agony. They simply couldn't understand why she hadn't helped them, but had instead attacked them - going so far as to cripple them. Feng Xie Yu silently turned around, and looked at the people coming towards her, with the Azure Edge Sword pointing towards the ground. If it wasn't for Xuanyuan Dao, she definitely wouldn't have given Ling Chen to anyone else. However, she was the only one who could stop him.

"You... You... Are you crazy! Do you know what you've done?!?! What you've done today could very well cause even greater catastrophe to the Long family and our Xuanyuan family in future!

Our Xuanyuan family has never suffered such humiliation before!” Xuanyuan Dao’s entire body was trembling. He had seen her save Ling Chen, deliver him to someone else, as well as cripple three other Xuanyuan family members. It was possible that they would never be able to wield a sword again. For Xuanyuan family members, not being able to wield a sword... was equivalent to their lives being completely ruined.

Feng Xie Yu did not reply. Instead, she slowly raised her sword, pointing it towards Xuanyuan Dao.

“You!!” In his fury, the wound on his chest almost split open again. He forced down the blood in his throat, and also raised the sword in his hand, “Alright, very well! Use the sword in your hand to give me a reason!!”

Feng Xie Yu raised the Azure Edge Sword, and it overflowed with sword qi. She unhesitatingly pierced towards Xuanyuan Dao’s vitals... despite the fact that he was her own father.

She thought that she had died years ago, but on this blood-filled night, she had once again found a reason for living.

More and more people from the seven main forces and the Xuanyuan family arrived, and the Reapers started to feel pressured. Gui Ya carried Ling Chen as he desperately yelled while he ran, “Master’s still alive! Cover me!! Cover me!!”

The Long family definitely wouldn't allow Ling Tian to leave alive. A significant portion of their forces was now focused on Gui Ya. No matter how strong and fast Gui Ya was, his speed was still drastically reduced from having to carry someone on his back. All of the other Reapers were tied down from crowds of enemies as well. Seeing that he was about to be surrounded, Gui Ya's eyes were filled with decisiveness. He suddenly saw Gui Dao, who was closest to the gates. Gui Ya roared out, and threw Ling Chen towards Gui Dao.

“Gui Dao!! You're the fastest out of all of us! We'll leave master to you!! If you run slowly, we'll blow your head off!! We'll take care of everyone here!”

Thirty metres away, Gui Dao caught Ling Chen's body, and immediately sped towards the gates, as he yelled, “I definitely won't let master die before me!! No, even if I die, I won't let master die!! Old bastard, don't you dare to die either!!”

“Die, my ass! I still haven't gotten a wife yet; how can I die now? Hurry up and piss off!”

Gui Dao's speed was indeed impressive. Even with Ling Chen on his back, he was still incredibly fast. The main target was now switched to Gui Dao, and seeing that he had almost reached the gates, Long Zheng Yang roared out, “Stop him!! Immediately stop him!!”

Waves of people charged towards Gui Dao. It was impossible for him to attack while carrying Ling Chen, so he focused every fibre of his being into escaping. He was confident that his comrades

would take care of these people for him.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

A cold light flashed by, and five peoples' heads fell to the ground. Gui Ya stood behind Gui Dao, blocking all of the people. He carried a dagger in each hand, his eyes burning with madness.

Minions of Demons and Devils flourished in the night [TLN: Gui Ya means 'minion of demons/devils'], and he was determined to bathe in blood tonight. If the gods blocked his way, he would slaughter gods. If buddhas blocked his way, he would slaughter buddhas.

“Arghhhhhh!!”

Upon reaching the walls and gates, Gui Dao explosively roared. Relying on his sheer willpower, he was able to surpass his limits and jump over the 10 metre high walls with Ling Chen on his back...

“Leave master to me!! None of you are allowed to die!!”

It was dark outside the walls, and Gui Dao soon disappeared. The dark night was the Reapers' domain.

The news that Ling Chen wasn't dead caused the Reapers to feel exhilarated. Their blood boiled and their bloodlust exploded out. They roared, and released all of their power. Not a single one of

them escaped-instead, they charged towards the people who were rushing after Gui Dao, using all of their strength to block and kill them...

On the screen, the Long family father and son watched as Gui Dao escaped with Ling Chen. Long Zheng Yang swayed, and almost coughed up blood. He immediately picked up his communication device and said in a low voice, “Broadcast my orders! Lock down every street within 30 kilometres and arrest all suspicious-looking people. If anyone resists, you have permission to kill them immediately!!”

Chapter 334 - Explosion

The wind howled as Gui Dao furiously ran with Ling Chen on his back. The blood on Ling Chen's body had dried, and barely any had dripped off his body. However, his lifeforce was still extremely weak... this was the sole motivation and driving force for Gui Dao while he pushed his body to the limit as he ran and ran.

The Reapers did their best to stop the Long family's people, but after all, they only had 20 or so people. It was impossible for them to block all of the Long family's forces. The Long family's gates were opened, and crowds of soldiers swarmed out, chasing in the direction that Gui Dao went. Behind them, the Long family's residence was filled with the sounds of killing. Long Zheng Yang and Long Tian Yun had been evacuated already, and were sent to the safety of the Xuanyuan family. Despite this, as long as Ling Chen was still alive, they were unable to be calm. Due to Long Zheng Yang's orders, more than half of Beijing had been affected. Soldiers from the national army, as well as police officers, patrolled the streets. Many of the residents were curious about what had just happened for the Long family to do such a thing.

Gui Dao knew that the area he was in would definitely be locked down, so he followed a complex route and headed towards an area where there were no soldiers or police officers. Under normal circumstances, he would be like a gust of black wind, and be completely undetectable. However, due to him carrying Ling Chen, as well as the injuries he had previously sustained, his speed was reduced to almost half. All of his clothes were wet from his sweat, but he gritted his teeth and continued to run at his full speed.

Gui Dao didn't know how long he had been running for, but

behind him, he started to hear footsteps getting closer and closer. Very soon, guns started firing at him, a bullet whistled past his ear.

The darkness could hide his body, but it couldn't hide the smell of blood on them. Gui Dao was quickly running out of strength, and was becoming slower and slower. His pursuers were getting closer and closer... These bastards... scum!!

Master's life depends on me... I can't stop... I can't be caught!!!

“Arghhhhhh!!!”

Gui Dao roared, and his body, which seemed like it had reached its limit, somehow exploded with more strength. He somehow began to run even faster, and started to pull away from his pursuers.

Bang!

From the sound of the gun, Gui Dao could instantly tell that it was a sniper rifle. Under normal circumstances, snipers posed no threat to him at all. Outside the 50 metre range, it was impossible to even graze his clothes. However, he could tell that the sniper was only 20 metres away. He twisted, and threw Ling Chen, so that he would not be hit.

The bullet smashed into Gui Dao's left shoulder, and waves of pain crashed through his body as blood spurted out. Gui Dao crashed to the ground and rolled a few times before he stopped.

Ling Chen's body also fell heavily onto the ground.

The massive pain from his left shoulder caused his entire left arm to become paralysed, making it useless. His entire body was in pain, and there was a large wound on his forehead. Despite this, Gui Dao desperately tried to get up, but found that he couldn't even stand anymore. The footsteps behind him came closer and closer. If they were normal humans, he wouldn't have to worry. However, in his current condition, it was impossible for him to defeat anyone from the Long family's seven main forces or from the Xuanyuan family. Looking at Ling Chen lying in front of him, and remembering that if he died, Ling Chen would also die, Gui Dao's determination flared up. He bit his tongue, and the pain caused his mind to clear. He shakily stood up, and rushed towards Ling Chen. Behind him, there were already many soldiers within 50 metres of him.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

At this moment, the sound of gunfire erupted. However, Gui Dao's senses told him that it was not him who was being shot at. Cries of pain came from behind him, and he suddenly turned around. In the dim moonlight, he saw a group of people dressed in black blocking his pursuers. They used guns and bullets to form a wall as they started to fight. Because they had superiority in numbers, even the people from the Long family's seven main forces were not able to quickly break past them.

Who... were they?

“Quickly leave... We can't hold them back for long.”

A low voice spoke out from next to him, and he suddenly saw a man standing about 20 metres to his left. The man was completely covered in black clothing, and his face could not be seen. It was also very likely that he was using a fake voice. Gui Ya used his right arm to carry Ling Chen as he said a “thank you” filled with gratitude, then gritted his teeth as he continued to run.

The man in black watched as Gui Dao ran, until he completely disappeared with Ling Chen. He gave a low sigh as he muttered to himself, “Ling Tian, don’t die... otherwise, Qi Qi will be incredibly sad... this is the first time she has begged me to help someone while crying... you... must treat her well...”

“I can’t help you anymore than this, otherwise I’ll drag the Xiao family into this matter. I wish you well...”

He didn’t want to watch the horrific battle, so he instead looked up into the sky, “I hope... the Long family won’t be able to find out that we helped him...”

Gui Dao’s activities usually led him to the outskirts of Beijing, so he knew of many deserted and quiet places. However, with his espionage and counterespionage skills, he knew that the smell of blood on him would make it difficult to shake off the Long family’s people. As such, he did not stop running. He could only hope that as he ran, the smell of blood would dissipate, until they wouldn’t be able to track him anymore.

His comrades were using their lives to give him time to escape,

and there were even people who unexpectedly came to his rescue. Gui Dao continuously told himself that his master's fate was on his shoulders. Although his body was becoming numb, his vision becoming hazy and his consciousness beginning to fade, he still continued to run.

He didn't know how long he had been running for, and the only thing that kept him going was the bit of life that was still inside Ling Chen. He ran past barren areas, trees, hills... he had not seen any light in a long time. His hazy consciousness told him that he was already outside of Beijing, and was in a deserted region to the north of Beijing.

“He's in front of us! We're getting close!! Don't let him get away!!”

A voice from farway rang out clearly, causing Gui Dao's body to go cold. He knew that after avoiding them for so long, he had once again been found. He then heard the hum of a car engine, causing him to fall into despair.

Right now, he definitely wasn't able to outrun a car... and moreover, since these soldiers had arrived by car, they would be at their peak, whereas he was completely exhausted. He definitely wouldn't be able to beat them in a fight either.

The sounds of the cars and people came closer and closer. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't shake them off. Suddenly a slim, black figure appeared in front of him. His eyes shone, and as his mind relaxed just a little bit, his body gave out. He fell to the ground as he said, “Bing Luo... Bing Luo!!”

The black figure stopped in front of him, and picked up Ling Chen. Under the moonlight, her cold, but beautiful face could be seen-it was Mu Bing Yao!

Her body trembled and her tears fell as she held Ling Chen in her arms. Gui Dao almost didn't have the strength to breathe anymore, and he weakly gasped, "Bing Luo... great... don't worry... master is... still alive... quickly take him... and leave... don't worry about me... go!!"

In the Tian Yuan District, not long after Gui Ya and the others had left, masses of soldiers poured into the District. The disappearance of Ling Shui Ruo's body completely stunned Mu Bing Yao and Tian Tian. They were discovered by the soldiers, who wanted to take them away. To protect Tian Tian's safety, Mu Bing Yao did not clash with them, but instead quickly took Tian Tian and left. They escaped to a deserted area where no one was around. However, she simply couldn't be at ease, and she decided to head to the Long family, where Ling Chen was. However, she had stumbled upon Gui Dao and the severely injured Ling Chen.

Hearing the voices in the distance, Mu Bing Yao put Ling Chen on her back, but looked at Gui Dao, unwilling to leave. Gui Dao roared in fury, "Hurry up and leave!! Do you want master to die here?!"

Mu Bing Yao took a few steps backwards, then turned around and started running. Behind her, came Gui Dao's last words, "Master, Bing Luo, don't die! Live... live, and get revenge for me and all our other brothers and sisters!!!"

The sound of cars and people came closer and closer, until they were only about 30 metres away... 20 metres.. 10 metres... Gui Dao reached out with his right hand, and slowly opened a fold in his clothes, revealing a fuse... he took out a match from his pocket, and struck it against his special belt, lighting it up. He brought it against the fuse, and savagely laughed, “Heh... accompany grandpa to hell, hahaha!!”

As he madly laughed, the fire began to burn down the fuse as the cars came closer and closer. In his hazy vision, he saw five vehicles driving towards him. The closest one was less than a metre away from him when the explosion burst out... BOOM!!!

The flames from the explosion rushed to the sky, and all five vehicles were caught in the blast. The vehicles were all badly damaged and flipped over, as the people inside screamed. The flames gradually spread to the surrounding grass and plants, transforming that area into a sea of fire.

Mu Bing Yao did not stop or slow down. She continued to run as two lines of tears streaked down her icy-looking face.

Chapter 335 - Do Your Best, Tian Tian (1)

Mu Bing Yao continued to carry Ling Chen, who Gui Dao had saved with his own life, and continued to run forwards. The way in front of her was just as dark as the inside of her heart. She didn't know where she was running with Ling Chen... he had been exposed, and it was possible that there would be nowhere for him to hide in all of China anymore. She only knew that she could not stop. The stench of blood on Ling Chen was too strong, and although there was not much wind, it would be easy to follow their tracks. If she stopped, all that would be waiting for them was death.

It had been six years since Ling Chen had taken them out of 'Hell', and since they arrived in China, this was the first time Mu Bing Yao had seen one of her comrades die. The pain and her inability to breathe told her that after six years, she was no longer the cold and emotionless "Frozen Hearted Man-eater" who only cared about Adam. She was now a flesh and blood human who could laugh and cry.

Gui Dao probably never thought that he would one day have to resort to using the compressed explosives he always kept on his body. He used the remainder of his life to pull those who had been chasing him into hell with him.

Master... don't die... please don't die!

Mu Bing Yao silently yelled within her heart. To the Reapers, there was nothing more important than Ling Chen's safety. If he died then she would lose all desire and motivation to live.

However, despite all her internal yelling, she was very clear that Ling Chen's lifeforce was slipping away, bit by bit... he was getting closer and closer to death.

Mu Bing Yao felt terrified. Before, when she had quickly checked over Ling Chen's body, she found that there were countless wounds on his body, and he had lost more than a third of his blood. Half of his right shoulder had been severed, and his entire right arm was almost completely destroyed. There was not a single uninjured place on his body, and there were even more than 10 cuts on his face. However, they all knew that with his monstrous body and mental energy, as long as he didn't want to die, he would definitely be able to recover!

However, at this moment, Ling Chen's lifeforce was indeed seeping away... a horrifying idea surfaced in Mu Bing Yao's mind... it was possible that Ling Chen did not want to continue living, but instead was seeking death! He had gone to the Long family by himself so that he could die! He had been so deeply affected by Shui Ruo's death that he simply didn't want to live anymore!

This sort of mentality would only cause him, after being injured so severely, to die even faster! If it was like that, even the best doctors with the best technology would not be able to save him.

Mu Bing Yao stopped, and put Ling Chen on the ground. She desperately performed CPR on him as she yelled, "Master!! Wake up! Wake up!!! You can't die, I won't allow you to die! I don't want you to die! Hurry up and wake up... please wake up already!!"

As she yelled, Mu Bing Yao's tears landed on Ling Chen's face as she pumped harder and harder on his chest. Perhaps her heartwrenching screams reached Ling Chen's soul. After a few moments, his eyelids fluttered, and he slowly opened his eyes.

“Master!!” Seeing him wake up, Mu Bing Yao hugged him tightly and cried. In this world, the only person who could cause her to worry and cry like this was Ling Chen.

“Why... Why aren't I dead yet...”

Ling Chen's voice was weak and hoarse, and completely dead. After waking up, he didn't ask where he was, or why Mu Bing Yao was there, or what had happened... the first thing he had asked was why he wasn't dead yet.

After Shui Ruo passed away, he had been completely consumed by his despair, and after exacting his revenge, all he wanted to do was die.

Mu Bing Yao hugged him with all her might as she yelled, “Why would you want to die?? How could we let you die? There are so many things you haven't done yet, and you still haven't achieved your dream with us. How can you die now?!”

She knew that she had to quickly think of a way to make Ling Chen want to live. Only then would he have a chance at recovering. Back then, because of his strong desire to live, he had survived from 'Heaven' and 'Hell'. However, what could she do to awaken this desire?

“Just... let... me... die... Ruo Ruo is gone... Why... should I live...”

Ling Chen’s eyes were devoid of any light, and his voice was incredibly weak but filled with the determination to die. Mu Bing Yao felt like her heart had been shattered, and she suppressed her desire to cry as she vigorously shook her head, replying, “No... you can’t die!! We worked so hard to save you, and many of us paid great prices... did you know, in order to cover our escape, Gui Dao blew himself up with explosives... if you die, then who will take revenge for all our fallen brothers and sisters? Did you forget how Ruo Ruo died? Don’t you want to take revenge for her? Live, live on!”

“Sorry... Gui Dao... I’m sorry... It’s all my fault... I can’t... get revenge... let me die... let me be with Ruo Ruo... let me go and apologise... to Gui Dao... let me die...”

Mu Bing Yao had unconsciously bitten open her lips, and drops of blood came out. Hearing his voice, as well as his intention to die, she nearly gave up, “Master... I know you’re extremely sad from Ruo Ruo passing away. We feel the same way as well! However... you still have us... we’re still here for you! There’s also Tian Tian! We’ll always be here for you... even if you chase us away, we’ll never leave!! Would you really bear to leave us behind? Especially Tian Tian... she’s already lost her big sister... do you know how devastated she would be to lose you as well? If you die, who will look after and protect Tian Tian?” “Then... big bad guy... no, big bro, will you really protect me and give me lots of things to eat, forever?”

“Big brother was found by big sister, and Tian Tian was also found by sister. Hehe, this is so interesting. Big brother was found by big sister, and will be with her forever, so since Tian Tian was also found by big sister, will Tian Tian also be with big sister and big brother forever?”

“Then... it’s a promise! We’re all going to be together forever. Neither big brother nor big sister can ever leave Tian Tian!”

“We’ve already become a family, so of course we’ll all be together forever.”

..... Ling Chen’s lifeless eyes suddenly focused and he suddenly asked, “Tian Tian... Tian Tian... where’s Tian Tian? Where is she?”

Ling Chen’s sudden reaction caused Mu Bing Yao to see some light in the midst of the overwhelming despair. She immediately replied, “Tian Tian’s a bit further ahead. She really wants to see you, and has been waiting for you all this time. I’ll immediately take you to meet her! Master, you can’t die, no matter what! You still need to take care of Tian Tian... you promised Ruo Ruo that you would protect Tian Tian and take care of her; how can you break your promise to Ruo Ruo? Let’s go to where Tian Tian is!”

When Shui Ruo passed away, Mu Bing Yao had been there as well. She had heard all of the promises Ling Chen made to Shui Ruo. The final one was that he would take care of Tian Tian.

Mu Bing Yao saw a brief internal struggle within Ling Chen’s

eyes, and could feel that he was not as determined to die. She almost started crying tears to joy, and she once again picked Ling Chen up as she headed to where Tian Tian was.

As she ran, Ling Chen continuously muttered Tian Tian's name. His voice grew weaker and weaker, and soon became silent. However, there was a change to his life force—it was no longer decreasing, but rather growing like a tiny blade of grass... in terms of assassination skills, apart from Ling Chen, Mu Bing Yao was second only to Gui Ya. However, she was neither as fast as Gui Dao nor as strong. As such, her speed when carrying Ling Chen was not very fast. Before, she had escaped to a place very far away with Tian Tian, as she believed that Tian Tian would only be safe if they escaped to somewhere far away. She had originally planned to search for information in the morning, but she couldn't stop worrying about Ling Chen. She left Tian Tian at the bottom of the highest tree in the area, and told her not to leave before dawn. Right now, she was already very close to that place.

However, she could hear some unsettling noises.

It was the sound of a group of people's footsteps. They were about 300 metres away, and were gradually getting closer. There were about 40 to 50 of them.

To come all this way by foot, their physical condition and speed were quite impressive. They most likely belonged to the Blood Wolves or the Savage Tigers of the seven main forces.

Mu Bing Yao deeply breathed in, and she soon saw the tallest tree. She ran at her full speed, and called out in a low voice, "Tian

Tian, Tian Tian!”

A small figure jumped out from behind the tree, and started to wail. She cried as she ran towards Mu Bing Yao. Although she felt safe with Mu Bing Yao, this silent, dark forest made her feel extremely terrified. During the time that Mu Bing Yao had left, she had been curled up in a ball, trembling, not daring to move an inch. When she finally saw Mu Bing Yao again, she leapt onto her and tightly hugged her, not willing to let go.

Chapter 336 - Do Your Best, Tian Tian (2)

Seeing that Tian Tian was unharmed, Mu Bing Yao let out a sigh of relief. She gently put Ling Chen down, then hugged Tian Tian back. Tian Tian's face was covered with tears, and when she saw the bloodied figure on the ground, her entire body stiffened, then leapt over. She sobbed heart-wrenchingly, "Big brother... Big brother!! Big brother!!"

Ever since Tian Tian had joined their family, she had always been together with Ling Chen and Shui Ruo. She would even sleep with them in the same bed every night, and was incredibly familiar with them. Although it was impossible to tell that it was Ling Chen from his current appearance, Tian Tian instantly recognised him. After Shui Ruo left, she was devastated, but at least she still had her big brother to rely on. Right now, the thing she feared most was if Ling Chen would also leave her. If that happened, she would have lost all of the people she was close to on earth... and no one would ever protect her, treat her well or care for her...

Looking at Ling Chen, who was covered in blood, she felt as if her entire world was collapsing. She mourned as she knelt over his body.

"Tian Tian! Tian Tian!!" Mu Bing Yao immediately went to hug Tian Tian's body. She held Tian Tian's tear-stained face as she said, "Your big brother's fine. Even though he's hurt, he'll get better soon. Tian Tian, you're a big girl now, do you want to save your big brother? If you do, then don't cry. Use your hands to save your big brother, alright? Right now, the only one who can save him... is you."

Tian Tian didn't understand most of what Mu Bing Yao had said, but she clearly heard that her big brother wasn't dead. She also heard that she shouldn't cry, but should do her best to save her big brother. She suppressed her crying, and vigorously nodded, shaking her tears everywhere, "I... I won't cry... I want to save big brother... he'll be fine..."

"Good!" Mu Bing Yao nodded as she lovingly stroked Tian Tian's face. Mu Bing Yao quickly got up, and put Ling Chen's upper body on Tian Tian's weak shoulders. At home, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo had never made Tian Tian do any heavy work. As such, her little body nearly collapsed under the weight of Ling Chen's body. However, she gritted her teeth, and shouldered his weight, because the person on her back was her big brother.

The sounds in the distance came closer and closer, and Mu Bing Yao bit her lips as she looked at this little girl carrying Ling Chen. She gently said, "Tian Tian, quickly take big brother and leave. Go as far away as you can, and try not to stop. Do not, ever, turn back. Tian Tian, only you can save big brother now. Big sister needs to go and kill those people who are trying to kill him... Tian Tian, I'll leave him to you. You need to be strong. Big sister believes... you'll be able to do it."

The weight on her shoulders felt incredibly heavy, but Tian Tian refused to give up. She wrapped Ling Chen's arms tighter around her, and furiously nodded, "I will be strong... I'll definitely save big brother!!"

"En!!" Seeing the tears in the little girl's eyes, Mu Bing Yao's eyes

once again became damp. She also vigorously nodded and stretched out her pinky finger. The two girls' pinky fingers entwined as Mu Bing Yao said, "Do your best, Tian Tian... we'll all do our best. You're the bravest, strongest girl in the world!"

In the darkness of the night, the little girl used her shoulders to carry Ling Chen, step by step, as she walked forwards. She walked incredibly slowly, and had to use the full strength in her whole body to take each step. She felt like she would collapse any moment, but she determinedly continued to walk. She didn't let out any cries, nor did she allow herself to shed any tears, and she definitely wouldn't allow herself to stop, no matter what.

"Tian Tian..." Even Mu Bing Yao felt that it was cruel for her to put such a burden on this little girl's shoulders. However, she had no other choice. She turned around, no longer looking at that tiny frame, as she was worried that she would not be able to resist running over to help her. She bit her lips as she ran forwards, and a cold glint flashed in her hands as she took out 'Icy Hell'.

A breeze passed by and a piercingly cold light flashed, and the group of people suddenly stopped. In front of them, an incredibly beautiful but cold-looking woman had appeared. She silently stood there, looking like a proud snow lotus.

No matter if it was because of her beauty, or her incredibly cold aura, the iron-willed soldiers all lost their focus for a split second. However, the look in their eyes became resolute as they raised their weapons defensively, due to the killing intent she emanated.

The 42 people all wore different clothing, but none of them had

any guns. Out of the 42 people, 20 held swords that were about one foot long, and the other 22 didn't carry any weapons at all. Their equipment, or lack of, caused Mu Bing Yao to become incredibly wary. The 42 people all had a savage and wild aura like that of wild beasts'.

Tonight, Mu Bing Yao, and her 'Icy Hell' would face off against 20 Blood Wolves and 22 Savage Tigers.

Woosh...

The wind blew, and a look of joy appeared in Mu Bing Yao's eyes. With the wind, the scent of blood on Ling Chen's body would be scattered, making it harder for them to track him. If she could stall for enough time, and Tian Tian was able to get far away, then without the scent of blood, they would be unable to track down Ling Chen. When more people came, perhaps all traces of Ling Chen and Tian Tian would be gone by then, making it almost impossible to find him again.

Mu Bing Yao's worry decreased by a bit, and her killing intent increased. As the wind blew, her body turned into a blur as she charged into the crowd of her enemies. She only had a single Icy Hell, but it was as if she had three. She danced among the soldiers, sometimes even taking three of their lives in an instant...

"Tian Tian, quickly take big brother and leave. Go as far away as you can, and try not to stop. Do not, ever, turn back."

Do your best, Tian Tian... we'll all do our best. You're the bravest, strongest girl in the world!"

"I will do my best... I will save big brother... big sister has already left me... I don't want big brother to leave me either..." Tian Tian had no idea where she was, or where she was going. It was completely dark, and there was no one to talk to her or soothe her fears. However, she didn't feel afraid anymore. She knew that she had to continue to walk and walk, and couldn't turn back...

Just like this, Tian Tian carried the unconscious Ling Chen on and on. She didn't know how long she had walked, or how far she had walked. She had fallen over many times, but she did not give up. Usually, all she did was eat, play and sleep, but this time, she did not dare stop even for a moment. Even if she fell over, she would immediately get up again. Her face was covered with mud and the skin on her hands had split open at many places. However, each time, she would put Ling Chen on her shoulder again, and walk forwards, step by step.

She didn't see a single person as she walked, and no one appeared to help or stop her.

She completely lost track of time, but she continued to walk and walk. Soon, she saw the sky slowly become brighter and brighter. No one, including Tian Tian herself, would believe that she had carried Ling Chen on her weak shoulders for an entire night.

Even an adult wouldn't be able to do such a thing... and yet, by sheer determination, she had somehow accomplished it. Each step was filled not only with her sweat, blood and tears, but also her

determination to save Ling Chen.

The sky became brighter and brighter, and Tian Tian continued to walk. She had not slept or eaten in a long time, and had carried Ling Chen for an entire night. She felt quite dizzy, and her entire body was sore. She almost couldn't feel her legs, which were incredibly swollen, anymore. The pretty shoes that Shui Ruo had bought for her were stained with blood, and her face was covered with mud and scratches.

It was shocking to think that the girl who was lazy to the point that Shui Ruo usually had to put on her clothes for her, could actually possess such willpower.

The sun started to rise, and Tian Tian continued to walk. For Ling Chen, she simply couldn't give up. She was no longer capable of much thought, but her body mechanically continued to walk.

Crash...

Tian Tian lost her footing, and both she and Ling Chen fell to the ground and rolled for a while before they finally came to a stop. Tian Tian could no longer stand up, or even open her eyes. She whispered, "Big... brother..." before she also fell unconscious.

Chapter 337 - The Dust Settles

The Long family's residence was oddly silent in the morning. Practically no one had slept at all. Although the sun was up, the nightmare from the night before still lingered on in their hearts.

More than half of the ground in the courtyard had been destroyed, and there were craters everywhere. The largest crater had a diameter of 30 metres, and was almost 10 metres deep. The crater was filled with corpses and body parts, which no one dared to look at. Almost the entire ground and all of the walls were covered with dried blood, and although the cleaners had been cleaning for a long time, the thick stench of blood still remained.

If all of the corpses were gathered together, they would form a mountain of bodies.

It was certain that the entire ground of the Long family's courtyard would have to be replaced. Otherwise, no normal person would be willing to even walk over it. There were also five times as many guards, as well as countless soldiers from the national army.

Long Zheng Yang did not sleep at all. The events from the previous night had turned the Long family upside down, and caused him great trauma. Although everything had finally settled down, his heart was still in chaos, and he simply couldn't sleep. Every five minutes, he would receive texts and calls which made it even harder for him to fall asleep.

All of the intruders had been driven out, but...

A person ran in, passed the guards and came before Long Zheng Yang. Long Zheng Yang turned as he asked, “Did you find him?”

The person shook his head, “No... the person who took Ling Chen seems to have headed north. When we searched in that direction, we found large numbers of corpses of Dark Eagles. All of them were killed by guns. We deduced that they were ambushed by around 300 people, but we didn’t find a single corpse from the ambushers. Afterwards, we found five armoured vehicles belonging to the Steel Dragons that had been destroyed by an explosion. There were also 25 burnt bodies, all of whom were Steel Dragons, and a completely incinerated body. That person is most likely either Ling Tian or the one who was carrying him. Of course, it’s just a possibility.”

“Keep going.” Long Zheng Yang said in a low voice.

“Further north, we found many Blood Wolves’ and Savage Tigers’ corpses. About half of them had their throats slit and the other half were killed by the heavy firing of guns. From the blood at the scene, there were probably another 100 corpses, but they were all moved away. Not too far away, we found evidence that large amounts of corpses had been burned. We looked all over, but couldn’t find any useful information. We concluded that the enemy definitely didn’t want us to find out who they are. From the way they did things, as well as how they fought, we can conclude that they weren’t Ling Tian’s subordinates. They probably have some sort of relationship to Ling Tian, and so they helped him, but did not want us to find out who they are.”

Long Zheng Yang frowned, and thought for a while, before asking, “What about his subordinates?”

The underling immediately replied, “Those people were all terrifyingly strong, and were extremely proficient at protecting themselves. We were only able to kill one of them, and that was because he was already severely injured when he came here. There was another one who we were able to capture, due to his leg injury. He’s currently in the Xuanyuan family’s prison. After the other ones escaped... we weren’t able to catch any of them. Not only are they extremely strong, but are also skilled at hiding and counterespionage. We sent out as many of our people as possible, but we couldn’t even find a trace of them. It was as if they had disappeared from the world.”

These 20 people had all suffered heavy injuries and were exhausted after the battle. And yet, they had been able to escape from the Long family’s residence, and not a single trace of them could be found. These terrifying people had been living in Beijing for many years without them even knowing. He simply couldn’t think of where such people could have come from.

“Leader, don’t worry too much. That completely incinerated corpse could be Ling Tian’s. And even if it wasn’t him, with his incredibly serious injuries, he should be dead by now. Even if he is still alive, with those injuries, if he doesn’t go to a hospital, he’ll be dead without a doubt.” The underling said, trying to soothe Long Zheng Yang’s worries.

His words made sense, but without seeing Ling Chen’s body, he simply couldn’t be at ease. After all, Ling Chen was a monster who

had defied all common sense.

“Have we finished the arrangements for the deceased soldiers? And how are Murong and Xuanyuan?” Long Zheng Yang then asked.

“The corpses have all been taken care of. Venom Eagle and Owl Wolf have been placed into their coffins. Chief Murong has yet to wake up, but he has stabilised and is not in any danger. The Xuanyuan family’s leader is in a coma, and has also stabilised. However, the doctors said that because his arm was forcefully ripped off, it is unlikely they’ll be able to reattach it... the Sword God is also resting in the hospital. He fought with Feng Xie Yu for a long time last night, and the wound on his chest has become even worse. The situation... doesn’t look too good for him. However, he is, indeed, the Sword God. With enough time, he’ll be able to recover. Leader, Murong and the Sword God won’t be around for a while, so please be careful. It’s possible that our enemies might choose this time to strike.”

Hearing the name ‘Feng Xie Yu’, Long Zheng Yang’s expression suddenly changed as he directly asked, “Where is Feng Xie Yu? Have you found out why she decided to help Ling Tian?”

What baffled Long Zheng Yang the most wasn’t why would Ling Tian hate the Long family so much, but why Feng Xie Yu had acted in that way! She had not been outside the Long family or the Xuanyuan family’s residences for years, so it would be impossible for her to know Ling Chen. Why did she suddenly save him? If it wasn’t for her, Ling Chen would already be dead. Moreover, in order to give those people time to escape, she had actually attacked

Xuanyuan Dao...

“Feng Xie Yu and the Sword God both suffered heavy injuries... when Ling Chen’s subordinates left, she also left with them. We don’t know where she went, or why she helped them...”

No matter if it was the Long family or the Xuanyuan family, none of them could comprehend what was going on in her head.

Long Zheng Yang essentially received no information from that report, and he instead became even more agitated. He pondered for a while before saying, “Take me to see the person you captured. Immediately!”

The Xuanyuan family’s residence was designed in an ancient-chinese style. As the strongest family specialising in cold weapons, their culture and traditions were quite old-fashioned. Underneath their residence was a prison. This prison was reserved only for their most important and secret prisoners.

The person they captured last night was locked up in the region with the highest security.

On the way, they passed through three thick, steel doors. Within the cage, a person sat on the ground. He was covered in blood, and his legs looked badly mangled. Even so, there were at least ten, thick chains tying him up... it was evident how much they feared and hated this person. After all, these people had left too much of a shadow in their minds. The only reason they had been able to capture him was because he had taken many bullets to his legs

before arriving.

He was sitting with his head down, and his hair was in a mess. However, Long Zheng Yang was able to tell that this person was still in his early twenties... the other ones from last night were all about the same age, and the oldest one of them would be around his late twenties. To be so terrifying at such a young age... Long Zheng Yang wondered if they were demons who had escaped from hell.

“What’s your name?” Long Zheng Yang expressionlessly asked. The person in the cage slightly swayed—he was probably awake.

Hearing Long Zheng Yang’s voice, he looked up... his young face was filled with hatred and ridicule. He coldly laughed as he slowly replied, “My first name’s Father, and my last name’s Dearest. You can call me Father Dearest, hahaha...”

“You!!” Long Zheng Yang’s guards were furious. Long Zheng Yang was the highest political figure in China, and no one dared to insult him like this. Long Zheng Yang held up his hand, and walked forwards. He maintained his calm expression as he said, “I know you won’t betray your comrades. If I asked you where they are, I’m sure you wouldn’t tell us anything, even if we tortured you to death. So I won’t waste my time asking you that. All I want to know is one thing... why did Ling Tian, also known as Ling Chen, attack my Long family? What sort of enmity exists between him and my family? Surely you can tell me this.”

“Hahahaha...” The man coldly laughed. He looked into Long Zheng Yang’s eyes, his expression filled with disgust and hatred,

“You? You have the audacity to ask what enmity exists between master and your family? Back then, it was your family who forced him into hell. If it wasn’t for his strong desire to live, he would have died, all because of your family!!”

“Although he lived, those years were spent in constant pain and agony. If any of you had to experience what he went through, you would have died thousands, if not tens of thousands, of times! The reason master stayed alive was because of the person he deeply cared about, as well as to take revenge. However, when he came back, the person he cared about was already dead!! And it was because of your family! And so, six years ago, he attacked your Long family!

“Afterwards, he met a girl, who changed his heart. She became the most important thing in his life, and he even started to forget his hatred for the Long family. But you... it was your family who caused that girl to die last night, right in front of master!! You, Long Zheng Yang, you and your entire family are worse than animals! What you owe my master can never be repaid, not even in a hundred lives! And you even ask what enmity there is between you, pei!!” The man furiously yelled as he spat on the ground.

As he yelled, his expression became more and more vicious, “Get out of my sight! I don’t want to see you anymore, you dirty trash, otherwise my eyes will rot! You better kill me right away, otherwise I’ll kill more and more of your people, hahaha! Piss off! Go away!!”

“You!!!” Long Zheng Yang’s guards were unable to control themselves anymore and raised their guns. They prepared to shoot

him, but were once again stopped by Long Zheng Yang. His expression had darkened, but he still needed to keep this person alive. All of the shouting had not answered his questions, but had instead raised even more questions. However, he did not ask any more questions. He knew that if he stayed any longer, all he would receive was more cursing and insults.

“Let’s go... and also, don’t let him die.”

After giving his instructions, Long Zheng Yang walked out with a heavy heart. As he silently walked, he tried to think of the people who might have died because of him.

However, the correct answer was one that he never thought of.

Chapter 338 - The Destruction Of Heart's Dream (1)

“On the night of the 24th, the Long family suffered the largest terrorist attack in history. They sustained heavy losses, but were able to fight back the terrorists after one hour of fighting. The situation has since been settled. Most of the terrorists were killed at the scene but some were able to escape. The survivors are likely hiding in the outskirts of Beijing, and the police and national forces are currently doing their best to find them. We hope that residents will immediately alert police if they see anyone suspicious.

“The motives of the terrorist group are unclear, but based on the scale of the attack, it is possible that the attack came from other countries. However, no civilians have been hurt, so we hope that residents will not panic. We are told that the head of this terrorist group is a 22 year old man, called Ling Chen, who has lived in Beijing for about two years. He suffered heavy injuries in the fight, and is likely dead, but there is a possibility that he was rescued by his comrades. He is now a wanted fugitive, and if anyone sees him or has any information regarding him, please contact the police.”

Ling Chen's photo appeared on the screen.

“The terrorist group's headquarters in the Tian Yuan District have been destroyed. Residents of the Tian Yuan District can be rest assured that the danger has passed...”

“This is outrageous! Outrageous!! Big brother Ling Tian... has

become a wanted fugitive! Outrageous!!”

Xiao Qi bit her lips as she threw the remote control at the TV screen. She covered her face with her hands as her tears once again began to flow. Every tear was filled with worry and fear...

Three days had passed since the night of the attack. The girls of Heart's Dream had spent each of those days in constant worry. Since that night, they hadn't seen Ling Chen, Shui Ruo, or Tian Tian log on, and even Mu Bing Yao had disappeared. They were becoming more and more worried, and didn't feel like doing anything. On that night, they had received a shocking piece of news.

Xiao Qi had always wanted to see what Ling Tian really looked like, and wanted to get closer to him in real life... she finally saw his face and knew his true identity, but she never thought that it would be under such circumstances.

Ling Tian's real life identity had been found out by Long Tian Yun, who had attacked his home with heavy weaponry.

Shui Ruo had died...

The furious Ling Tian had charged into the Long family's residence to get revenge and to die...

When Xiao Qiu Feng told the girls this information, all of them felt like they had been struck by lightning. They simply couldn't

believe it, and didn't want to believe it.

Within these three days, many soldiers from the national army patrolled the streets, creating a tense atmosphere in all of Beijing. The appearance of the national army signified that the Long family was determined to get rid of Ling Tian, even if it meant disrupting the entire city. As such, even if Ling Tian was still alive, he wouldn't have anywhere to hide. Almost everyone in China, perhaps even the whole world, now knew his name and face, as well as the fact that he was supposedly the head of a terrorist group.

The girls all cried out in their hearts... why did things turn out like this?!

Shui Ruo had died. That gentle, beautiful girl, who they treated as their close sister had left them forever. All of them could see how deeply she loved Ling Tian, as well as Ling Tian's love for her... they remembered that the last time they had said their goodbyes, they were all laughing and smiling, and had set the time and place for their next meeting. No one could have thought that all of a sudden, they would never be able to see her again...

Even now, they found it difficult to accept Shui Ruo's death. They desperately tried to believe that the information was wrong, or that they had mixed her up with someone else...

Now, even Ling Tian's life or death was uncertain, and there was no news at all about Tian Tian. Xiao Qi, Su'Er and Meng Xin all watched the news every day, fearful that Ling Tian or Tian Tian had been discovered.

Xiao Qiu Feng walked to the door and heard Xiao Qi crying. These days, her eyes had become redder and redder from crying. This girl, who had never cried about her disease, had been crying non-stop these three days. Xiao Qiu Feng quietly walked over, and turned off the TV as he gently said, “Qi Qi, don’t cry anymore. Ling Tian definitely got away-I saw someone carrying him and running away. We tried to look for him, but only found the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, but not Ling Tian. He should be far away, at a safe place. With his abilities, he’ll definitely be fine, so don’t worry.”

The Dark Eagles were annihilated, Blood Wolves and Steel Dragons were almost destroyed, Xuanyuan Xiong Tian had been severely injured, Xuanyuan Sheng had been crippled and Xuanyuan Dao had also received heavy injuries... the information Xiao Qiu Feng received had shocked the wits out of him. All of this was done by Ling Tian singlehandedly. In the virtual world, he was the overlord. Who would have thought that he would be so monstrous in the real world as well! When putting the Long family’s efforts in finding Ling Chen into context with this information, it did not seem excessive at all.

Hearing Xiao Qiu Feng’s voice, Xiao Qi quickly wiped off her tears as she asked him, “Why... Why didn’t you save him! Why... Why!!!”

Seeing Xiao Qi like this, Xiao Qiu Feng could only shake his head and sigh as he replied, “The scent of blood on him was too strong, which made it easy for him to be tracked. If I brought him here, then my entire Battle Alliance would be dragged into this... I can’t sacrifice my entire Xiao family and the countless brothers and sisters in the Battle Alliance for a single person. I already did all

that I could on that night... we'll have to see what fate has in store for him.”

“But you should have saved him! If something happens to big brother Ling Tian, I... I...”

“Alright, alright, it was my fault. I've confessed my sins many times now.” Xiao Qiu Feng said, his face incredibly apologetic. In front of his little sister, Xiao Qiu Feng didn't have a bit of his “Cold Magistrate” appearance. He patted Xiao Qi's shoulder as he softly said, “Qi Qi, Ling Tian isn't a normal person, so he won't die that easily. It's already been three days, so he should be far away by now. Dad has already sent people to search for and check up on him. If there's any news, I'll let you know immediately... and also, your big sister Mu Bing Yao has recovered from her injuries incredibly quickly. She should be able to wake up today, if you want to go and see her.”

“Really?” This was the only good piece of news Xiao Qi had received these days. She quickly got up, and rushed out.

There was a puddle of tears left on the couch by Xiao Qi. Xiao Qiu Feng silently stared at it, and an expression of grief appeared in his eyes as he said “Ling Tian, don't die. Otherwise, Qi Qi will really be devastated.”

“Ah!! Big sister Bing Yao! Big sister Bing Yao, you're awake! Thank goodness!”

Xiao Qi's shout of joy soon became sobbing. Mu Bing Yao had

woken up faster than anyone had expected. Perhaps it was because she was worried about Ling Chen, so she tried to wake up as fast as possible.

“A single person killed 11 Blood Wolves and 13 Savage Tigers... she’s indeed the Frozen Hearted Man-eater. This would shock anyone.”

That night, when Xiao Qiu Feng and his subordinates had finally caught up, Mu Bing Yao was already covered in blood and completely exhausted. She wasn’t facing off against normal soldiers, but against the expert Blood Wolves and Savage Tigers. What completely blew their minds was that she had already killed 20 of them by the time they had arrived, and the remaining ones were all hurt quite heavily. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for the people he brought to finish them off. After the bloody battle had finally concluded, Mu Bing Yao immediately fell to the ground, unconscious. They brought her back to the Battle Alliance, as she had not gone to the Long family’s residence, and all the people who had seen her were dead.

They had never thought that she would also be one of Ling Chen’s subordinates. Xiao Qiu Feng did not disturb Xiao Qi and the newly-awoken Mu Bing Yao. He picked up his phone, and contacted Yun Feng.

“Any news?” He directly asked.

“Nothing... not even a clue.” Yun Feng’s voice sounded

incredibly tired. He practically hadn't slept at all for the past few days, and his eyes were completely bloodshot.

“No news is good news,” Xiao Qiu Feng said as he sighed, “If you can't find him, perhaps the Long family won't be able to find him either. Their skills at counterespionage should be just as monstrous as their skills in fighting. Yun Feng, you should rest. We've done all we can already. Come to think of it, what sort of person is Ling Tian? What's his background? How can he possibly be so strong, and what does he have against the Long family?”

“I don't know the answers to those questions either. When I met him, I tried to ask, and I also did my own investigations. However, I wasn't able to find out anything. Out of respect for him, I decided not to pursue the matter any further. It seems that the Long family doesn't know why Ling Tian hates them so much either. In this world, perhaps only Ling Tian knows. However, now that Ling Shui Ruo has been killed by the Long family... just this is enough for him to completely and irreconcilably hate the Long family. If he survives, the consequences will be terrifying for them.”

“Forget it, you should get some sleep. Also, be careful-the Long family's intelligence network isn't just for show.”

“Don't worry, all of the evidence left behind on that night were left behind to misdirect them. At least, it's impossible for them to suspect us. Without any solid proof, they wouldn't dare to accuse us.” Yun Feng tiredly said as he hung up. He was worried about Ling Chen, as well as Meng Xin...

Xiao Qi, who had just started talking to Mu Bing Yao, suddenly

received a call from Su'Er, who was within the game.

Su'Er was crying worriedly as she yelled, “Qi Qi... wuu... Qi Qi, quickly come over! The Yan Huang Alliance is attacking our Heart's Dream's home... wuu... quickly come....”

Xiao Qi's eyes widened as a buzz went through her head.

Chapter 339 - The Destruction Of Heart's Dream (2)

No matter how big or small an official guild was, what determined its life or death was the same: the guild sign with the guild name written on it. It was the symbol of a guild, and was the most important thing to a guild. During battles between guilds, even if not a single player died, but the guild sign was destroyed, the guild would still be disbanded. Conversely, even if all the players of a guild died, as long as their guild sign was still fine, their guild would still remain in existence.

If a guild was destroyed, they could use a Guild Creation Token to immediately re-establish their guild. From the sound of it, a guild being destroyed wasn't that big of a deal. However, the destruction of a guild didn't just mean that it would be temporarily disbanded—the guild's communication channel would be unusable, making it almost impossible to coordinate as a guild. Re-establishing the guild into the exact same condition would be almost impossible. Destroyed guilds that were re-established would not even be as half as powerful as they were before destruction. Moreover, a destroyed guild's fame and morale would also plummet. For large guilds, being destroyed meant that they would lose much of the time, effort and money invested into the guild, and the guild would never be able to fully recover. Also, if a guild was destroyed, they would directly fall to the bottom of the rankings if they were re-established.

As such, protecting the guild sign was one of the most important things for a guild. Of course, because guild signs determined the life and death of a guild, they would not be destroyed so easily. They would often be placed in the most secure place in the guild,

behind all of the guild's defences. Most of these defences were incredibly difficult to destroy within a short period of time. Once the guild was under attack, all of its players would be immediately notified, and they would quickly rush back to the guild to protect it.

As such, unless there was a great gap in power between the attackers and defenders, it would be quite difficult to destroy a guild sign. Moreover, as a guild's level rose, their defences would also become more powerful. The headquarters of a guild wasn't just the main meeting place of a guild; it was also where their guild sign was kept. If a guild wanted to develop, they would need to increase their number of players. As such, most guild headquarters were publicly known. However, there were exceptions, such as the Dark Night. Although the Dark Night was publicly recognised as one of the three strongest guilds, they never recruited people. As such, no one knew where their headquarters were. Those who wanted to destroy the Dark Night did not even know where to start looking. However, how many other special guilds were there like the Dark Night? Without any new blood, it would be almost impossible to develop.

Since Mystic Moon had opened, there was another guild that was incredibly famous, but hadn't recruited any people... and that was the number one ranked guild created by the number one player Ling Tian, Heart's Dream.

It was impossible for a guild not to have a headquarters. It was like a seed not having dirt to grow in. The guild sign couldn't be put in one's bag, and it was impossible to keep it on a person 24/7. As such, when Ling Chen established Heart's Dream, he put the guild sign in their unimpressive little room. They had less than 10

people, so he had no plans to move to a larger, more obvious place. Because the little room had their guild sign, it became their temporary headquarters. Because the guild sign was there, any member of Heart's Dream could directly teleport from any place within the Azure Dragon City to there, which was one of the functions of a headquarters. Of course, this was only a temporary headquarters. Within one month of the guild being established, they could change their headquarters at any time without being attacked, due to the protections. However, after one month, it would be much more difficult to change headquarters.

Currently, it had already been one month since Heart's Dream had been officially established, and Heart's Dream had lost the one-month protection. As for the little room that they kept their guild sign in, they had all come to accept that place as their headquarters. Normally, residential areas couldn't be damaged, unless weapons had the incredibly rare 'destruction element'. However, because it was the headquarters of a guild, it could be attacked and forcefully entered into. Attacks against the little room also would not alert the City Guards.

When Xiao Qi logged on, she appeared right next to Heart's Dream's headquarters. What she saw caused her great pain in her heart.

Bang!!

A clear sound rang out as the building's door collapsed. Afterwards, a large crowd of players holding weapons charged in.

There were players everywhere-so many that most of them could

barely move. It was completely different to the usual peacefulness of the residential district. These people all had a tattoo of a golden dragon with five claws on their arms, under which were words “Yan Huang”. Underneath the emblem of the Yan Huang Alliance were the branch they belonged to, as well as their position... in the distance, there were also many spectators watching...

“No... No!!!” Xiao Qi stood in shock for a few moments before crying out and rushing over. She gripped the Spectre Staff that Ling Chen had given her in her hands, preparing to attack.

“Qi Qi...”

She had only run a few steps when she was pulled over by someone. The voice in her ear caused her to stop, and she turned around to see Yun Meng Xin, who was wearing a white veil, and a tearful Su’Er.

“Don’t go over...” Yun Meng Xin shook her head... her actions were all incredibly slow, due to the grief in her heart.

The Yan Huang Alliance had mobilised a whole three thousand players...

It wasn’t known if Heart’s Dream’s strongest player, Ling Tian, was alive or dead, and Shui Ruo had passed away. Tian Tian was also missing, and Mu Bing Yao had just woken up, and was incredibly weak... the only ones who were online were the three of them.

In this period of time, their faith and confidence in Ling Chen had reached unimaginable heights, because he had performed miracle after miracle. If he was here, no matter what they were facing, they would not be afraid. Even if there were 30,000 players attacking their guild, they wouldn't despair at all...

However, what could they, three girls, do against three thousand Yan Huang Alliance players? If they went to stop them, they would just die for nothing.

“Big sister Meng Xin, Su Su... But... But...”

A system announcement suddenly sounded in their ears.

“Ding... your guild Heart's Dream's guild sign has been destroyed. Heart's Dream will be disbanded.”

Their guild communication channel disappeared, and the words “Heart's Dream” in their player information also disappeared.

Although they knew what was coming, but hearing this system announcement, they still felt utterly devastated.

“Ding... China Region Announcement. The first guild, Heart's Dream's guild sign has been destroyed, and the guild has been disbanded. The Guild Rankings have now been updated. Please view the Guild Rankings for the updated rankings.”

The announcement was broadcast to every player in China. Only

when a guild on the Guild Rankings was destroyed would they be eligible for this 'special glory'. Opening the Guild Ranking, what they saw was that Heart's Dream had disappeared, and of course, the number 2 Yan Huang Alliance had become number 1, with no one else on the rankings. This was the main reason why they had destroyed Heart's Dream. They had always been the number 1 guild, and their name represented fame, glory and power. How could they be satisfied with being number 2?

Xiao Qi stared into the distance, as Su'Er cried her heart out. Yun Meng Xin stood there silently as she watched the little house they were so familiar with crumbling into ruins.

Ling Tian, Ruo Ruo Loves Chen, Tian Tian Tian Tian, Cute Qi Qi, Su Su, Mu Bing Yao and Meng Yu You Xin... just a few days ago, they had been discussing the future of Heart's Dream, as well as their progression towards Meng Xin's goal. They watched as their Heart's Dream grew, and planned for their future...

However, in just a single night, everything had changed.

Ling Chen was the support for Heart's Dream. If he left, Heart's Dream would instantly crumble. Right now, with him missing, the Yan Huang Alliance used this opportunity to destroy their guild... the girls could only watch as their beloved guild was destroyed. To them, Heart's Dream wasn't just a guild-it was a dream that they worked for together, and now it had been obliterated...

Tears streamed down the three girls' faces. They had gotten together to help Meng Xin achieve her dream. Heart's Dream was created for Meng Xin, but due to their combined efforts, their

hearts had all bonded together, and Meng Xin's dream had become their collective dream.

In the distance, two groups of people hurriedly ran over, and stopped in the distance. In front of the groups of people were Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng. They had heard the system announcement on the way, and there was nothing more they could do. They could only look at the three girls and sighed.

Chapter 340 - Waking Up (1)

At an area in between Beijing and [Bei Zhou](#).

[TLN: ‘Bei’ means North and ‘Zhou’ means region or province].

There were wild trees, flowers, and grass as far as the eye could see. It seemed to be a mountainous forest region, which was quite rare in this day and age, due to the gradual urbanisation of these sorts of areas. Further north, there were quite a few pieces of farmland, both big and small, and even further north, there were some roughly built houses.

This place was probably a small village.

The little girl looked around ten years old, and her light blue dress had many holes on it. Her little legs were covered with scratches, blood and mud, and her hair was a complete mess. Her face was also covered in mud, and there were many cuts on her head, presumably from falling over many times. However, her eyes were pure and sparkling like a precious gem. She opened the wooden door, and anxiously looked at the smiling forty-year old housewife. She embarrassedly asked, “Aunty, can you... give me some more sugar?”

“You finished it? Come, child, sit down with me. I’ve got a lot of yummy things here.” The middle-aged housewife said with a kind smile. The first time she met this girl was three days ago. Seeing her condition, she deduced that she had probably fallen from a hill somewhere. Many people had often fallen from that hill before. Although her clothes were tattered and dirty, they still looked quite pretty. When she had first met her, the girl’s face had been

full of anxiousness and fear, but she had still mustered up the courage to ask for some white sugar... the woman later found out that the girl had gone to many different houses, asking for some sugar, and finally left with the sugar and some porridge.

There were less than a hundred families living in this village, and they were all fairly well off, as well as kind and generous. This girl had an incredibly beautiful pair of eyes, and she was so cute that anyone would instantly like her. As such, all of the villagers who had any of the things she wanted gladly gave them to her... on the first day, she hugged a big bag of white sugar as she left. She ran very quickly, as if she was in a hurry. Those who were curious and wanted to follow her could only give up.

Yesterday, she had once again come and asked for some food. She looked quite anxious, and softly said a “thank you”, then hurriedly left again.

This time, when she saw her again, she looked slightly skinnier than before. Anyone seeing her like this would feel compassion for her. She wanted to let this girl stay and have a good meal, as well as a bath. She was probably an incredibly pretty girl under all the blood and mud on her. However, the girl shook her head, “Thank you aunty, but... but I can’t leave for too long. I just need some sugar, aunty...”

Seeing how incredibly anxious she looked, the housewife could only give in as she immediately replied, “Alright, alright, I’ll go get some for you now.”

Very soon, the housewife returned with a very large bag, and put

it in the girl's arms as she said, "Here, this is for you."

This was almost everything she had. It was more than what the girl had received from all the villagers on the first day. The girl received it, and tightly hugged it. Her eyes trembled as she sincerely said, "Thank you, aunty. In future, I'll definitely repay you."

"Don't worry about that. Just take care of yourself, otherwise your family will worry about you." The housewife said warmly.

"I... I will. Goodbye, aunty."

"Ah... I also have some fruit..."

After receiving the things, the girl immediately ran off, as if there was something incredibly important that she needed to do. She didn't hear the housewife's call at all. The middle-aged housewife shook her head as she said to herself, "Why did she want so much white sugar... it doesn't seem like it was for herself."

After running past a small forest and a creek, the girl arrived at a place where there were many rocks and wild grasses. She ran as fast as she could, afraid that she would not get back in time. Very soon, she saw the largest rock in the area, and ran over.

A person was lying on the other side of the rock...He was lying on a very thick pile of soft grass, and the rock blocked the sunlight from shining on his body. His facial features couldn't be clearly

seen, due to the blood and wounds on his face. His clothes had almost been completely destroyed, and his entire body was red from being covered in blood, and emanated a bloody stench.

Three days and nights had passed. Today was the fourth day, and yet he still had not shown any signs of waking.

The girl came to his side, and seeing how peacefully he was sleeping, her worries disappeared. She picked up a small bowl and looked at him as she softly said, “Big brother, wait for a bit while I make some food.”

She took the bowl and some sugar to the creek. She poured some clear creek water into the bowl, then washed her hands in the creek. She poured some of the sugar into the bowl, and stirred the water, watching as the sugar dissolved into the water.

The creek was so clear that the bottom of the creek could be clearly seen. On the surface of the water, the girl saw her bloodied and dirtied face. She was a girl who liked to look pretty, and before, even if she wasn't going out, she would ask her big sister to put on pretty clothes for her and do her hair. She was the type who would take baths or showers twice a day, but now, she couldn't afford to worry about such things... her entire world had collapsed in a single night, and the only person she had left was her big brother, who was still unconscious.

A breeze blew past, and the surface of the water became distorted. As she stirred the water in the bowl, blankly staring into the water, she could almost see a scene from the past...

“Tian Tian’s very pretty, no matter what she wears. She’s even prettier than the princesses in stories. When she grows up, there’ll definitely be a lot of boys falling for her. Ah... big brother, come and give Tian Tian a kiss as well.”

“Tian Tian, what do you want to eat today? Do you want to learn how to cook from big sister?”

“Here Tian Tian, these are all your favourites. You have to eat slowly though-if you eat too fast, it’ll be bad for your body.”

“We’re a family now, so of course we’ll always be together.”

“Big sister... Big sister... wuuu... Big sister...”

By the time she had finished crying, the sugar had finished dissolving. The girl wiped off her tears, and carefully held the bowl as she walked back. She would be strong for her big brother-even if she was going to cry, she wouldn’t cry in front of him.

The creek water mixed with the sugar became very sweet. The girl struggled as she propped up the man against the rock. She brought the bowl to her mouth, and took in a large mouthful. She then put down the bowl, and opened the man’s pale lips. She pressed her lips against his, and carefully transferred the sweet water into his mouth, bit by bit. Her actions were incredibly gentle, as if he was a delicate doll.

On the night he had come back incredibly injured, he had been unconscious for three days. The girl remembered that her big sister would feed him sugared water like this every day. She said that because he was unconscious, he would be unable to eat, and it would be best for him not to eat any oily food or meats. As such, while he was unconscious, the girl mustered up her courage to ask around for sugar, and made it into sugared water, then fed it to him just like her big sister had done.

All of the people here were very friendly and kind, but she didn't want them to know about her big brother. Although she didn't know exactly what was going on, she knew that there were a lot of people who wanted to catch them. As such, she didn't want to take any risks.

It had been three days and three nights since she had woken up. It was only three days, but she felt that it was an incredibly long time. Every minute spent waiting for her big brother to wake up was extremely painful.

Her efforts did not go unrewarded. Every day, the man's breathing became calmer and calmer, as well as stronger and stronger. The countless wounds on his body also began to close. Now, half of them had healed already. Many of the minor injuries had already fully healed... this sort of monstrous recovery was seen only in movies.

These changes also gave the girl much hope and motivation. Apart from when she was asking for some food from the villagers, she would stay by his side, afraid that he would wake up when she

wasn't there.

After a long time, she finally finished feeding the bowl of sugared water to him. The girl helped him back down onto the soft grass, and curled up, leaning against the big rock. She stared at him as she waited...

Big brother, hurry and wake up... you said that you would protect me and take of me forever... you promised...

The girl's eyes once again became damp. However, she bit her lips and forced the tears back.

At this moment, Ling Chen's right pinky finger slightly moved.

Chapter 341 - Waking Up (2)

Where is this? Am I still alive...

Ling Chen's mind began to awaken, and the memories from before he fell unconscious flooded in. Instantly, his heart was filled with incredible pain.

He wished that this was all a nightmare, and that everything would be fine when he woke up. However, he knew that no matter how he lied to himself, Shui Ruo was gone. He had watched as Shui Ruo had died in his arms-he had been powerless to do anything about it...

Ruo Ruo... why did you leave me...

Ling Chen's heart bled as he recalled the events that had transpired. Facing the reality that Shui Ruo was dead made him feel like 10,000 arrows had pierced his heart, and he wished that he could immediately die... if he died, then he could be with Shui Ruo and wouldn't have to suffer this pain anymore.

But... But...

Shui Ruo's image appeared in his mind. She was as beautiful as a goddess, but she was so far away that he couldn't reach her.

"Big brother... do you remember the three things that you promised me? Make sure you keep your promises, big brother. I'll

be watching over big brother and Tian Tian from heaven. Now that I'm gone, big brother needs to take care of Tian Tian and protect her, just like you took care of me and protected me. Tian Tian will stay by you in my place, alright...

Shui Ruo's voice gradually faded, and although his heart bled, but he didn't chase after her. After all, it was just an illusion...

From his memory, he had lost control of his emotions after Shui Ruo had passed away. His hands, which had not shed blood in six years for Shui Ruo, had savagely killed many people, then went to the Long family by himself... he wanted to take revenge, then be with Shui Ruo. When he went there, he was half awake, and half berserk. Bodies fell down in front of him as limbs and blood flew everywhere. He lost count of how many people he had killed, and he became like a bloodthirsty Shura. The memories flowed clearly in, as they replayed in his mind... in the end, he had used the last of his strength to injure Xuanyuan Dao and clasp onto Long Tian Yun's neck...

However, that was when he had run out of energy, and he had collapsed to the ground. Afterwards, he had been woken up by Mu Bing Yao's voice. He had heard every single word, and remembered each and every one of them.

Tian Tian...

Where was Tian Tian... how was she... was she hurt... had she been captured...

... She's definitely fine... she's definitely waiting for me... Mu Bing Yao said that she's at a safe place, so she has to be safe.

Ling Chen's worry for Tian Tian became the fuel for his recovery. He tried to open his eyes to confirm that Tian Tian was safe, which caused his consciousness to start to struggle. His mental energy was extremely strong, and his injuries had been healed by half. Soon, he was able to slightly open his eyes. The light from outside, which he had not seen for days, poured into his eyes, and he quickly closed them.

His entire body was numb, and fiery pain came from every inch of his body. However, he did not feel that his throat was dry or in pain, and there was a sweet taste in his mouth. He once again tried to open his eyes, and he saw the blue sky and white clouds. He could also hear water flowing in the distance, and the smell of grass filled his nose... as well as the stench of blood on him.

Where... where was this?

When he woke up, he was faced with a completely unfamiliar world. He raised his arm, and although it felt incredibly weak, he knew that it would be able to recover. Although Xuanyuan Sheng had almost chopped off his arm, he could still feel it. The pain from his body told him that although there were countless wounds on him, some of which were quite serious, there weren't any parts that would be crippled. Most of his injuries, including his half-severed arm, would have started to rot already, and nothing would have been able to restore them... if he was a normal person. However, after just a few days of rest, all of his injuries had begun to heal.

He knew that the body the Mad Scientist had spent three years on improving had once again saved him. However, that didn't mean he was grateful towards the Mad Scientist-he only felt hatred and fear towards him. Instructor Hell was incredibly powerful, but Ling Chen was able to defeat him. However, although the Mad Scientist was skinny and weak, Ling Chen couldn't see through him at all. Whenever Ling Chen thought about him, he would inwardly shudder.

Ling Chen looked around, and saw a large rock, as well as a girl who was leaning against it with her eyes closed. She was curled up like a small cat as she slept. Her two little hands were holding tightly onto his clothing. Her clothing looked very familiar to Ling Chen-it was a dress that Shui Ruo had bought for her only a week ago. Now, it was torn and tattered, and her face was covered with blood and mud... seeing this scene, Ling Chen's heart ached.

He never would have thought that the first thing he saw when he woke up was Tian Tian.

It was very quiet, as there was no one else around apart from them. Looking around, he saw a small bowl, as well as a large bag of white sugar. There were many hills and small forests around, and not a single person could be seen. Ling Chen once again looked at Tian Tian. He saw that her little legs were covered with cuts... as well as her socks, which were dyed with blood.

Instantly, Ling Chen couldn't breathe, as his heart clenched in pain.

He immediately understood what had happened.

Ling Chen's hand trembled as he reached over to touch Tian Tian's face. Feeling something on her face, Tian Tian slowly woke up, and she opened her hazy eyes. The moment she saw Ling Chen, she sat up like she had been electrocuted...

"Tian Tian..." Ling Chen gently said. The injuries he had suffered that night were even worse than when he had been injured by Hell. He was awake, but his body was still extremely weak, and didn't even have the strength to stand up. However, since he was awake, his body would be able to recover even faster. In half a day, he would be able to move around again. Tian Tian stared at him, unable to move or say anything. Tears that she had been holding back began to stream down her face...

"Big brother!!" All of her emotions were contained in this shout. She leapt onto Ling Chen's body as she cried and cried.

Shui Ruo's death was a massive blow to both Ling Chen and Tian Tian. However, the nightmare did not end on that night. Tian Tian not only lost her big sister, but almost lost her big brother as well. When she had seen him again, he was covered in blood and close to death. Even when her body was so weak, she still carried him on her own shoulders as she walked and walked...

She had lost her big sister, but refused to lose her big brother as well. This fuelled her determination and persistence... she had walked for an entire night without resting. Even though she had fallen unconscious, she had woken up in just a few hours. She had spent each day in constant fear and worry. She did not have any

yummy food, pretty clothes, comfortable showers, or anyone to play games with her or to hug her to sleep... in her fear and worry, she had suppressed the weakness inside of her, and did her best to wake up her last family member.

At last, he had finally woken up. She hugged him as all of her fear, pain and shock were released through her tears and crying. She was crying so hard that she could barely breathe, and she couldn't say a single word.

After all, she was just a ten year old child, and what she had just gone through was far too cruel.

Hearing her cry, Ling Chen's heart was about to shatter. He stretched out and gently hugged her, and let her cry to her heart's content. He, who had not wanted to wake up, suddenly felt incredibly glad that he had woken up. The smell of the blood on his body told him that nearly four days had passed...

Four days...

How much pain had she endured in these four days...

Ling Chen shook those thoughts out of his head as he silently hugged her.

After a while, Tian Tian's crying gradually began to subside. Her crying had taken up nearly all of her energy, and she lay on Ling Chen's body. Her tears left a big wet patch on his clothes. Finally,

she raised her head with tears still leaking out of her eyes. She was afraid that this was all in her head as she said, “Big... big brother... wuu... you’re awake... thank goodness... wuu...”

“Tian Tian...” Ling Chen softly said, unable to say anything else.

Tian Tian lay on his body and hugged him tightly as she sobbed, “Big brother... don’t leave me behind... we said that we’d be together... forever... now that big sister’s gone... I’m so sad... big brother’s also really sad... but I still have big brother, and big brother still has me... I’ll definitely listen to big brother in future... and be as good as big sister... don’t leave me behind... I don’t want big brother to die... wuu...”

She knew that on that night, Ling Chen had gone to get revenge, as well as to die.

That night, Ling Chen had no intention of returning alive. He fully intended to throw the Long family into chaos, and then die there as well.

However, he had forgotten about Tian Tian, the girl he had promised to care for and protect.

Ling Chen felt extremely pained and remorseful. His eyes were also slightly damp, as he softly said, “How could I leave Tian Tian behind... I’m sorry, Tian Tian. In future, I won’t do anything stupid like this, and I’ll live on... I’ll live on and protect Tian Tian and care for Tian Tian forever.”

Looking at Tian Tian's tear-stained face, he did not feel any hesitation or regret as he said those words. His life had been saved by Tian Tian, so it no longer belonged to just himself. Even if it was only for Tian Tian, he would live on.

“Really?” Ling Chen's words startled Tian Tian. She looked at him for a long time, before stretching out the pinky finger on her right hand, “Big brother needs to keep his promises. Otherwise... otherwise...”

Ling Chen smiled, and entwined his pinky finger with hers, “I'll definitely keep my promises forever and ever, otherwise I'll become a puppy in my next life.”

Tian Tian tearfully smiled. This was the first time she had smiled in days, but it was just as beautiful as ever.

Chapter 342 - An Uncertain Future (1)

Shui Ruo's death was like a thorn that had stabbed into both Ling Chen's and Tian Tian's hearts, causing them unimaginable grief. No matter if it was Ling Chen or Tian Tian, the pain would remain for a long time... maybe even forever. Luckily, Ling Chen had woken up. They had each other, and even if they were in pain, at least there wasn't any despair. Their agreement not to leave each other reflected Shui Ruo's wishes.

Ling Chen's incredible constitution caused his body to quickly recover once he was awake, and his strength also came back quickly. There were originally more than 10 cuts on his face, but now they had more or less healed, and there weren't any scars. This monstrous recovery rate had saved him from death countless times. Injuries that were sufficient to kill normal people numerous times could be recovered in just days.

By the afternoon, Ling Chen was capable of walking. He moved his limbs around, and apart from the fiery pain in his body, he didn't feel any other discomfort. This allowed him to put away his worries. He stretched out his left hand, and saw that the five holes pierced by the Blood Wolves' leader had nearly fully recovered. After a few days, even the marks would be gone.

While he was recovering his strength, Tian Tian had been leaning against him the whole time. She gripped on to his clothes tightly, as if she was afraid that he would disappear if she let go. He put his arm around Tian Tian's little body as he softly said, "Tian Tian, after I left that night, what happened? Can you tell me what you know?"

His last two memories were of him holding Long Tian Yun by the neck, then powerlessly falling to the ground, as well as Mu Bing Yao calling him awake, and then falling unconscious again. What happened in between these two memories, as well as afterwards, he had no idea. He guessed that it was Gui Ya and the others who had rushed to the Long family to rescue him. However, with the Long family's defences, in order to do so, they must have paid a heavy price...

He remembered Mu Bing Yao telling him that Gui Dao was dead... perhaps, in order to save him, even more of his subordinates had died that night. After he woke up, he saw Tian Tian, but not Mu Bing Yao... Ling Chen deduced that they were being chased, and so Mu Bing Yao stalled them while Tian Tian carried him and escaped...

Ling Chen simply couldn't imagine how Tian Tian carried him so far on her weak body. They were at a place so far away and so remote that the Long family still hadn't found them. Seeing the blood on her socks and shoes, Ling Chen felt as if a steel blade had pierced into his heart.

Because of Tian Tian, and because of his fallen comrades, he didn't have any reason to selfishly seek death anymore.

Tian Tian nodded and leaned closer to Ling Chen. Now that he had woken up, she was not afraid anymore. She began to speak, "That night, when everyone found out that big brother was gone, they were all really worried. Big brother Gui Ya said he knew where you went, and he took everyone to find you. In the end, it

was just me and big sister Bing Yao. We wanted to go and see big sister, but we found that she was gone.”

Ling Chen, who had been silently listening, suddenly looked at Tian Tian in shock, and his breathing became irregular. He unconsciously grabbed on to Tian Tian’s hand tightly as he asked, “You said... Ruo Ruo was gone? What do you mean? What happened?”

“I don’t know, I don’t know either.” Tian Tian shook her head in fear. She felt extremely helpless as she continued, “When we found that big brother was gone, she was still there. We all saw her. However, after big brother Gui Ya and the others left, she... disappeared. Big sister Bing Yao and I looked around for a long time, but we couldn’t find her. It was as if... she suddenly vanished. Big sister Bing Yao and I were really scared, but no matter where we looked, we simply couldn’t find her.”

“... How much time passed in between you guys discovering that I was gone and discovering that Ruo Ruo was gone?” Ling Chen hurriedly asked. Shui Ruo’s death had catastrophic effects on him, and hearing that her body had disappeared, he just couldn’t remain calm. Could his Ruo Ruo not have any peace, even in death?

“About... About a minute in total.” Tian Tian said in a small voice.

About a minute in total...

At that time, Gui Ya, Mu Bing Yao and everyone else had been there, and must have been very close by. Ling Chen knew that with their abilities, they would immediately know if a normal person came within 50 metres of them. Even Ling Chen wouldn't be able to stealthily take away a body without them noticing at all.

Who did it? What had happened? Could it really be possible that Shui Ruo's body just vanished by itself...

Ling Chen's heart couldn't calm down. He stood up, and looked in the direction that Beijing was in. Both his gaze and body were trembling.

He wanted to know what had happened, as well as find Shui Ruo. Although she had passed away, at least... he at least wanted her to rest in peace. He didn't want her body to just vanish like this...

Tian Tian knew where he was looking. She became extremely scared, and tightly hugged him from behind as she began to cry again, "Big brother! Don't go... please don't go! It's so dangerous right now, and I don't want anything to happen to you... You just promised me that you would live on, and that you wouldn't leave me behind... big brother... don't go... wuu..."

The back of Ling Chen became wet, and he closed his eyes. He gripped his fists tightly, so tight that they became white and almost started bleeding. He knew that he was probably being looked for all over China, and after seeing his power, the Long family definitely wouldn't allow him to continue to live. There was definitely an inescapable net waiting for him back in Beijing. If he went, he would almost certainly be entering into their trap. But...

But...

Ruo Ruo... where are you... what should I do... tell me what I should do

.....

“No... you can’t die!! We worked so hard to save you, and many of us paid great prices... did you know, in order to cover our escape, Gui Dao blew himself up with explosives... if you die, then who will take revenge for all our fallen brothers and sisters? Did you forget how Ruo Ruo died? Don’t you want to take revenge for her? Live, live on!”

.....

“Master... I know you’re extremely sad from Ruo Ruo passing away. We feel the same way as well! However... you still have us... we’re still here for you! There’s also Tian Tian! We’ll always be here for you... even if you chase us away, we’ll never leave!! Would you really bear to leave us behind? Especially Tian Tian... she’s already lost her big sister... do you know how devastated she would be to lose you as well? If you die, who will look after and protect Tian Tian?” “Big brother... make sure you take care of Tian Tian. Tian Tian will be by your side from now on. Make sure you live out my share of happiness as well, alright...”

.....

“Big brother... don’t leave me behind... we said that we’d be together... forever... now that big sister’s gone... I’m so sad... big brother’s also really sad... but I still have big brother, and big brother still has me... I’ll definitely listen to big brother in future... and be as good as big sister... don’t leave me behind... I don’t want big brother to die... wuu...”

.....

Mu Bing Yao’s shouts, Shui Ruo’s gentle words and Tian Tian’s crying all sounded out in his mind. He let out the breath that he had been holding, and turned around. He lifted Tian Tian up and hugged her, as if she was a little doll. He walked in the direction opposite to Beijing as he said, “Don’t cry, Tian Tian. I already promised Tian Tian that I wouldn’t do anything like that anymore, and that I would take care of Tian Tian forever. I’ll live safely, and won’t do any dangerous things or go to any dangerous places, alright?”

Tian Tian stopped crying, and tightly hugged Ling Chen.

“So what happened after that?” Ling Chen asked as he walked towards where the sound of water was coming from.

“Afterwards... we couldn’t find big sister, so I started crying. After that, lots of people came to our home, and big sister Bing Yao took me and left. We went somewhere really far away, where there were no other people. Big sister Bing Yao left me at a really big tree, and told me to wait for her. She said she was going to save big brother...”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“After that, I just waited there. After a long time, I heard big sister Bing Yao calling me. When I saw big brother, you weren’t moving at all, and you were covered in blood. I was so, so scared. Big sister Bing Yao told me that big brother was still alive, and then told me to take big brother somewhere far away, and not to stop or turn back. I carried big brother and kept walking... I don’t know how long I walked or how far. Even after the sun began to rise, I kept walking. At some point, I fell over... and when I woke up, we were here...”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Ling Chen silently listened to Tian Tian as he walked. Soon, a creek with incredibly clear water appeared in front of them. The water that Tian Tian had been feeding him every day came from here. Ling Chen stopped walking, and placed Tian Tian on top of a flat rock near the creek. He wiped away the tears on her face, then gently touched the cuts on her face as he softly asked, “Does it hurt?”

“It doesn’t hurt.” Tian Tian vigorously shook her head. Since she began to live with Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, she had not even hurt her little finger before. However, in just a few days, she had suffered countless injuries, all for Ling Chen.

Chapter 343 - An Uncertain Future (2)

Ling Chen did not say anything else. He gently ran his fingers over each cut, and then used the water from the creek to help Tian Tian wash her face. After the dirt and blood was washed off, her milky-white skin once again could be seen. Ling Chen helped her do her hair and cupped her face in his hands as he smiled, “Now this is my incredibly pretty Tian Tian. When you grow up, you’ll definitely be as beautiful as your big sister.”

Tian Tian looked into his eyes, and nodded as she smiled. This was the first time her big brother had washed her face and done her hair for her. It felt just as heart-warming as when her big sister did it for her, and she felt incredibly blissful.

Ling Chen looked down and saw her bloodied socks and shoes. He held Tian Tian in his arms as he carefully took off the originally snow-white shoes, causing Tian Tian to yelp in pain. The dried blood had stuck her feet to her socks and shoes—he could only imagine how much pain she had endured while walking. Ling Chen’s heart ached, seeing this scene... on that night, she had carried him on her body for an entire night, and her feet had been damaged to such an extent... what right did he have to selfishly seek death?

The sight of the dried blood on her socks caused Ling Chen to breathe in a breath of cold air. After so many days, her feet had long been stuck to the socks. Ling Chen held her small feet, but didn’t dare to take off the socks. His chest rose and fell as his breathing became ragged. After a while, he put Tian Tian down, saying, “Tian Tian, wait for me here. I’ll be right back.”

Ling Chen didn't dare go too far, in case Tian Tian got worried. There were many different plants growing around the area, and he quickly found what he was looking for. He grabbed a handful of green leaves and grass, and came back to Tian Tian. He put down the leaves and grass in a pile, and squatted down, before carefully rolling down Tian Tian's socks.

"Big brother... I..." Tian Tian knew what he was going to do, and her whole body became tense.

When the socks were rolled close to where the blood had dried, Ling Chen stopped. He held Tian Tian's small feet, gently massaging them as he smiled and said, "Tian Tian, I'm going to ask you a question. You need to carefully think about it, alright?"

Tian Tian instantly became curious, "Eh? What question is it?"

Ling Chen thought for a while, before saying, "A woman was giving a speech in front of a crowd, when suddenly a man burst into the room, shot her seven times, before calmly walking away. No one panicked or chased after the man-why was this?"

"Shot her seven times... no one panicked or chased after him..." Tian Tian became extremely serious as she thought about the question, before weakly answering, "Because... the man was invisible?"

"Nope," Ling Chen shook his head, "The man was a photographer and he shot her with his camera!" Tian Tian stared

at him for a few seconds, before starting to laugh. At this moment, Ling Chen's hands used precisely the exact amount of force necessary to pull off the two blood-stained socks.

“Ahhhh!!!”

Because Tian Tian's skin and socks had been tightly stuck together, this action caused her wounds to be ripped open again. The massive wave of pain caused Tian Tian to yell out, and her tears started to flow out. Ling Chen quickly hugged Tian Tian and stroked her back as he said in pain, “Don't cry Tian Tian, the pain will be gone soon. You'll be fine soon...”

After the wounds were opened, blood once again began to flow out of Tian Tian's feet. However, this was necessary-if they allowed her flesh to grow over the socks, the injury would be much worse in future. Tian Tian's feet were in massive pain, and so was Ling Chen's heart. Hugging Tian Tian, his heart clenched... he would never forget that the pain Tian Tian had gone through and was currently going through was all for him.

Tian Tian's body stopped trembling, and although her eyes were still damp, she didn't yell out. Her feet were incredibly tense as she nodded, “Big brother... I'm... not afraid of the pain... it's just a little bit painful... I'm not afraid...”

Ling Chen looked up, and tried to blink the tears away. However, he simply couldn't stop them, and they silently fell onto Tian Tian's back.

After a while, Ling Chen put Tian Tian's feet into the creek, allowing the wounds to be washed by the clean water. After Ling Chen carefully washed her feet, they once again became white, but the cuts were quite horrifying. Ling Chen put some of the leaves and grass into his mouth, and chewed on them carefully, before applying them to the wounds. Tian Tian did not yell out in pain. Instead, she silently watched her big brother, her eyes filled with adoration and admiration.

After her feet were covered with the chewed-up grass and leaves, Ling Chen ripped off relatively-clean strips from his clothes, and wrapped them up. He couldn't stand the thought of Tian Tian being in more pain, so he carried her on his back as he walked back. She had carried him for a whole night; he would carry her for his whole life.

The stench of blood rose from his body, but he felt that it was not appropriate for him to wash in that pure and clean creek. He carried Tian Tian as he searched for a place to bathe and for things to eat.

"Big brother, where are we going?" Tian Tian softly asked as she lay on Ling Chen's back. Although the smell from Ling Chen's body was quite horrible, but she still looked quite content to be on his back.

Ling Chen didn't know where they were going either. Before he completely recovered, they definitely wouldn't be able to return to Beijing. Now that Ruo Ruo, as well as their home, were gone, where could they go?

Ling Chen stopped, and a slight smile came to his face. Memories from a long time ago surfaced in his mind.

How wonderful would it be if time could stop during that period of time... those days were carefree and filled with joy. Life was simply perfect back then...

“Let’s go back to Zhong Zhou.” Ling Chen stopped walking as he muttered.

“Zhong Zhou? Where’s that?” Tian Tian asked.

“It’s where Ruo Ruo and I met... where I watched her grow up...”

Two days later.

Zhong Zhou Province was named such because it was right in the middle of China [TLN: “Zhong” means ‘middle’ or ‘centre’]. It was about 1,200 kilometres from Beijing. Right in the middle of Zhong Zhou Province was the capital, Zhong Zhou City.

Zhong Zhou City was much warmer than Beijing. This was especially so during noon, when the hot sun would bake the ground, causing pedestrians to mumble angrily.

This was the boundary of the Zhong Zhou City near the north. The buildings were all quite plain and small, and there were not

many people walking on the streets. There was quite a bit of distance between this place and the central district of the city. Most of the people living here were lower-class citizens, who lived from hand to mouth.

On an ordinary street corner, a person stood there, his body covered with clothes made from coarse cloth. Part of his face was covered, and his hair was extremely messy, but he evidently looked quite young. He stood there as he stared in front of him, although there were not many eye-catching things to look at. There was a 10-year-old girl on his back, who was also wearing similar-looking clothing. It was quite strange to be wearing such clothes in such weather, and people would often give them strange looks as they hurried by.

They had travelled from Beijing to Zhong Zhou.

Ling Chen had taken the same route, with the same methods, and it was yet again all because of the Long family... and it was still this place...

Everything was so familiar that it made him want to shed tears.

.....

“Big brother! Big Brother, hurry and wake up, you’ll get a horrible burn lying on the ground like that. Big brother...”

“Big brother, are you sick?” Can you stand up? It’s very hot lying on the ground like that...ah, no problem, my dad and mom are about to be here. They’ll help big brother, oh right, my dad is a

doctor here, he'll definitely make big brother better again.”

“I don't have water... will this do? It's very cooling, and very sweet.”

“Is it tasty? If it tastes good then drink the rest of it hehe, if you want to drink more, I can have papa and mama buy it again later.”

.....

Ling Chen's heart trembled as that beautiful voice resounded in his mind, creating waves in his heart... that year, it was this exact spot where he had met the girl who had changed his life. All of a sudden, six years had passed. He had once again returned to this place... but he could no longer see her smile or hear her angelic voice.

From the same spot as that year, he had jumped onto the train heading to Zhong Zhou with Tian Tian on his back. He had jumped off at the same place, and had come to this spot again... however, this was where the present diverged from the past. What he so strongly desired, he could never have. That beautiful scene could only happen once in his life. Before he and Shui Ruo had left for Beijing that year, they agreed that once she was cured of the Isrock Disease, they would return here. After all, this was their home, and they had many wonderful memories here. In Beijing, what they brought up the most was always Zhong Zhou. They had always been planning when to go back to their 'home', as well as what they would do. However...

“Big brother...”

Feeling Ling Chen's chaotic heartbeat, Tian Tian lifted her head as she worriedly looked at him.

Ling Chen shook his head and smiled, "Don't worry, I'm fine. I was just thinking of the first time I met Ruo Ruo."

Zhong Zhou... I'm back...

Chapter 344 - Their Old Home

The apartment was a normal apartment in a residential building. It was on the second level, on the east side.

The entire apartment was coated with a thick layer of dust. There were some footprints near the door-evidently, some people had come to investigate. Since the Long family had found his real life identity, it was likely that they would have found this place. Ling Chen silently looked around the apartment for a long time. Tian Tian also looked around. She had many questions that she wanted to ask, but seeing Ling Chen so silent and lost in his thoughts, she stayed quiet for the moment.

Apart from all the dust, everything was the same as when they had left. In these 2-3 years, because Shui Ruo couldn't travel, they hadn't been able to come back. Ling Chen walked forwards, and looked inside the innermost room...

The bed, wardrobe, table... as well as stuffed toys were all in the exact same places. Ling Chen could almost still smell that familiar fragrance in the air. His vision became hazy, and he could almost see the Shui Ruo from back then dragging him into her room, showing him all her stuffed toys.

Ling Chen pressed the button on the wall, and the lights came on. The electricity hadn't been cut, and the warm glow of the light illuminated the whole room.

Ling Chen closed his eyes and slowly breathed in and out, before

saying, “This was Shui Ruo’s room. Although it’s not as big as the one in Beijing, but she liked this little room so much. She would clean it and organise her things every day. She liked to collect all sorts of stuffed toys, and receiving stuffed toys would make her incredibly happy. Those years, mum and dad gave her a lot, and so did I. Very soon, her room became filled with stuffed toys, but she couldn’t bear to part with any of them. Even now, there are a lot of them in my room. She would say that they’re her good friends who would keep me company in my room.”

Tian Tian’s eyes became a bit red, and she held Ling Chen’s hand as she softly said, “Big brother, don’t be sad, alright? I’ll be obedient in future and I’ll be as good as big sister.”

Ling Chen smiled, and squeezed Tian Tian’s hand.

Opposite Shui Ruo’s room was his own room. It had originally been a study room, but it had been given to him after he joined their family. He remembered that during a big storm, Shui Ruo had run into his room, and jumped into his bed... from then onwards, she would sneak into his room more and more frequently. At first, her parents would scold her and tell her not to do it, but after realising that they simply couldn’t stop her, they could only give in and let her do what she wanted.

Next to theirs, was their mum and dad’s room. Their mum was always gentle and warm, and extremely loving towards her daughter and adopted-son. Their dad had been kind and calm, and saved lives for a living.

Why did such a thing happen to such a wonderful family?

The father had contracted the Isrock Disease, and unknowingly infected the mother and Shui Ruo. After finding out that they had contracted the Isrock Disease, all of their friends and relatives refused to see them anymore. Friendship and family apparently meant nothing in the face of life and death. Their good friends and neighbours would go out of their way to avoid them, and many families living around them all moved. In just a short period of time, this family had been abandoned by the rest of the world.

He could still clearly remember that back then, they had all cried as they begged him to leave. Otherwise, he would also be infected with the Isrock Disease. However, he adamantly refused. After all, he was now immune to the Isrock Disease. Even if he wasn't, he still wouldn't leave. At that time, he had also been overcome with fear and grief, because Shui Ruo had been infected. Afterwards, both the mum and dad had both passed away. Before they passed away, they tearfully left Shui Ruo to him.

“Dad... Mum... I couldn't... properly take care of Ruo Ruo... I...”

Ling Chen's head hung low as he stood in front of his parents' room, his heart full of regret and pain.

He detected something outside, but he maintained his calm. He held Tian Tian's hand and walked towards the balcony.

A person's figure appeared, and rushed over to Ling Chen. When he got close enough to see Ling Chen properly, his body began to tremble as he knelt down in front of Ling Chen, excitedly saying,

“Master... i-it’s really you! You’re alright... thank goodness... thank goodness... I... I...”

Ling Chen smiled as he said “It’s me. Gui Ci, we haven’t met in the real world for a while. Thank you for your hard work, for watching over this place for two years.”

“Not at all, not at all.” The man in black called Gui Ci hurriedly shook his head as he shouted, “Such a terrible thing happened to Master in Beijing... but I wasn’t able to help at all... damnit... however, it’s great that you’re fine, master... right now, everyone’s extremely worried about master, and none of us could sleep at all. Especially those guys in Beijing-they’ve been searching for master like crazy... if everyone knew that master was fine, they’d all be so happy that they’d faint!”

Ling Chen knew that Gui Ya and the others were definitely worried about him, but he couldn’t return to Beijing, nor did he have any means to contact them. He helped Gui Ci up as he said, “Go and tell them that I’m fine, and that I’m in Zhong Zhou with Tian Tian.”

Gui Ci couldn’t help babbling in excitement. To them, there was no better news than Ling Chen being fine. He took out a small communication device from his pocket, quickly dialled some numbers, then put it in Ling Chen’s hands, “Master, it’s better if you talk to them directly. They haven’t slept for many nights, and they’ll only be able to be at ease if you personally talk to them.”

Ling Chen took the communication device and held it to his ear. Very soon, the line was connected, but the other side was silent.

Ling Chen spoke, “Gui Ya, it’s me.”

Crash...

Ling Chen heard something fall to the ground and shatter. After a while, a trembling voice could be heard, “M... Master?”

“Mm, it’s me. I’m fine, and I’m in Zhong Zhou with Tian Tian... are you all alright?”

The other side went silent for a few moments before he heard Gui Ya screaming, “Master!!! It’s master!!! Everyone, it’s master’s voice!!”

All of a sudden, Ling Chen could hear many sounds: the sound of footsteps rapidly running over, yells of joy, a door being suddenly opened, a chair being flung aside, even people being knocked to the ground... his heart was filled with warmth and gratitude. He leaned closer to the communication device and spoke as clearly and calmly as possible, “I’m fine now, and most of my wounds have healed. I’m with Tian Tian in Zhong Zhou, where we’ll be safe... Gui Ci’s also here with us.”

“That’s right!” Gui Ci yelled out, “It’s master! It’s really master! It’s definitely him... and there’s also little sister Tian Tian. Master looks completely fine right now!”

“It’s master! It’s Gui Ci’s and master’s voices!” “Master... thank

goodness you're fine! This is great, great!!”

“... Oi! Move over, let me hear master's voice! Move!!”

“Stop squeezing... master's invincible; of course he'd be fine. Look at you, crying like a baby!”

“Look at you! You've got tears streaming down your face as well!” The sounds from the communication device became increasingly chaotic. The serious and cold-hearted deathgods of Dark Night all became like excited children. Ling Chen didn't say anything as he silently listened. He became more and more convinced that his decision that night had been incorrect, as well as incredibly selfish.

“Enough! Shut the hell up!! How's master meant to talk with us shouting like this?!”

Gui Ya was ranked directly under Ling Chen. His roar of annoyance caused everyone else to quieten down. Soon, only rapid breathing could be heard. Gui Ya came closer to the communication device as he worriedly asked, “Master, you're really fine? And Tian Tian is also fine?”

“Mmm, we're both completely fine. My external injuries have more or less healed, and I should be completely fine in a week. You all know how strong my recovery is. It's just that... in order to save me, Tian Tian suffered a lot. If it wasn't for Tian Tian, perhaps... perhaps I wouldn't be able to see you guys again.” Ling Chen said.

Beside him, Gui Ci looked at Tian Tian with extreme gratitude in his eyes. Ling Chen's words caused Tian Tian's position in these deathgods' hearts to be risen to a new level.

“Tian Tian... is such a fantastic child, and is our benefactor. Whew, it's great that you're all fine, thank goodness. I just knew that master and Tian Tian were definitely cared for by the heavens, hahaha...” The huge weight in Gui Ya's heart had finally lifted, and he felt incredibly happy, and couldn't help but laugh. This caused a chain reaction as all the other people started to laugh as well. Knowing that Ling Chen was fine, all of their worry, anxiety and fear had instantly disappeared. Compared to their worry for Ling Chen, their injuries were nothing.

“I'm sure you were all hurt quite badly when you went to rescue me from the Long family. Make sure you all take care of your wounds, and don't tire yourselves out. Also, you have to stay safe... this is an order.” Ling Chen said.

“Roger!” Gui Ya immediately replied.

“Now, tell me, on that night... did any of our brothers or sisters die at the Long family's residence... tell me everything.” Ling Chen asked in a serious voice.

The smile on Gui Ya's face disappeared. He stayed silent for a few moments before saying in a low voice, “Ying Ya died. In order to cover us, he stayed to the end, and blew himself up using the explosives on his body. There was also Buggy. Buggy's legs were heavily injured, and he didn't want to slow us down, so he leapt towards the Savage Tiger Corps, allowing them to capture him.

Right now, he's in the Xuanyuan family's prison."

Ying Ya, Buggy...

Ling Chen's heart ached as he sighed, and said, "Gui Dao also died... like Ying Ya, he used the explosives on his body to blow up the enemies pursuing us. It was probably him who passed me on to Bing Yao."

The other side of the communication device fell silent.

"It was all my fault; it was I who killed them... it was all because of me..." Ling Chen closed his eyes, as he blamed himself. If it wasn't for his stupid and selfish actions, they wouldn't have had to make those sacrifices...

"No! Don't say that, master! Being able to die for master is our glory. It was the only way they wanted to die... don't worry master, we'll definitely save Buggy. We'll make the Long family pay ten times-no, a hundred times-for Ying Ya and Gui Dao's deaths!" Gui Ya said as he gnashed his teeth.

Chapter 345 - The Future, Su Hang

“Gui Ya, where’s Bing Yao? Isn’t she with you all?” After speaking with Gui Ya for a long time, he never heard Mu Bing Yao’s voice.

“She’s not with us, but don’t worry, master, we’ve been in contact with her... or rather, she contacted us. She was heavily injured that night, and was rescued by the Xiao family’s people. She only woke up two days ago, and has been recovering from her wounds at the Xiao family’s residence. It’s very safe there, so don’t worry.” Gui Ya replied.

Ling Chen nodded, and breathed a sigh of relief. He then continued to ask, “What has the situation in Beijing been like these days?”

Gui Ya thought for a while, before replying, “The Long family hasn’t been able to confirm whether master is alive or dead. However, they’re evidently very afraid of master. Although they believe that master is probably dead, they still made you a wanted person in all of China, and set up many traps in Beijing. Right now, probably everyone in China knows of master’s name and what master looks like. We highly recommend master to change to a different identity, and to disguise himself when going out. And also, please don’t come back to Beijing before you’ve fully recovered, master.”

Ling Chen voiced his agreement. This was all within his expectations. He had come to Zhong Zhou by jumping on and off a train, and he had covered his face while in Zhong Zhou. With his

identity exposed, and his wounds yet to have fully healed, he couldn't move as he wished.

“Come to think of it, why did master go back to Zhong Zhou?” Gui Ya asked.

“...Back then, we went to Beijing to look for a cure for Ruo Ruo. When Ruo Ruo was still alive, she had always wanted to come back. Now that Ruo Ruo has passed away, there's no reason for me to stay in Beijing, so I decided to come back.”

When Ling Chen mentioned the name “Ruo Ruo”, there was not a single person listening whose heart wasn't in pain. Gui Ya instantly cursed at himself inwardly for asking this silly question. He said, “Master, about this... we're all just as sad as you are. Please... Please don't be consumed by your grief. Little sister Shui Ruo loved you more than anything in the world, and although she wasn't willing to leave, but I'm sure that she wouldn't want to see you like this either, so...”

A faint smile emerged on Ling Chen's face as he replied, “Haha, Gui Ya, who would have thought you'd be able to say comforting words like this. Don't worry, I've already made enough mistakes. If it wasn't for me, Ying Ya, Gui Dao and Buggy wouldn't have had to make those sacrifices, and none of you would have received those injuries. I won't do anything like that again-I'll live on, and won't selfishly seek death again.”

Gui Ya's voice became excited again as he said, “Master, we're all so glad that you think that way... Master, are you preparing to stay at Zhong Zhou?”

Stay at Zhong Zhou?

He wanted to stay here. After all, this was his and Shui Ruo's first home. It was where he had watched her grow up, as well as where he had created many wonderful memories with her. However, he simply couldn't stay here-everything here caused his heart to ache. How could he care for Tian Tian like that? Moreover, it was simply too dangerous to stay here.

“I'll stay in Zhong Zhou Province, but not in Zhong Zhou City. I'm going to the 'Heaven on Earth', Su Hang with Tian Tian. We'll probably live there.” Ling Chen slowly said.

Tian Tian was looking at Ling Chen the whole time. She had heard her big brother and big sister talk about Su Hang City in the past. Apparently every season was like Spring, and was the most beautiful city in all of China. It was even called the 'Heaven on Earth'... it was definitely a very nice place.

Su Hang City was to the south of Zhong Zhou City. Gui Ya knew that Shui Ruo's death was a massive blow to Ling Chen, and although he looked and sounded quite calm, he had buried the pain and grief deep down within him. This sort of pain wasn't something that he could recover from in just a year or two... perhaps the beautiful scenery would help him forget some of that grief.

“There are three of us stationed at Su Hang City; I'll get in contact with them immediately. We'll have everything prepared

for you by tomorrow. Has master thought of a new identity to change to, as well as where he wants to live?”

Ling Chen thought for a while before replying, “We’ll keep Ling as the surname... Ling Tian Ya. Parents are overseas, and don’t come back very often. He has two sisters: one is called Ling Shui Xin, who is also overseas with their parents, and the other is called [Ling Ji Ruo](#). Ling Ji Ruo lives with him in the house owned by their parents. Arrange for the accommodation to be under a mountain, near a lake. It doesn’t have to be too big; I just want it to be peaceful and clean.”

[TLN: translates to ‘Ling Remembers Ruo’]

Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Gui Ya’s heart ached... he knew that deep down, Ling Chen was unable to accept Shui Ruo’s death. He could only nod as he replied, “Everything will be ready for master when he and Tian Tian reach Su Hang tomorrow. After we’ve recovered, we’ll also head there. We’ll leave around 10 people in Beijing to keep a watch on the Long family. If there’s an opportunity, we’ll rescue Buggy.”

“Right, master, there’s something else,” Gui Ya continued, “This is something all of us have been curious about. Actually, that night, the person who picked up master and ran out of the Long family’s residence wasn’t us, but someone dressed in black. If it wasn’t for that person, master would have been... finished off by Xuanyuan Dao.”

“A person dressed in black?” Ling Chen was also shocked.

“That’s right! At that time, that person brought master out, and gave him to us. That person also stopped the injured Xuanyuan Dao who was chasing after us. We later found out that that person is called Feng Xie Yu, and is that ‘Sword Emperor’! She left after we had all left, and we don’t know where she went. Right now, the Long family and Xuanyuan family are desperately looking for her. We simply couldn’t understand why she would help us.”

Ling Chen became silent for a long time as waves crashed in his heart.

Dia Wu... is it you... Are you really Dia Wu...

You’re not dead... are you really... the Sword Emperor...

You saved me... Did you recognise me? Did you recognise me, who had abandoned you for all those years...

Where are you now? How can I find you...

“Master? Are you alright, master?” Gui Ya asked, after not hearing a response from Ling Chen for a long time.

Ling Chen came back to his senses as he replied, “It’s nothing. See if you can find where she’s staying. If you find anything, let me know. Also, Ruo Ruo’s body disappeared on that night... see if you can investigate that... most importantly, have a good rest and look after yourselves.”

“... Understood.”

After ending the call, Ling Chen spent much effort calming himself down. He said to Gui Ci, “Prepare some money for me, as well as some clothes for Tian Tian and myself... as well as food... enough for five people.”

Gui Ci noted down what Ling Chen had requested for, then left. Very soon, a credit card, clothes and food were delivered. Tian Tian had not eaten much for the past few days while she was caring for Ling Chen. Seeing the table filled with food, her saliva began to drip onto the ground. She almost leapt onto the table, and began to ravenously inhale all of the food. The food couldn't be compared to the food made by Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, but after going hungry for so many days, it tasted heavenly. Ling Chen sat beside her and watched as she devoured all the food. He told her to eat slowly while nibbling on a chicken wing. Although he had not eaten much the past few days, he didn't feel hungry at all, and slowly ate...

That was because after all these years, this was the first time he had eaten without Shui Ruo by his side. He stared in front of him as he slowly chewed his food. His heart had long since drifted off to an unknown place.

Very soon, the meal for five people was finished. Gui Ci could only stare in shock, and looked at Tian Tian like she was a monster. He finally understood that Ling Chen did not request a meal for five people because he was too hungry, but because of the girl whose stomach was a bottomless pit. Tian Tian, who had eaten until she felt like she was going to explode, leaned against Ling

Chen with her eyes closed, “Big brother, are we going to that place called Su Hang tomorrow? Is it really pretty there? Are we going to live there?”

Ling Chen put his arm around Tian Tian as he softly said, “Mmm, it’s too dangerous to stay here. We’ll leave for there tomorrow. It’s the most beautiful city in China, and Ruo Ruo really liked it there. I’m sure Tian Tian will like it there as well. If Tian Tian wants, we can live there forever.”

“Mmm.” Tian Tian replied as she leaned closer to him.

Ling Chen didn’t want them to do anything to Shui Ruo’s room, so Gui Ci tidied up Ling Chen’s old room. He never entered or exited through the main entrance, and would never allow anyone to detect him. He came and went without a trace, like a shadow. Two of Ling Chen’s subordinates stayed in Zhong Zhou, and they were in charge of gathering intelligence in Zhong Zhou City, as well as looking after this home. The other person had rushed off to Beijing when he heard about what had happened, and was on the way back. Right now, only Gui Ci was in Zhong Zhou.

Tian Tian quickly fell asleep against Ling Chen’s shoulder. These days, she had suffered too much and had become quite weary. Even after he had woken up, she hadn’t been able to properly rest. Ling Chen picked her up and placed her on the bed, then covered her with the blanket, saying, “Tian Tian, have a good rest. I’ll be right here, and I won’t leave you.”

Lying on the soft bed and listening to Ling Chen’s comforting voice, Tian Tian quickly fell into a deep sleep.

When Tian Tian was sound asleep, Ling Chen got up and soundlessly exited the room. He went to the bathroom and turned the shower to the maximum. The cold water flowed over his body as he closed his eyes, his hands pressing against his chest. Very soon, bright red marks appeared on his chest. Only when he was alone could he silently let out the agony from losing Shui Ruo. However, he would no longer choose death to seek release.

Ruo Ruo, without you, what am I meant to do in future...

Chapter 346 - New Home

East Su Hang, Jade Cloud Beach.

Jade Cloud Beach was in the east of Su Hang. It was one of the new Districts in Su Hang after the city was expanded six years ago. It was split into four regions: the Central District, Xi Zi Zhou, Bamboo Sea Wonderland and Phoenix's Nest. Before this region was developed, it was filled with flowers and grasses, looking like a fairyland. But in just six years, there were already many high-rises and roads everywhere. However, much of the environment had been preserved, making it look like it was a city in a fairy tale.

Su Hang City had beautiful mountains and lakes, and was publicly recognised to be the most beautiful city in all of China. It was also said that it was the city with the most beautiful women in China. Within Su Hang City, Xi Zi Zhou had the majority of the beauties. Although Xi Zi Zhou was only a residential district with not much scenery to marvel at, it was one of the must-go places for young men when visiting Su Hang City. Because what surpassed even beautiful scenery were beautiful women. As such, Xi Zi Zhou was always filled with people, and developed incredibly fast. The housing price in Xi Zi Zhou soon became the most expensive in all of Su Hang City.

Phoenix's Nest was a region for scholars. Four years ago, Su Hang City's new university campus was built there, and became the main campus. At the same time, many high schools were constructed around it. It was quiet, elegant, peaceful and beautiful there, so this place became a prime area for schools and high schools. After six years, Phoenix's Nest had become the main educational region in Su Hang City. The area that had been

developed the least within Jade Cloud Beach was Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

The Bamboo Sea Wonderland was an enormous bamboo forest, which was so large that it was referred to as a 'sea'. It spanned forty square kilometres, and was acknowledged to be the largest bamboo forest in all of China. The vast bamboo forest was simply breathtaking, and the air was so fresh that visitors never wanted to leave. Occasionally, one could see little streams and creeks flowing through the forest, adding to the beauty of the scene. Walking in here was like walking in a wonderland from a movie. As such, it was called the Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

However, because that was the only feature of the Bamboo Sea Wonderland, and because it was so easy to get lost inside, it wasn't really a tourist destination of Su Hang, and not many people visited there. Of course, there was another important reason... and that was because this incredibly vast forest was privately owned by a single person! This bamboo forest was grown many, many years ago, and it was owned by the richest person in Su Hang City, as well as all of China and Asia-Li Yun Ze. Later on, he announced that he was gifting this piece of land to his daughter, Li Xiao Xue, on her eighteenth birthday.

In the middle of the Bamboo Sea Wonderland, there was an extremely luxurious villa. It had its own water and electricity supply, and was more or less cut off from the rest of the world. Around the villa was a man-made lake, and the water was clear and sparkling. On the edge of the lake, there was a pavilion, as well as deck chairs, a rock garden and recreational facilities. Behind the villa was a large, empty area of land that could be used to grow vegetables or other plants. There was also a garden with many

different types of grass and flowers, and each of them worth astronomical amounts of money. At the front of the villa was a large courtyard, which had carparks, cold storage and a tennis court.

The villa had three storeys, and looked extremely beautiful and modern. One could scarcely dare to imagine how luxurious the inside was after seeing the outside.

Today, a new owner had moved into this villa.

“So beautiful... so beautiful... wow!!”

After entering this beautiful wonderland, Tian Tian simply could not calm down for the entire afternoon. She ran in and out of the villa, yelling her head off. Ling Chen watched Tian Tian in amusement as he smiled.

Ling Chen never expected that they would live in a place like this. He was extremely pleased with everything here... it was spacious, elegant, natural and peaceful.

“Tian Tian should be very happy here”, Ling Chen thought to himself.

When they arrived, everything had already been prepared for them. The cold storage was filled with food, and even an entire year worth of clothes were waiting in their wardrobes.

Ling Chen had been with Shui Ruo for six years, and she had completely changed him. Even his name had changed because of her-he didn't use his old name anymore, but instead created a new identity, with "Ling" still as the surname. With Ling Chen's personality and mental fortitude, he could perfectly hide any and every emotion. However, after losing his lover, who had been by his side for six years, everyone could see how much pain was in his heart. As such, in order to help him move on, his subordinates had put every effort into choosing the perfect place for him to live. They weren't in any lack of money-after coming to China six years ago, they had amassed more and more money. However, if Ling Chen continued to drown in his grief, what would be the point in having even 10 times as much money? As such, in order to find the perfect place to live for Ling Chen, it could be said that they used every bit of effort in their bodies.

Gui Ci had also come to Su Hang with Ling Chen, and met up with the three people stationed there. Gui Ci had been following behind Ling Chen the entire time. He couldn't help but sigh inwardly-although Ling Chen had inspected the whole property, he didn't ask how they had obtained this property... evidently, although Ling Chen seemed quite calm, he was still quite distraught on the inside. Ling Chen had promised that he wouldn't seek death, but his consciousness and awareness had been scattered. Otherwise, with how careful he was, he definitely would have asked how they managed to get this place for him.

"Master, everything has been prepared for you. Your new identities are also ready-if you need any identification materials, just tell Chao Xi and Chao Ying-they'll be here soon. I need to get back to Zhong Zhou before sundown, because Blue Tiger is probably about to reach Zhong Zhou." Gui Ci said. Blue Tiger was the other person stationed at Zhong Zhou with him. Chao Xi and

Chao Ying were two of the people stationed at Su Hang, and were both women.

Ling Chen, who had zoned out, suddenly nodded, “Thanks for your hard work. If there’s nothing else, you can go back.”

“Roger.” Gui Ya said, as he prepared to leave. He hesitated, then said, “Master, no matter what happens, we’ll always be guarding your front and back. We are your sword and shield... if something happens to you, there’ll be no point for a sword and shield, so... so...”

Ling Chen’s eyes trembled, and he turned around and patted Gui Ci on the shoulder as he smiled, “Don’t worry, I’ll be fine. Also, I really like this place, and so does Tian Tian. Thank you all... you must have spent a lot of time, money and effort to obtain this place.”

“As long as Master likes this place, we’re happy... I’m going now. Haha, it was me who was worrying too much-of course nothing will happen to master.” Gui Ci laughed, then knelt on one knee in front of Ling Chen before disappearing in a blur.

After Gui Ci left, Ling Chen slowly breathed out. He looked around him, and estimated how much money it would have cost to obtain this place... perhaps it wasn’t even bought with money. At this moment, two pairs of light footsteps sounded behind him. He turned around, and his eyes couldn’t help but light up.

Walking towards him were two women, who were around 20

years old. They were both quite tall and slim, and wore the same light-coloured blouses and short skirts. Their exposed legs were extremely beautiful and seductive. They looked extremely similar... evidently, they were twins.

Even within Su Hang, where there were beauties everywhere, these two women could be said to be peerlessly beautiful. There was nothing in which the two women could be differentiated. They walked in sync with each other and even carried themselves in the same way.

This sort of woman was hard to find in Su Hang, and this was even more so for twins. It was undoubtable that any man would be inflamed with desire for them, and would want to make them his... however, that was all they would dare to do. The atmosphere they gave off made it so that most men could only look at them from afar, and most did not even have the courage to flirt with them... however, no one could possibly imagine how many peoples' lives had been ended by those beautiful hands.

As they came closer and closer to Ling Chen, the two women's faces became slightly red, and their expressions became somewhat excited and flustered. They knelt down on one knee at the same time as they greeted him, "Master."

The two women were wearing quite skimpy clothing, and Ling Chen could see their ample breasts clearly as they knelt down. Both of them were quite well endowed, and in this position, it seemed as if their breasts were straining against their clothes. Ling Chen's eyes were filled with the white flesh, which could conquer any man.

Ling Chen quickly glanced away and slightly smiled, “Ying, Xi, we haven’t met in over a year. Thank you for your hard work... please get up.”

Ling Chen’s calm voice caused them to feel quite disappointed. When they heard that their master was coming to where they were, they were so excited that they almost couldn’t sleep, and made themselves look as sexy and appealing as possible. However, Ling Chen’s reaction towards them made them quite shocked. It seemed as if there was no room in his heart for anyone except the girl called Shui Ruo.

Chapter 347 - A Voice From Another World

(1)

The two women arose and stood in front of Ling Chen. The two of them were quite tall, adding to their dignified and elegant look. However, although Ling Chen was at eye-level with them, he still felt a bit of pressure. Adding on their curves and seductive looks, Ling Chen's heart became increasingly chaotic.

These twins were called Chao Ying and Chao Xi, and they were also taken by Instructor Hell to the place by 'Hell'. They had been in 'Hell' for a lot longer than Ling Chen-apparently they had been brought there when they were three. Even they didn't know who was the older sister and who was the younger sister. They had been in Su Hang since they arrived in China, and this villa in the Bamboo Sea Wonderland was obtained by them.

"Master, are you satisfied with this place?" It had been over a year since they had met Ling Chen in the real world, and they had missed him terribly. They were extremely excited to be reunited with him, but they both knew how he was feeling.

"It's fantastic... just like its name, it's definitely a 'wonderland'. This is probably the best place to live in all of China." Ling Chen said as he smiled.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi revealed smiles of joy, "It's great that master likes it."

"I'm sure you had to expend quite a bit of effort in order to

obtain this place, right?” Ling Chen suddenly asked. The looks, personality, expressions, voices and atmosphere that these two women gave off were much too similar-even for twins. They were more like clones. No matter how he tried to observe them, he could never tell which one was Chao Ying and which one was Chao Xi. What he knew was that individually, they were quite average in terms of strength. However, when they worked together... even Gui Ya had difficulty against them. Not only did they look extremely similar, but it was as if their hearts were linked-they could tell what the other person was thinking, and knew how the other felt. Their teamwork was simply unparalleled in the whole world.

The woman on the left replied, “This place belongs to the Li family, or more specifically, the Li family financial group’s big miss, Li Xiao Xue. She usually manages the Li family’s group within the virtual world, so she very rarely comes here. However, that doesn’t mean she easily lets other people stay here. Despite this, because of us, she agreed to let us use it.”

“And that’s because we saved Li Xiao Xue in the past, and are good sisters with her.” The other woman finished.

“Eh?” Ling Chen was quite surprised, “You saved Li Xiao Xue in the past? It shouldn’t be as simple as that, right? I doubt you would do something that had no benefit to you, and might even cause you trouble.”

The women laughed at the same time, in the same manner, as one of them replied, “Master’s so smart. The Li family financial group is the largest financial group in China, and even controls

China's economy. The Li family has incredible power in Su Hang City, as well as most of China's south. Li Xiao Xue is Li Yun Ze's only heir. Because of her close relationship with Li Yun Ze, being close with her is extremely advantageous to us collecting intelligence. Two years ago, the four of us performed an act. Seven Demon and Nine Demon acted as assassins who were targeting Li Xiao Xue, and killed all of her bodyguards. Just as they were about to take her away, we appeared and rescued her. Because of how grateful she was, she invited us to her place, and we gradually became friends.

Ling Chen listened silently, then said, "Li Xiao Xue's extremely intelligent and cautious. I'm sure she wouldn't believe you so easily."

"Of course she didn't. However, she couldn't confirm her suspicions. She tried to investigate us over 10 times, but couldn't find anything. After all, we don't technically exist in this world. Even we don't know our backgrounds, so no matter how much she investigated, she couldn't find anything. The fact remains that we did save her, and don't hold any ill-will towards her. Plus, we only hid things from her, but never lied to her. She understands that people like us do not divulge our secrets easily, and so she came to trust us more and more. After a long time, she began to even tell us things that she wouldn't tell others."

"Doesn't that mean you've been exposed?" Ling Chen calmly asked. Two young women in their twenties, who were monstrously strong-no one wouldn't want to befriend them. This was so even for Li Xiao Xue.

“Don’t worry, Master, Li Xiao Xue is the most intelligent woman we’ve ever met. She didn’t tell anyone about us, including her father. She asked us to be her personal bodyguards many times, but we refused each time. Also, without her invitation, we never go to find her. We’ve never requested anything from her before, but she’s asked us to help her quite a few times, and we were successful each time. She trusts us even more than her own relatives.

“Asking for this place was the first time we’ve requested anything of her in these two years. Of course, it’s impossible that she would simply give it to us—we had to pay the appropriate amount of money as well. Li Xiao Xue felt that she owed us a lot, so she quickly agreed, and reduced the price by 10%, and extended the lease by one year. Currently, Master can stay here for three years. If Master doesn’t want to leave after three years, we can find ways to extend the lease or to buy it permanently. Moreover, we also agreed that Li Xiao Xue wouldn’t tell anyone that she leased this place, including her family, and that she wouldn’t allow any of her family in here... however, that didn’t include herself. She was adamant about this, so we could only agree.”

Chao Ying and Chao Xi’s explanation had answered many of the questions in Ling Chen’s mind, but had also raised many questions. He felt that something wasn’t quite right, but he, who was so emotionally drained, didn’t think too much about it. He just wanted peace. He nodded as he replied, “I see, thank you for that. There isn’t much for you to do here, so you can leave when you want. Also, say hi to Seven Demon and Nine Demon for me.” Chao Ying and Chao Xi looked at each other simultaneously as they said together, “Master, please let us stay here.”

“Stay here?” Ling Chen looked at them in surprise.

“Within the contract, it’s stipulated that we must also stay here. If there are third parties living here without us, she has the right to take back the property. Plus, all of the others agree that we should stay here.”

While speaking, the two women looked at Ling Chen with hopeful and expecting eyes. In Beijing, Gui Ya personally took care of all of Ling Chen’s requests. In Su Hang, Chao Ying and Chao Xi were the best choices for this. They were extremely familiar with Su Hang, and could make life a lot easier for him.

“We know that what Master needs the most right now is peace. Don’t worry, Master, there’s a small residence about 200 metres to the south. We’ll be living there. We’ll come over as soon as Master calls, and won’t disturb Master unless there’s something urgent.” The two women quickly said. They were desperate for this opportunity to stay near him, and were afraid that he would reject them.

Ling Chen thought for a while before smiling, “Alright, do as you please. If you want to come over, just come over. You can also live with us if you want. There are many rooms here, and Tian Tian also needs people to play with.”

Chao Ying and Chao Xi’s eyes lit up, and they faintly blushed as they sweetly replied, “Yes, master.”

However, although Ling Chen had said that, they still lived in the

other residence... although they truly, truly wanted to move in with him...

Ling Chen walked into the main hall, and looking around him, he thought of his old home. It had only been a few days, but it felt like it was a lifetime ago. This place was extremely beautiful and luxurious but...

This home didn't have his Ruo Ruo.

“Big brother, who were those two pretty big sisters?” Tian Tian excitedly asked as she ran over to him. She was wearing a blue-and-white checkered dress, which looked great on her.

“Mmm, they're big sisters who will play with you in future.” Ling Chen replied. Tian Tian's excitement caused him to smile, “Do you like it here, Tian Tian?”

“Yup, yup!” Tian Tian vigorously nodded her head. In the afternoon, she had explored almost every inch of the villa, and she enthusiastically replied, “The bamboo forest is so beautiful, and this house is so nice. There's also a really pretty lake and a super, super, big tennis court, as well as lots of toys... so there's actually such beautiful places on earth. Big brother, are we really going to live here?”

“Mhmm,” Ling Chen nodded, “We can live here for as long as Tian Tian wants.”

Seeing Tian Tian's red cheeks, Ling Chen's vision became slightly hazy.

This was indeed a wonderland, and he liked the beauty and peacefulness of this place.

However, was this place suitable for Tian Tian?

This place was extremely beautiful, but people could get bored of beautiful places. Tian Tian was only a child, and at her age, she should be getting to know more people and exploring the world more. Living here was equivalent to being cut off from the rest of the world.

It was peaceful, calm and relaxing, which was just what he needed... but was this place really suitable for Tian Tian?

Perhaps he looked for this sort of place because he was afraid... Shui Ruo's death had scarred him quite deeply, and he didn't want the same thing to happen to Tian Tian. Deep down, he just wanted a place where he and Tian Tian could live safely.

Chapter 348 - A Voice From Another World

(2)

After moving into this new wonderland-home, Tian Tian was extremely fascinated by everything. When they had moved in, everything had already been prepared for them, and they didn't need to clean anything or buy anything. The biggest pity that they had was that their previous home had been destroyed, and they couldn't go back, so they couldn't bring any of their old things with them. Although everything in this new home looked extremely beautiful and luxurious, it simply wasn't the same as their old home, which was filled with their memories.

The villa was so big that it took Tian Tian a long time to go around once. Ling Chen followed behind her, committing the features of the villa to memory. Very soon, the sun set and stars came out. Ling Chen took Tian Tian back to the main hall, and they looked at each of the ten or so bedrooms. He asked, "Tian Tian, which one do you want to sleep in?"

"Which one does big brother like?" Tian Tian asked as she looked at him.

Ling Chen didn't think for too long. He pointed towards one of the rooms that wasn't very big, but was closest to the balcony as he said, "I like that one."

This was because within the villa, it was situated in approximately the same place as Ling Chen and Shui Ruo's room had been situated within their old home in Beijing.

Tian Tian realised this almost immediately, and she vigorously nodded, “Same here, I like that one too.”

“Are you going to sleep in the same room as me?” Ling Chen asked as he smiled.

“Of course I am! Would you make me sleep by myself?” Tian Tian said as she made a pity-inducing expression.

“Haha,” Seeing how cute Tian Tian was, Ling Chen couldn’t help laughing. He knew that Tian Tian, who had become accustomed to Shui Ruo hugging her to sleep, wouldn’t be willing to sleep by herself. He looked at the time and said, “Tian Tian, I’m sure you’re hungry after playing for the whole afternoon. What do you want to eat for dinner? They have almost everything here.”

“Hmm... I ate a lot during lunch, so I’m not too hungry, and big sister told me not to eat too much at night. What does big brother want to eat?”

Tian Tian unintentionally bringing up Shui Ruo tugged at Ling Chen’s heartstrings. However, he maintained the smile on his face as he said, “I’m not too hungry either. I’ll go make some soup for us.”

Ling Chen turned and walked towards the kitchen. The kitchen here was twice as large as their kitchen in Beijing, and was filled with cooking utensils and food.

“Does big brother want some soup? Ah! I’ll do it!” Tian Tian hurriedly ran in front of Ling Chen, and spread out her little arms as she blocked his way. Her crystal-like eyes were filled with earnestness, “This kitchen is really big and pretty, so I want to cook here. I’ll make dinner, and before I’m done, big brother’s not allowed to come inside!”

Tian Tian ran like a little rabbit into the kitchen, and quickly closed the sliding door.

Ling Chen rubbed his nose... didn’t Tian Tian really dislike cooking? Before, when Shui Ruo tried to teach her how to cook, most of the time she would run off.

The living room was quite big-in fact, it was a bit too spacious. There were many, many lights on the ceiling, and the TV screen was about 80 inches wide. After entering the room, the first thing people would see was a massive aquarium, in which there were many fish swimming.

Clanging noises began to come from the kitchen, and Ling Chen could almost imagine Tian Tian hurrying around in the kitchen... at her height, it was probably difficult to reach the pots and pans. Ling Chen walked over, but just as he began to open the door, he remembered Tian Tian’s words. He smiled, then walked out of the villa, into the backyard. He stood there in silence as he looked around.

If Ruo Ruo was here, she would have really liked this place... she

liked peacefulness, as well as bamboo, flowers and grass... if she was here, it would be like heaven for her.

But... But...

Ruo Ruo... I wasn't able to protect you in the end... and now even your body's gone. Let alone take you to this beautiful place, I can't even bury you.

Ling Chen closed his eyes, and thought of the words Tian Tian had said to him... in less than a minute, under Gui Ya and the other peoples' watch, Shui Ruo's body had disappeared. This was simply incomprehensible. In the afternoon, he asked Gui Ya to contact Mu Bing Yao and ask for her side of the story. What she said was exactly the same as Tian Tian. Shui Ruo's body had simply just vanished, and not a single one of them noticed anything.

Gui Ya and the others had suffered quite heavy injuries, and would take a while to recover. After most of them had recovered, more than half of them would come to Su Hang. After all, the most important place to them was where Ling Chen was.

Ling Chen zoned out, and forgot about the time. After a while, Tian Tian's clear voice rang out, "Big brother, dinner's ready! Eh? Big brother, where'd you go?"

Ling Chen came back to his senses, and he turned around. His body left a gust of wind behind him as he immediately returned back to the entrance of the main hall, and casually walked in.

On the dining table were two small bowls and two spoons. Tian Tian carefully walked out of the kitchen with a big bowl, and put it at the centre of the table. Even from afar, Ling Chen could smell how delicious the soup was. Seeing Ling Chen, Tian Tian's eyes lit up, and she called out, "Big brother, hurry and try some of my soup!" Tian Tian filled up Ling Chen's bowl and gave it to him.

Inside the soup were cooked potatoes, as well as some ground beef. Sitting at the table, Ling Chen picked up his spoon as he stared at the soup... did Tian Tian really make this... she only knew how to eat, play and sleep...

Tian Tian sat opposite him, and looked at him nervously and full of expectation. Seeing him holding his spoon, but not eating, she became a bit anxious. She was worried that he did not dare to eat her food anymore... the first dish she had cooked had left a 'very deep impression' on him and Shui Ruo. She bit her lips as she softly said, "Big brother, I know I wasn't very good in the past, and I couldn't do anything properly. I didn't learn how to cook properly from big sister, and my food definitely can't match up to big sister's... but... but I'll definitely work hard in future. I'll do my best to learn how to cook, wash clothes and clean up... I'll be as good as big sister and take care of big brother just like big sister had... I'll do my best!!"

Ling Chen almost stopped breathing, and an incredibly warm feeling entered his heart. Seeing Tian Tian's eyes, he could only move his lips, but no words came out. He picked up his spoon and took a sip of the first soup Tian Tian had made. The soup tasted quite fresh, and if there was a little less salt and was cooked for a little less time, it would have been even better... but the warmth that entered his mouth, as well as his heart, was something that he

would remember for the rest of his life.

“It’s delicious, Tian Tian. It makes me think of Ruo Ruo’s cooking.” Ling Chen said as he smiled. He felt something misty blurring his vision... it must have been the steam from the soup... as such, he picked up the bowl and started to drink the soup in large mouthfuls.

“Really?” To Tian Tian, this was the highest praise that Ling Chen could give. Tian Tian laughed happily, and Ling Chen quickly finished his bowl of soup. She immediately picked up the spoon, and filled up his bowl again as she said, “In that case, big brother should drink lots.”

“Haha, tonight, I’ll definitely drink more soup than Tian Tian,” Ling Chen said as he laughed, “I must say, though, Tian Tian’s a little genius. Your soup tastes so good on your first try.”

“Hehe, of course,” Tian Tian was evidently very pleased, “It’s because big sister taught me well. Big sister also said that I’m the smartest girl in the world! So of course it’s going to be good... and it’ll become better and better, until I’m just as good as big sister!”

This supposed Demon Queen who had declared that she came to conquer the earth had completely forgotten her goal. Right now, she just wanted to take care of the man in front of her, and let him forget about his grief.

Night fell. After all the days of anxiety and worry, Tian Tian had not been able to rest properly, and was still not fully recovered. As such, after eating dinner, she went to bed quite early and collapsed. She had to tightly hold on to Ling Chen's arm before she could fall asleep.

Ling Chen didn't feel like sleeping at all. The moonlight spilled into the room from the window, and he quietly looked at the sleeping Tian Tian. Her little and round face had a slight smile on it, and her short hair was spread out on her pillow.

She was so beautiful at only ten years old-when she grew up, she would definitely be just as beautiful as Shui Ruo, and cause countless boys to fall for her.

He would never forget that on the night Tian Tian moved in with them, Shui Ruo had been leaning against him as she said, "How wonderful would it be if we could have such a cute daughter in future."

Back then, if it wasn't because Shui Ruo liked Tian Tian so much, he definitely wouldn't have allowed this strange girl to stay with them. Their two-person world had been completely disrupted, and she had brought quite a few troubles with her... he had never thought that they would become so dependent on each other-Tian Tian couldn't leave him, and he... couldn't leave Tian Tian either. Within Tian Tian, he found a shadow of Shui Ruo. If Tian Tian was gone, even if Ling Chen kept living, he would just be an empty shell.

"Big sister... big sister..."

Tian Tian cried out in her sleep, and she curled up into a foetal position. Two lines of tears began to trickle down her face.

Ling Chen wiped the tears off her face. During the day, she had been so happy and excited... in front of him, she had suppressed all of her sadness and grief, only showing her joyful side. Only this way could she gradually help Ling Chen get rid of the sorrow in his own heart. However, she couldn't control herself while asleep.

“Tian Tian, you're stronger than me.” Ling Chen said as he looked at her. After softly sighing, he walked out of the room and over to the lake.

Standing in front of the man-made lake, the wind was quite cool and refreshing. His heart became even more peaceful as he stood here. These days, he hadn't been able to sleep properly. Whenever he closed his eyes, he would think of Shui Ruo. He begged himself to fall asleep, so he wouldn't have to experience that pain, and within his dreams, he could meet Shui Ruo...

Ling Chen squatted down and stretched his hand towards the calm surface of the lake. The water rippled out, distorting his image in the water. At this moment, Ling Chen stared at the Mystic Moon bracelet on his hand.

Ling Chen's bracelet was always on his wrist, and his wrist was one of the most well-protected areas of his body. After all, if his wrist was damaged, he wouldn't be able to kill more people. Adding on the special materials used to create the bracelet, it was

incredibly difficult for Ling Chen's bracelet to be destroyed. As such, despite all the fighting at the Long family's residence, the bracelet on his wrist was still fine.

Mystic Moon... he had not entered that world in a long time.

Back then, he had entered Mystic Moon to repay Yun Feng for saving Shui Ruo.

However, now that Shui Ruo had passed away, he couldn't find any reason to go into the game.

Slowly, he took off the bracelet. After that night of mass killing, it was the only thing on his body that had not been destroyed. He had almost forgotten about its existence, and holding it in his hands, he felt that the Mystic Moon world was so far away. He, who had entered Mystic Moon every day, could find no motivation for entering.

Xi Ling, Leng'Er, Xiao Hui...

Although you're all virtual creatures, but I'm sure your feelings are all real. However... I'm an irresponsible master. Perhaps I'll never be able to see you all again.

Right now, I just want to protect Tian Tian. When we've both recovered, I want to take her to travel around the world, and see beautiful places and eat delicious things. I want to fulfil the agreement I made with Shui Ruo that year, as well as watch Tian

Tian grow up... I don't want to lose anyone anymore.

Yun Feng, Meng Xin, forgive me for breaking my promise. However, I will try to make up for it.

Ling Chen gripped the bracelet and threw it in front of him. The bracelet arced as it landed in the middle of the lake, then sank down.

Ling Chen turned around and started to walk back to the villa. At this moment, an incredibly soft voice sounded in his ear, "Are you really going to throw everything away like this?"

Ling Chen suddenly froze, and turned around as he yelled, "Who's there!!"

On such a peaceful night, in such a vast area, even an expert like Gui Ya would be detected by Ling Chen as soon as he came within 100 metres of him. However, Ling Chen couldn't detect anyone behind him at all. That voice had clearly sounded out beside his ear!

Chapter 349 - The Connected Worlds

The voice from the darkness caused Ling Chen to become incredibly tense... to be able to stealthily approach him, and not let him detect even a bit of their presence-this was simply impossible. Even Instructor Hell wouldn't have been able to do such a thing. What sort of monstrous expert was this person... or could it be that there were really such things as ghosts?

Moreover, this voice was somewhat familiar to him. It wasn't just a faint feeling of familiarity-the more he thought about it, the more he realised that it was a voice that he heard quite often.

“Hehe...” His shocked appearance caused the other person to giggle, and the voice once again sounded out, “Little master, can't you tell it's me?”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

Ling Chen suddenly realised why this voice sounded so familiar. This voice was incredibly soft and lazy, yet also dreamy and seductive. Ling Chen froze, and even his consciousness felt like it was going to explode out of his body...

The way she talked to him, the name that she had called him...

This voice...

It evidently belonged to that demoness Qi Yue, from Mystic

Moon!!

Impossible! Impossible!! This was his new home in Su Hang. In front of him was the man-made lake, and there was bamboo all around him. The bracelet had been thrown into the middle of the lake, and this was definitely not the virtual world.

So what was with this voice?

It was definitely coming from beside his ear... but there was not a single person around!

Impossible! A character in the virtual world definitely couldn't appear in the real world!

Ling Chen deeply breathed in, and said in a serious voice, "Who the hell's playing pranks. Get out immediately."

"Aww..." The voice let out a small sigh of disappointment, and the space in front of Ling Chen twisted. His eyes widened, and a black figure, defying all logic, appeared in front of him...

Although it was quite dark, he could clearly see her face and body, as if she was separated from the darkness. What he saw was a bewitchingly beautiful face, as well as an incredibly seductive and voluptuous body.

She was wearing an entire body of black clothing, and the clothes on her upper body were extremely tight against her chest. Just by

standing there, this demoness looked so beautiful and alluring that almost every man would go crazy for her. Looking at her, Ling Chen's eyes widened to comical proportions, and his throat became extremely dry. He was so shocked that he couldn't utter a single word.

“Little master, you're so heartless. It's only been such a short period of time, but you can't even tell it's my voice.” The woman said in a coy voice as she made a sad expression.

“Qi... Qi Yue!!” Ling Chen opened and closed his mouth three times before he was able to finally yell out her name.

The sound of footsteps rapidly running over sounded out in the distance, and Qi Yue's image immediately vanished. Ling Chen stared at where Qi Yue had been, completely dumbfounded.

What was going on? How could Qi Yue appear here? Just what was happening... what had just happened couldn't be explained by logic or science... this sort of thing happened only in movies and comics!!

Could it be that he was hallucinating? Perhaps he was too mentally drained. However, what had just happened was far too realistic!

What was going on? Qi Yue... was definitely a person within a virtual game! No, she didn't even count as a person-she was a virtual spirit!

Two identical figures came closer and closer, and reached Ling Chen at the same time. Of course, it was Chao Xi and Chao Ying. They were still wearing their pyjamas, as they had hurried over as fast as they could. They looked around in alarm, and worriedly asked, “Master? What happened? Are there intruders?”

Although they were living quite far away, it was the dead of the night and Ling Chen’s yell had travelled clearly into their ears. They had immediately rushed over as soon as they had heard him.

Ling Chen immediately controlled his expression and calmly said, “It’s nothing. It’s just that something landed into the lake and I was too suspicious. Go back and get some rest. I’m more than half healed, so within Su Hang, there’s nothing that can threaten my life. Don’t worry about it.”

Although they felt something wasn’t quite right, since Ling Chen had said everything was fine, they swiftly departed. After they were far away, Ling Chen took a deep breath and said, “Come out.”

The space in front of him twisted, and the figure once again appeared. Ling Chen took this opportunity to examine her closely. Her appearance, clothes, expression and her voice...

Definitely all belonged to Qi Yue!!

Even though he had incredible mental fortitude, seeing a virtual character appear in real life caused him to become extremely shocked, and his entire body was cold.

No one could accept such a thing could actually happen in reality.

“You... you’re really Qi Yue?!” Ling Chen asked as he gritted his teeth. In the darkness, he forcefully pinched himself... which hurt quite a lot. This definitely wasn’t a dream!

Qi Yue revealed a smile that was much too familiar to Ling Chen. Out of all the women he had met, Qi Yue was definitely the most beautiful and bewitching one out of all of them. She was the only woman who could easily cause him to lose control of his emotions. Ling Chen believed that this sort of woman could only appear in the virtual world, because it was simply impossible for such an enchanting woman to exist in the real world.

However, this woman had actually appeared in reality.

“Of course it’s me. Could it be that you don’t recognise me after only 10 days? In the other world, little master and I were together all~ the time.”

She was indeed Qi Yue-at least, Ling Chen couldn’t find anything that suggested otherwise. Apart from Qi Yue, who could this coy seductress be? He shook his head, and stared at her, trying to look through her. As he concentrated, he could faintly see the garden behind her... her body seemed to be semi-transparent. He did his best to keep himself calm, and maintained a serious expression as he asked, “Tell me... why did you appear here? You’re definitely... definitely...”

Ling Chen’s reaction caused Qi Yue to become even more

amused. She glided forwards, closer towards Ling Chen, as she said, “Of course it’s because little master hasn’t come to visit me in a long time. I really missed little master, so I came to visit him.”

Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he frowned, “You know what sort of answer I want! If you’re really Qi Yue... you should be a virtual character! How is it possible that you’re here?! This is earth - reality-so what’s going on?”

“Oh?” Qi Yue’s smile became even wider as she asked, “Earth is reality-can’t the Mystic Moon world also be reality?”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Qi Yue’s words completely stupefied Ling Chen. He immediately replied, “Mystic Moon is a virtual game created by the Cosmos Corporation. Everything’s just a bunch of numbers. Could it be... that technology has advanced so much that virtual creatures can be projected into the real world?”

“Hehe! Little master has quite the imagination. However, you’re completely wrong. At least, the Mystic Moon world that I know is completely real. It’s just that it’s not as advanced as your world, but its energy levels are greater than your world by many times. I just don’t how our Mystic Moon world became a virtual game for you humans though. I don’t want to know the answer either.

“All I know is that 10 years ago, the Mystic Moon world was covered by a mysterious energy, and was gradually changed... In 10 years, the entire workings of Mystic Moon, as well as countless

creatures' identities, knowledge and memories were all changed. Countless objects were also modified through numbers. Now, Mystic Moon has become a world made of numbers. That mysterious energy was so powerful that it could even modify living beings' consciousness. I was one of the few people who detected these changes. Does little master understand what I'm talking about?"

Ling Chen: "!@#\$%...."

"Aiya, why can't little master understand what I'm saying. To be honest, I don't really know what happened either. However, me being able to appear in front of little master means that the Mystic Moon world isn't just a 'virtual game', right?" Qi Yue slowly said.

Ling Chen listened with his mouth open. He simply couldn't understand what Qi Yue was talking about. Modified? World made of numbers? What was she on about?

However, Qi Yue had appeared in front of him-this was the undeniable truth!

Chapter 350 - Determination (1)

Seeing that Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded, Qi Yue continued to speak, “I don’t understand what happened to the Mystic Moon world either. However, the truth is bound to come to light sooner or later. What that truth is, doesn’t really matter to either of us. I didn’t come to find little master just because I missed him-there’s something much more important. I’m sure little master will be interested in it too.”

“What is it?” Ling Chen asked. Right now, his mind was in complete chaos. He simply couldn’t understand how Qi Yue was here.

“Lil sis Shui Ruo’s body is with me. Or more accurately, it’s within the Lunar Scourge.”

Qi Yue uttered a sentence that completely blew Ling Chen’s mind.

“With... you? You’re saying you took Shui Ruo’s body?” Ling Chen lurched forwards and tried to grab Qi Yue, but she was only an image. He yelled, “Why’s she with you? How could she be in the Lunar Scourge... what do you want?”

“Little master... please calm down. I put lil sis Shui Ruo’s body into the Lunar Scourge because the space within the Lunar Scourge is special. It’s impossible to put living creatures in it, but corpses are fine. Because I put her body into the Lunar Scourge, it will be preserved for a while. Otherwise, in the place where little master

was living, her body wouldn't have been able to last for very long.”

Everything that Qi Yue said sounded completely impossible. These days, he had been pondering unceasingly as to how Shui Ruo's body had disappeared, as well as who would be able to take away the corpse. And now, the supposed truth that he had just been told was something no one would be able to believe. If he hadn't seen Qi Yue appear and disappear, he would never believe what she had said. He gritted his teeth as he asked, “Are you saying... that the Lunar Scourge can also appear here? And what are you going to do with Shui Ruo's body? Immediately return her to me!!”

Only with things involving Shui Ruo would Ling Chen lose control of his emotions. Qi Yue sighed as she replied, “Little master, do you really want me to return lil sis Shui Ruo to you? In such a climate, her body will decompose very quickly, and there won't be even a chance for her to come back to life. Doesn't little master want to revive little sis Shui Ruo?”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

Ling Chen felt as if he had been struck by lightning. The word “revive” struck him deep in his heart, and spread to every part of his body. He stared at Qi Yue as he said in a trembling voice, “What did you say... what do you mean by ‘revive’... explain yourself!!”

“It's very simple,” Qi Yue said. Ling Chen's reaction was exactly what she had expected. The only thing that could possibly make him react like this was that girl. She casually replied, “What I'm saying is that since little master likes little sis Shui Ruo so much,

then he should revive her. Little master clearly knows how to bring her back to life.”

Ling Chen almost stopped breathing as his heart trembled, and his blood began to boil. He yelled, “You’re saying Ruo Ruo can be revived? How? I don’t know... I don’t know what it is! Hurry up and tell me!”

It was impossible for a dead person to come back to life-this was something that even toddlers knew. If people could come back from the dead, then this world’s order would have been destroyed a long time ago. Resurrection from the dead only happened in stories.

No one would believe what Qi Yue was saying.

However, hearing Qi Yue’s words... no matter how impossible they seemed, Ling Chen wanted to believe that they were true. He wanted to believe that there was a method for reviving Shui Ruo! He so, so desperately believed that it was true!

“Aiya, did little master really forget? I definitely told little master before. It was the second time when Xi Ling sacrificed herself for little master-do you really not remember?” Qi Yue said.

Back when Xi Ling sacrificed herself for him for the second time... Ling Chen’s mind had been completely thrown into chaos by Qi Yue’s words. The words that Qi Yue said to him at that time surfaced in his mind as he stared at her in shock, “Are you saying... saying...”

Qi Yue smirked, “Looks like little master finally remembered. Back then, after Xi Ling used the Nine Suns Heavenly Wrath and was about to die, little master asked me how she can be saved. I told little master two methods: the first was to find the Vermillion Bird and use its soul flame to save Xi Ling. The other method was to revive Xi Ling after she had died.”

“.....” Ling Chen still clearly remembered the methods she had told him.

“Life and death are two important ingredients to the basic order of a world. Resurrecting from the dead is something that goes against the heavens. If someone really did rise from the dead, there would be severe consequences on the natural world’s order and laws. As such, there should not be such a thing. At least, I’ve never heard of anyone resurrecting after their soul has been destroyed. However... in the ancient Mystic Moon world, there was a legend... the legend says that if one can gather four important ingredients, they’ll be able to bring someone back from the dead. Does little master remember what they are?”

Ling Chen’s breathing became irregular as he slowly said, “The blood of Moon Goddesses... the soul of the Demon Emperor... the tears of a Shura... the Scourge of the Moon.”

These were the things that Qi Yue had mentioned to him in the past.

“That’s right. The Moon Gods represent utmost holiness; the

Demon Emperor represents utmost evil; the Shura represents utmost hatred. The Moon Gods' blood, Demon Emperor's soul and Shura's tear contain the power of holiness, evil and hatred. It is said that when these three powers are combined with the Lunar Scourge, heaven-defying power can be released, which can change the natural laws and cause a being to come back to life.

“However, causing someone to rise from the dead definitely goes against the heavens, and it's unlikely that such an unnatural thing can happen. As such, this is only a legend, and no one has successfully accomplished it before. It's very well possible that it was just a story made up by a bored person. Well, is little master willing to believe this legend? Aiya, it's probably quite difficult for little master to believe a legend about resurrection from a 'virtual game'.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Moreover, even if this legend is true, obtaining even one of the ingredients is incredibly difficult. With how powerful the Moon God clan is, who would be able to obtain a Moon God's blood? As for the Demon Emperor, even the Moon Gods fear him. Plus, he died over 10,000 years ago-how can someone find his soul? As for the tear of a Shura... Shura's are the rarest creatures in existence, and as soon as one appears, they are exterminated by the heavens-who would be able to obtain a Shura's tear? However, little master possesses the fourth – and most important – ingredient: the Lunar Scourge. Notwithstanding, the Lunar Scourge requires its twelve God Orbs in order to fulfil the legend. However, that doesn't mean the Saint Orbs aren't important-if the three Saint Orbs are missing, the revived creature will be lacking in power, and their memories, as well as senses will be affected.”

Seeing Ling Chen's expression becoming more and more intense, Qi Yue continued to leisurely speak, "Little master, do you understand? What I just told you was just a legend from a 'virtual game'- and it's even more laughable than a joke, and even more difficult to accomplish than reaching the skies. In fact, it's not even verifiable. Not being able to accept it or believe it is completely normal. Any earthling would take it as a joke. However, as little master's slave, all I can do is tell this legend to little master. The only evidence I have is myself... the fact that I'm able to appear in this world. If little master really wants, I can show him lil sis Shui Ruo's body right now."

The Mystic Moon world took the Cosmos Corporation 10 years to develop. Everyone knew about its name and what it was. In fact, most people spent more time in that world than in the real world.

Indeed, this virtual world was created by humans. Humans had never risen from the dead before, and never would. However, a creature... no, a spirit from the virtual world had appeared before his eyes in the real world, and told him a legend from the virtual world about resurrection of the dead... anyone who heard it would take it as a joke.

However, if there was a single person in the world who would believe such a legend... it was Ling Chen.

He stared unblinkingly at Qi Yue as he said each word at a time, "I believe... of course I believe! You even appeared before me-what isn't there to believe! I'll always believe that Ruo Ruo won't leave me!"

Qi Yue: “.....”

Did Qi Yue's appearance cause him to believe that implausible legend? Of course not... it was Ling Chen himself who desperately wanted to believe that there was a method to bring Shui Ruo back to him. To him, there was nothing more important than being with Shui Ruo... if it could really bring Shui Ruo back to life, no matter how silly and laughable it seemed, he would believe it. He would do all he could to fulfil this implausible, unconfirmed legend.

Chapter 351 - Determination (2)

The blood of Moon Goddesses, the soul of the Demon Emperor, the tears of a Shura and the Scourge of the Moon...

Only when they were together could Shui Ruo be revived!

This thought took root deep within Ling Chen's heart. His soul, which had sunk into darkness due to Shui Ruo's death, finally found a bit of light. No matter what it took, he would definitely revive Shui Ruo.

No matter if it was true or false; no matter if in the end it was all for nothing... as long as there was a slight sliver of hope, Ling Chen definitely wouldn't give up or back down.

"Looks like the little master has made his decision." Qi Yue said as she smiled. She had long since predicted that Ling Chen would make such a decision. His feelings towards Shui Ruo were incredibly deep-for her, he had actually believed the words that Qi Yue had spoken. If he really decided to follow that path and collect the Moon Goddesses' blood, the Demon Emperor's Soul and a Shura's tear, it could take him ten, a hundred... or even a thousand years. Perhaps, the rest of his life would be spent on this quest, and he may even end up empty-handed at the end. However, he still made this decision, and the look in his eyes was of incredible determination.

Although Qi Yue had been with him for a long time, he still surprised her from time to time. This was not the first time he had

shocked her.

He could be heartless at times, and incredibly kind at others. However, in the end, he was a true and loyal person.

Perhaps that was why... the people around him were willing to follow him.

Qi Yue continued to speak, "Little master, aren't you afraid... that this is all just a story? Moreover, to you, the Mystic Moon world is just a virtual world. Even if you can believe that legend, I can't confirm if it's true or not. Also, there has never been a record of anyone being revived before. It's really possible that all your effort will be for nought."

Her words did not cause Ling Chen to hesitate at all. In fact, his eyes became even more resolute.

"Who cares about that... since you were able to appear here, that's enough... if I can bring Shui Ruo back, I'm willing to believe all of this!" Ling Chen took in a deep breath as he continued, "Qi Yue... I have the Lunar Scourge, so tell me... how can I obtain the three other ingredients: the Moon Goddesses' tears, the Demon Emperor's soul and a Shura's tear? Only you can help me with this."

"You're my master, so I'll definitely help you with that," Qi Yue said as she giggled, "Since little master was able to conquer the Lunar Scourge, little master definitely isn't an ordinary person. Now, you're even the successor of the Feng Chen Sect, and have

the incredibly lucky Xiao Hui following you around. Perhaps little master really will be able to create a miracle. After all, little master has created quite a few already.”

Ling Chen didn't want to hear any of this useless waffle. He directly asked, “About the Moon Goddesses' blood-is that the blood of Order, Fate and Freedom, the three current Moon Goddesses? Do I just need blood from one of them, or all three?”

“Of course it's all three. They each respectively wield a portion of the Highest Moon God's power from back then. Only by combining their blood will the legend be fulfilled-you can't lack even a single one of them.” Qi Yue replied. Each of the Moon Goddesses was incredibly powerful-obtaining the blood from a single one of them would be almost impossible, let alone all three.

“All three... so all I have to do is injure them, then collect their blood?” Ling Chen gritted his teeth. When he received the Lunar Scourge, he was told that he was fated to be enemies with the Moon God Clan. If he couldn't defeat them or destroy them, it would be himself and the Lunar Scourge that would be destroyed.

And now, he was required to collect their blood.

Surprisingly, Qi Yue shook her head as she said in a coy voice, “Of course it's not that simple. Obtaining the “Moon Goddesses' blood” isn't as simple as injuring them or even killing them. This is because the “Moon Goddesses' blood” refers to... their virgin blood.”

Ling Chen: “!@#\$\$%....” (completely shocked)

“Hahaha, did that give you a fright?” Qi Yue couldn’t help but laugh, “However, what I just said wasn’t a joke. Only with the three Moon Goddesses’ virgin blood combined together can you release the power of utmost holiness. Moreover, you need the virgin blood of all three of them. It’s much harder than killing them, right?”

Ling Chen could feel a headache coming on. This was simply ridiculous. He shook his head as he asked, “Then... what about the Demon Emperor’s soul? Where can I find it?”

Qi Yue suppressed her laughter as she casually explained, “In the ancient times, Demon Gods ran rampant, and any of their souls could be counted as the soul of a Demon Emperor. However, the True Gods and Demon Gods destroyed each other, and disappeared from the world. Now, there aren’t anymore True Gods or Demon Gods-only the Moon God Clan and the Night Demon Clan which count as demi-gods. The last Demon bloodline was exterminated 10,000 years ago, which was the Demon Beast Clan. Their leader was the last creature in the Forgotten Continent that possessed a Demon Soul.”

“But, since it’s already dead... does that mean it’s impossible to find the soul of a Demon Emperor?” Ling Chen asked.

“Nope,” Qi Yue smiled as she shook her head, “Ten thousand years ago, the Demon Beast Clan was exterminated by the Moon God Clan. However, the Demon Beast Clan had a secret that even the Moon God Clan doesn’t know about.”

“What was the secret?”

“The Demon Emperor wasn’t an idiot. He knew that his Demon Beast Clan couldn’t survive in the Forgotten Continent, so before they were destroyed by the Moon God Clan and the Fairy Clan, he prepared an escape route for himself. He separated his Demon Soul into 10 parts, and hid them within 10 pieces of jade. As long as these pieces of jade weren’t destroyed, then he could be revived with his soul in those pieces of jade. Those 10 jades can be found on the ten ancient demon beasts. Each of them has one, and these pieces of jade are more important than their own lives.”

“Ten ancient demon beasts... jade... could it be...” Ling Chen suddenly thought of the War Demon Beast that had been killed by Xi Ling and the Shadow Demon Beast that had been killed by the Shura. After they had died, they had each dropped a piece of jade that looked like a ‘c’... each of the jades was imprinted with “War” and “Shadow”, respectively.

“That’s right, little master has already obtained two of the Demon Jade Hooks from the War Demon Beast and the Shadow Demon Beast. These ten pieces of jade are things that the ten ancient demon beasts must protect with their lives. Only by killing them can you obtain the jade in their possession. Every year, the ten ancient demon beasts meet up, so they can gather the ten Demon Jade Hooks and fill them with their power, so as to maintain the soul of the Demon Emperor.

“The ten ancient demon beasts have never entered into human territory all these years, and haven’t caused any trouble. As such,

they've been able to escape the notice of the Moon God Clan, who don't even know of their plan to revive the Demon Emperor. Currently, 10,000 years have passed, but the Demon Emperor hasn't been revived, because the ten ancient demon beasts are missing something important."

The ten ancient beasts gathered once every year... Ling Chen remembered that back when he had entered the Lonely Spirit Ridge, he hadn't encountered any danger. Qian Gun Gun had said "that guy" would leave for a bit of time each year. It seemed that back then when he had gone to the Lonely Spirit Ridge, that was when the ten ancient demon beasts were meeting.

"Something important? What is it?"

Qi Yue replied, "Lake water from the Underworld Blood Lake at the bottom of the Underworld."

"Lake water... from the Underworld Blood Lake?" Ling Chen said to himself. The Underworld Blood Lake sounded familiar to him. He instantly remembered the three Psychic Flowers he had bought from Qian Gun Gun-apparently they grew beside the Underworld Blood Lake. The "Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal" that he had bought from Qian Gun Gun had also come from the bottom of the Underworld Blood Lake.

"The Underworld Blood Lake is located in the innermost region of the Underworld, and is one of the three forbidden areas of the Underworld. Unless the Underworld King personally permits it, no living or dead creature can go there. The Underworld Blood Lake's existence precedes that of the Underworld itself, and countless

remains are buried there. It is filled with the energy of countless souls and spirits. After 10,000 years, not even the Underworld King knows how many bodies have been buried in there, and how much energy has been accumulated. If the ten ancient demon beasts can obtain lake water from the Underworld Blood Lake, and pour it over the Demon Jade Hooks when they are together, they will be able to awaken the Demon Emperor.

“It’s just that the Underworld is like a separate world, and only dead creatures and spirits can enter. The only living creature that is able to enter and exit from the Underworld is that Qian Gun Gun. The Underworld King is not weaker than any of the Moon Goddesses, and with the incredibly destructive Underworld God Cannon, not even the Moon God Clan dares to make any trouble for the Underworld. Although the ten ancient demon beasts are powerful, but charging into the Underworld would be tantamount to suicide for them, let alone reaching the Underworld Blood Lake. As such, although 10,000 years have passed, they haven’t been able to obtain the lake water from the Underworld Blood Lake.”

Ling Chen could only listen in silence.

Resurrection from the dead, going against the heavens...

Since it was going against the heavens, how could it be easily accomplished...

The Moon Goddesses’ Blood... referred to the virgin blood of all three of the Moon Goddesses.

The Demon Emperor's Soul... required killing all of the Mysterious God grade ten ancient demon beasts, as well as entering the Underworld to acquire lake water from the Underworld Blood Lake...

This sort of goal seemed almost impossible.

Chapter 352 - Determination (3)

“Then what about the Shura’s tear? How can I find that?” Ling Chen asked. It was now completely dark in the real world.

Qi Yue fell into silence for a while, before replying, “The tear of a Shura is the ingredient that is hardest to find. In order to obtain a Shura’s tear, you must first find a Shura... however, how can such existences appear so easily? Moreover, a true Shura that supposedly has no emotions or feelings-how could they shed tears? As such, a “Shura’s tear” is more or less an oxymoron. If there was a creature that didn’t shed tears, that would be Shuras. I doubt a Shura’s tear has ever come into existence before.”

The tear... of a Shura...

Shuras were incredibly rare, and usually, once a Shura appeared, the entire world would be thrown into disaster. The catastrophe created by the last Shura remained within many peoples’ memories... the Shura that had obliterated 10% of all living creatures on the Forgotten Continent was simply terrifying. For there to be another Shura in the Forgotten Continent, and to obtain his tears... was this even possible?

Seeing Ling Chen’s expression, Qi Yue knew what he was thinking. Obtaining each of these four ingredients was as difficult as reaching the heavens. Even the experts of the Forgotten Continent wouldn’t have any hope in obtaining even a single one of them. Qi Yue had given Ling Chen a wonderful goal, as well as much hope, but the path to that goal was simply too arduous and cruel...

However, despite this, she could only see determination in Ling Chen's eyes.

Even so, Ling Chen would do all he could to fulfil this legend—after all, there was nothing else he could do.

Qi Yue sighed inwardly as she felt a bit conflicted. She continued to speak, “Little master, if you've really made your decision, then the first thing you should do is find the twelve God Orbs and three Saint Orbs of the Lunar Scourge. Only when you've completed the Lunar Scourge and attained greater power will you have a chance at obtaining the other ingredients.”

However, this didn't quite apply for the “tears of a Shura”.

A cold breeze blew past, causing ripples on the surface of the lake. Ling Chen looked over towards the middle of the lake, where he had thrown his bracelet. The lake was quite still, so his bracelet probably directly sank downwards.

Ling Chen kicked off his shoes, and jumped into the lake. He dived downwards, towards where his bracelet had fallen. As the strongest Reaper, how could he not be proficient at swimming as well?

The man-made lake was quite shallow. Ling Chen quickly found the bracelet, and burst out of the water. When he returned to the bank of the lake, he pressed one of the buttons, and the small screen lit up with the time. Not only was the bracelet incredibly

tough, but was also completely water-resistant. Ling Chen gripped it in his hand... this time, he definitely wouldn't throw it away again.

Qi Yue smiled and softly said, "Looks like little master's going to go back soon. I can finally be with little master in the Mystic Moon world again... oh, there's something else I wanted to tell little master. The Lunar Scourge can preserve lil sis Shui Ruo's body, but this is only a temporary measure-I can only leave her in there for seven days. If lil sis Shui Ruo's body decomposes, then even if little master finds those ingredients, it'll be useless."

"Do you have any other methods?" Ling Chen asked. Seeing as Qi Yue had said this, it seemed that she had another idea in mind.

"Of course. However, it all depends on little master's efforts. Just telling you won't be enough." Qi Yue said indifferently.

"Then tell me what I need to do." Ling Chen immediately replied.

"Find the Fairy Fountain." Qi Yue said, uttering a name that Ling Chen had never heard before.

"Fairy... Fountain...?" Ling Chen repeated to himself.

"The Fairy Fountain is located at the origins of the Fairy Clan, which is the Fairy Realm. The water in the Fairy Fountain is incredibly pure-if flowers or grass float in the water, they won't wither for 1,000 years. If a body is placed inside there, it won't rot

for 10,000 years, and will become even more beautiful. If you want to preserve lil sis Shui Ruo's body for a long time, you'll need to go into the Fairy Realm and put her body into the Fairy Fountain. If you can do that, then you'll have all the time in the world to look for those ingredients." Qi Yue explained. However, there was something that she didn't say-the Fairy Fountain was one of the most important places to the Fairy Clan-they wouldn't allow anything to be put inside it.

Fairy Clan... Fairy Realm...

That time when he had inadvertently gone to the Fairy Realm, he had caused a massive ruckus, but had luckily escaped. He originally planned to never go back, but for Shui Ruo, he would once again go to the Fairy Realm.

"Are you saying... that right now, Ruo Ruo's body... is in the Mystic Moon world?" Ling Chen asked. Ling Chen had already been shocked too many times in this short period of time. Seeing as Qi Yue could appear here, it wouldn't be too inconceivable that Shui Ruo's body was within the Mystic Moon world.

Was Mystic Moon actually a real world? If that was the case, what was going on with Cosmos Corporation, which supposedly developed this 'game'?

"Of course she's in the Mystic Moon world. If little master wants to see her, then come back to Mystic Moon, and I'll immediately show you your 'Ruo Ruo'."

Just as Qi Yue said this, a clear and worried voice travelled from afar, “Big brother... big brother, where are you? Big brother!”

Tian Tian’s voice sounded quite worried and distraught. Qi Yue laughed, “Looks like little master has some things to take care of. In that case, I’ll see you soon in the Mystic Moon world.”

Qi Yue had told him all that she had wanted to say, and had received the response she wanted. She winked at him as she slowly disappeared.

All that was left was the darkness. He couldn’t see or hear Qi Yue’s figure or voice anymore. Ling Chen spaced out for a few moments, and when he came back to his senses, he wasn’t quite sure whether that had really just happened, or if he was hallucinating.

Tian Tian’s yells became louder and more worried. Ling Chen quickly rushed back to the villa.

“Tian Tian, I’m here.” Ling Chen said as he reached the bedroom. He saw that Tian Tian had already gotten out of bed, and she leapt towards him as soon as she saw him. She grabbed on to him tightly as she said, her eyes full of tears, “Big brother, where did you go? When I woke up, I was all alone... I was so afraid.”

After losing her big sister, Tian Tian was still worried that her big brother would do something stupid. She had received a big fright when she woke up in the middle of the night and found that Ling Chen wasn’t next to her.

Ling Chen gently patted Tian Tian's back, and said in a gentle voice, "I couldn't fall asleep, so I went to take a dip in the lake. Look, my clothes are still wet."

After hugging Ling Chen, Tian Tian's pyjamas had also been dampened.

Ling Chen dried himself and got changed, and gave Tian Tian a dry pair of pyjamas. He hugged Tian Tian in his arms under the blankets, and she was finally able to settle down and fall asleep again.

Ling Chen stroked Tian Tian's face tenderly like she was his own daughter. It was already quite late, but Ling Chen still didn't feel like sleeping. After hearing what Qi Yue had said, he simply couldn't calm down.

Qi Yue's appearance was completely incomprehensible and inexplicable. However, this gave him a slight sense of hope for resurrecting Shui Ruo.

For this sliver of hope, he was willing to put in all of his effort and believe this legend.

Ruo Ruo... Ruo Ruo...

Wait for me... I'll bring you back... I will... I definitely will!!

Ling Chen's mind returned to that catastrophic night, as well as the three things she had made him promise...

“Big brother... big sister Dia Wu... loves you so much... even as much as I do... she did so much for you... big brother... you must find her... and be with her... as well as Qi Qi and Su Su... they're all so cute and kind and pretty... they're all good enough for big brother... and all like big brother a lot... big brother can't give them... to other people... I'm sure big brother will like them as well... and also big sister Bing Yao... I'm not dumb, I could tell that... she loves big brother so much... and she can also protect big brother... so big brother can't leave her either...”

“Big brother... the second thing... big brother looks the best when he's smiling... so no matter what happens, big brother has to live smiling every day... and has to be happier than anyone else... this is my biggest wish... big brother will fulfil this, right...”

“The third thing... big brother... make sure you take care of Tian Tian...”

Ling Chen lifted his head up as tears flowed out of his eyes. However, his mouth had a faint smile... Ruo Ruo, even at the end of your life, all you were thinking about was me. I'll definitely do everything that I promised you... I'll go and win over those girls you mentioned, and I'll take good care of Tian Tian. I'll live happily every day... because I know Ruo Ruo hasn't truly left me. Ruo Ruo has only temporarily fallen asleep... I'll come to wake you up soon...

Ling Chen had never felt so determined to accomplish something

before. There had been great changes within his heart, and his destiny... had also been greatly changed.

Chapter 353 - I'm Back

Early morning.

“Tian Tian, time to get up. The sun's shining already.”

“Ugh... no... I want to sleep for a bit longer...” Tian Tian protested sleepily. However, she still slowly opened her eyes as she gradually woke up. Within her vision was an unfamiliar ceiling. Then she remembered that this was their new home, and she was lying in a new bed. This was the first time she would be getting out of bed in their new home.

Ling Chen picked her up and put her at the edge of the bed, and brought over her clothes, “Here, put on your clothes and we'll go eat breakfast. After having breakfast, I'll take you to visit your big sisters.”

“Ah? Really?” Tian Tian suddenly didn't feel sleepy anymore. Of course, she knew who those ‘big sisters’ that Ling Chen mentioned were. After not meeting them for more than 10 days, she missed them quite a bit. She looked up towards Ling Chen's face... Ling Chen was wearing light-coloured casual clothes, and was looking much better than before. The smile on his face was quite faint, but it was natural. He had smiled at her the entire day yesterday, but those smiles all looked like they were fake and forced, which made her heart ache.

Looking at the current Ling Chen, Tian Tian couldn't help but stare. His hair was orderly, and he was dressed properly, and had a

faint, warm smile on his face... this was the big brother that she knew.

Seeing Tian Tian stare at him, Ling Chen tapped his nose, “Tian Tian, why are you looking at me like that? Is there something on my face?”

Tian Tian shook her head and said, “Big brother, you’re... different from yesterday.”

“Really? How so?” Ling Chen asked as he smiled.

Tian Tian earnestly replied, “Today’s big brother looks better and is more likeable than yesterday’s big brother.”

“Haha!” Ling Chen laughed out loud. Of course, he knew what had happened. Last night, there had been great changes within his heart. Because of the hope that now existed within him, all of the pain and grief had been dispelled. After all, Shui Ruo had made him promise that he would smile and live each day happily. He would do his best to create another miracle, and reunite himself and Tian Tian with Shui Ruo.

He picked Tian Tian up and put her on his legs, and cradled her like cradling a baby, “Tian Tian, we’re both quite sad about Ruo Ruo passing away. However, I believe that even if Ruo Ruo isn’t alive anymore, she’s still by our side and is watching us. How could she bear to leave us? So, if we wallow in our pain and anguish, Ruo Ruo, who’s always watching us, will also feel that way. What she wants is that we can live happily and joyfully-that way, she can

also be happy. Tian Tian, we need to keep Ruo Ruo in our hearts, but also live happily, alright?”

Before Ling Chen had finished speaking, Tian Tian's tears had already started to flow. When he finished speaking, she buried her head in his chest and cried. Because Ling Chen was her last support and family, what she was always worried about was that despite his promises, he would once again do something stupid. However, hearing his words, as well as seeing this genuine smile, she knew that she could finally be at ease...

To her, Ling Chen being able to think this way was the best thing that could happen.

Within the Mystic Moon world.

The number one player in the Player Level Rankings was now LV28. The name “Ling Tian” which had once hung at the top was now nowhere to be found. In fact, even the Sword Emperor, “Feng Xie Yu” had disappeared.

The former number 1 of the Heaven Rankings and the current number 1 of the Heaven Rankings had all stopped levelling up, which caused much discussion and speculation in China. The chaos in Beijing had finally begun to settle down, but the news about the fugitive “Ling Chen” had not stopped being broadcast. Right now, virtually everyone in China knew about this person. However, not many people knew that “Ling Chen” was “Ling Tian” - this was something that was not spread by the Long family.

This was because Ling Tian's fame in the virtual world was simply too great-if people started viewing Ling Chen and Ling Tian as the same person, this would cause complications for the Long family.

On the Guild rankings, the number 1 position still belonged to the Yan Huang Alliance.

The former number 1, Heart's Dream, which was created by Ling Tian, had vanished. The top 10 places on the Guild Rankings were now full. Even if Heart's Dream could obtain another Guild Creation Token, they would never be able to enter the Guild Rankings again. However, Ling Tian had not appeared on the day Heart's Dream was destroyed, and neither had he gone to take revenge. There was no news about him at all. It was as if he had disappeared from the Mystic Moon world. As such, there were many people spreading rumours that Ling Tian's real life identity had been discovered by Long Tian Yun, and more and more people believed them.

East of the Azure Dragon City, at the boundary of the Forest Region.

It had been 11 days since the girls of Heart's Dream had met Ling Tian.

In the first 3 days of these 11 days, Ling Tian and his two sisters had gone missing, as well as Mu Bing Yao. On the fourth day, the news they received completely shocked them...

Ruo Ruo had died, and it wasn't known if Ling Tian and Tian Tian were still alive. Subsequently, Heart's Dream had been destroyed... this was simply a chain of nightmares.

None of the girls knew how they had kept going in these few days. The only comfort to them was that Mu Bing Yao had been found, and she was gradually recovering.

Today, they had arranged to meet together in the game to discuss their future. However, they didn't meet up at the Northern Residential District like before. This time, they met up in the Forest Region. The little building still belonged to them, but they would be overcome with pain whenever they entered it.

Yun Meng Xin arrived first, and she was wearing a white veil as usual. Next was Su'Er, then Xiao Qi and Mu Bing Yao. Although Mu Bing Yao's body hadn't fully recovered yet, her mind was completely fine, so she was able to enter the virtual world.

This was the first time they had met up since the beginning of the nightmare. These days, none of them felt like doing anything, as they were filled with grief about Shui Ruo's death and were extremely anxious about Ling Tian and Tian Tian.

“Big sister Bing Yao, are your injuries better?” Yun Meng Xin asked when she saw Mu Bing Yao. Normally, the four of them had countless things to talk about, but the atmosphere today was especially heavy. Originally, she had been surprised as to why Mu Bing Yao had joined them, but now she understood. It was because she was related to Ling Tian. However, none of this was important. No matter if it was Ling Tian or Mu Bing Yao, they were here to

help her.

Mu Bing Yao nodded. Her expression and eyes were all much colder than they had been before.

“Big sister Bing Yao’s injuries healed so quickly. She doesn’t even need treatment anymore.” Xiao Qi said. Her face sank as she continued, “I wonder how big brother Ling Tian and Tian Tian are right now...”

“Big sister Bing Yao, is big brother Ling Tian really fine? Is he completely safe now?” Su’Er softly asked. These days, she had secretly cried many times. She had recently found out that he was alive a few days ago, and that he was at Zhong Zhou. This caused her to start crying in joy, causing her parents to become quite confused.

After Ling Chen arrived at Zhong Zhou and contacted Gui Ya, Gui Ya had immediately told Mu Bing Yao. She then passed on this information to Xiao Qi, who told Su’Er and Yun Meng Xin. To them, this was the best piece of news that they had ever heard. However, they were still worried...

This was because Ling Chen was still the number 1 wanted fugitive in all of China. Even little kids knew of his name, what he looked like and his ‘crimes’. It would be almost impossible for him remain in China. How would he spend the rest of his days...

“Don’t worry, he’s in a very safe place.” Mu Bing Yao said. If it wasn’t for the fact that she was still recuperating, she would have

rushed to his side immediately in order to take care of him and protect him. She knew that even though he was alive, the pain from Shui Ruo's death was even worse than dying.

“Great... I hope that we can meet him again soon...”

The girls all lapsed into silence. These 11 days had passed as slowly as 11 years. When would they be able to see him again? When they meet him again, would he be like a soulless person, unable to smile or feel emotions...

At this moment, a system announcement rang in their ears.

“Ding... your friend “Ling Tian” is online.”

“Ding... your friend “Tian Tian Tian Tian” is online.”

The ordinary system announcements sounded like beautiful music to the four girls. They all stared at each other in shock, then moved almost simultaneously... they picked up their communication devices and hurriedly contacted that familiar name...

“Big brother Ling Tian... Big brother Ling Tian...”

“Big brother Ling Tian!! Where are you??”

“Ling Tian, you... you...”

“Master...”

The four girls, all of them with completely different personalities, had extremely similar expressions. All of their voices trembled as their eyes misted.

Just as Ling Chen came online, his communication device rang out with many familiar voices.

Bing Yao's, Meng Xin's, Qi Qi's, Su Su's...

All of them sounded incredibly emotional as they cried out to him. The mixture of these voices travelled into Ling Chen's heart, creating an extremely warm feeling. It had been a short 11 days, but everything had changed... he picked up his communication device as he said with a smile in his voice, “I'm back. I missed you guys a lot; how have you all been?”

Chapter 354 – Farewell (1)

Ling Chen brought Tian Tian to the outskirts of the forest. In a glance, he could see Yun Meng Xin and the others who were raising their heads and looking in anticipation.

“Big brother Ling Tian!”

“Tian Tian!!”

Seeing the appearance of Ling Chen and Tian Tian, their emotions could no longer be suppressed as they all rushed over without any control. Although it was only ten days of not seeing one another, it felt too long. All the things that had happened during this period of time was like a dream that no one would ever want to think about again; many things had slowly changed.

Putting Ling Tian’s condition aside, he and Tian Tian had at least appeared in front of them again. But Ruo Ruo..... had permanently left them. This truth weighed like a huge and heavy stone in their heart, and even though they had reunited, they were unable to be happy.

Mu Bing Yao was the fastest and appeared in front of Ling Chen so quickly that her body turned into a blur of white light. Looking at him and then looking at Tian Tian, her snow-lotus-like face reflected her heart which was filled and written with deep emotion which normally did not belong to the Frozen Hearted Man-eater. There were so many things she wanted to tell Ling Chen and Tian Tian, but once she saw them standing in front of her unscathed,

she, although already quite taciturn, was moved to speechlessness.

“Bing Yao, have your injuries recovered?” Ling Chen said as he looked at her with a light smile. During these days, the condition of her injuries were always on his mind. That night, she largely exhausted her energy, having carried him for a long period of time, before facing many strong enemies again..... it was very fortunate that she made it out alive. Maybe at that point in time she had already placed herself in death’s way. If not for the accidental appearance of the Xiao family later on..... he wouldn’t have been able to see her again.

He already owed Mu Bing Yao a lot and this time she risked her life for him..... So he had no reason not to cherish her well.

“En.” Mu Bing Yao nodded her head and lowered it to look at Tian Tian; like Ling Chen, she had also been separated from them for a very long time, and gently said, “Tian Tian, thank you.”

Right now, not only her but all the Reapers were deeply grateful to Tian Tian from the bottom of their hearts. Ling Tian had said the other day, that if not for Tian Tian he would have already died. In the past, they protected her because of Ling Chen’s command, but after today, Tian Tian was not just a simple girl in their eyes, but a goal that they were willing to protect.

“Ah?” Although Mu Bing Yao’s voice was soft, Tian Tian still managed to hear it. She blinked her eyes and cheerfully said, “Big sister Mu why did you thank me..... But it’s really great that big sister Mu is fine. I was very worried that something had happen to big sister Mu that night.”

“Big brother Ling Tian, Tian Tian!”

Xiao Qi and Su Er hastily ran over while Yun Meng Xin’s pace was somewhat slower. Today, Ling Chen did not wear his mask as he had done in the past and in the girls’ line of sight was a well-defined jawline and dominating heroic face. They had already seen this face many times on the television, and it could be said that all of the Chinese were very familiar with it as well. Today, other than Su Er, this was their first time seeing his true appearance in such a close proximity. For a very long time, their hearts were in turmoil and were unable to remain calm as his true appearance was even more attractive and perfect than the countless photographs shown by the media. He had tugged at their heartstrings more so than they had ever expected.

However, what surprised them was seeing a warm smile on Ling Chen’s face instead of finding the depressed and dusky expression they had expected. Xiao Qi walked until she was the closest to him and after awhile of her lips just quivering, she said only one sentence, “I missed you a lot.....”, her eyes completely wet; no longer able to say anything more.

“En, I missed you all as well. It feels as if we have not met for a very long time..... are all of you doing fine?” Ling Chen smiled as his eyes gazed across Xiao Qi, Su Er, and Yun Meng Xin’s face.

“We are..... Doing fine, always doing fine, but, but..... Big brother Ling Tian, there is still..... There is still.....”

Xiao Qi had already said half of her sentence, yet she was still unable to voice out the misfortune that happened upon Shui Ruo. She was unwilling to say it out loud, and was even more afraid that it would hurt Ling Chen. Yun Meng Xin discretely sighed and went in front saying, “Ling Tian, we feel relieved as long as you’re fine. I heard that you were seriously wounded the other day. Are your injuries better now? Is the place you and Tian Tian are staying at, safe?”

Ling Chen still had a light smile on his face, his smile was natural without a tinge of rigidness and force, “Although I have not fully recovered, I still have a decent amount of strength. It wouldn’t be a problem even if I rushed into the Long Family again, haha..... Tian Tian and I are at Su Hang now, we’re living at a very safe place so you can all be rest assured.”

He lowered his head and placed his hands on Tian Tian’s shoulders as he said tenderly, “I really have to thank Tian Tian this time..... that night, Tian Tian carried me while walking for the entire night until even the skin of both her feet were completely torn off. Her whole body was injured after falling down numerous times, and had also guarded me for three days and three night. If not for Tian Tian, I would not have been able to see you all again.”

Ling Chen’s words heavily touched each of the girls’ hearts as their gazes fell onto Tian Tian, feeling pain and pity in their hearts..... just how much perserverance must it have took for such a little girl to carry a grown adult man and walk the whole night. No, this was already not just perserverance but only could be explained as a miracle. It was Tian Tian who used all of her heart and body to create such a miracle and save Ling Chen’s life.

“Tian Tian, you really are too amazing! You are the most amazing girl.” Xiao Qi said sincerely. Her heart was filled with deep love, respect, and gratitude towards Tian Tian.

“Tian Tian, you are great, no wonder you’re big brother Ling Tian’s little sister.” Su Er’s pupils were like water, trembling softly whilst gazing at the small adorable girl that looked like a doll.

The Tian Tian that usually becomes immensely proud of herself whenever she gets complimented became embarrassed. She grabbed onto Ling Chen’s hand and faced her cheeks upwards as she said softly, “Hehe, nah, not letting big brother be in danger was what I was supposed to do.”

“Tian Tian, you don’t have to be modest about this incident, you are the true heroine this time.” Yun Meng Xin said with a smile, and after that her gaze returned to Ling Chen.

From the start till now, nobody had brought up the name ‘Ruo Ruo’ because they were scared that it would cause a deep blow to Ling Chen. However, Ling Chen’s expression was completely the opposite of what she had expected, as if he had moved on from the huge blow of Ruo Ruo’s passing within such a short period of time..... but, this was not possible. The feelings between him and Ruo Ruo could be seen through everybody’s eyes. Ruo Ruo’s death that night had caused him to barge into the Long family alone. The him in that state, and that level of affection..... how could it possibly be forgotten so easily.

She sighed in her heart and with a soft voice, asked, “Ling Chen, what are your plans after today?”

When Yun Meng Xin said those words, the attention of all the girls turned towards Ling Chen, even Tian Tian looked up to him, waiting for his reply.

Ling Chen looked at them one at a time as he slowly retracted his expression and said to them calmly, “Although we have been together for a very long time, I had still hidden my identity so that none of you knew who I was or where I came from, whether I was a good guy or bad guy, and even not knowing how I looked like.

Now that all of you know..... I am not only a bad guy, but also the greatest, most terrifying kind of wickedness. Just that night alone I had killed so many people, just how much blood had my pair of hands been stained with and the number of lives I had taken, even I have already lost count.

Furthermore, the people that I killed were not bad people but were actually the most sacred of all Chinese citizens. Killing the Guardian God of the Chinese meant that the people that I attacked were the highest leading family of China. If I had succeeded, the people that suffered would have been the whole of China, causing the country and its people to fall into a long period of chaos.

Even if the crimes of all the criminals in China were added up together, it would still be nothing compared to just me. And now, I am even the nation’s most wanted fugitive, the mastermind of the organisation that everyone is afraid of..... However, all of you have a net worth and background that ordinary people could not even dream of. Sticking too close to me would not only be dangerous, but would also completely implicate your

reputation.....”

“Don’t say it, don’t say it anymore, we don’t want to hear all this!!”

Xiao Qi yelled loudly, interrupting Ling Chen before he could finish his lines. She bit onto her lips as she worked hard to suppress the tears of heartache and grief. Looking straight into Ling Chen’s eyes, she shouted with force, “Big brother Ling Tian is not a bad person, you’re not an evil person, and you’re even more so not a fugitive..... The big brother Ling Tian that we know, is the greatest, he’s the one that lets people feel the most secure, he’s the most trustworthy, the most likeable, and the most respectable person.

As long as big brother Ling Tian was here, no matter what was ahead of us, we would not be afraid. No matter how hard the goal was, we would have the largest confidence. Whether it’s me, Su Er, or big sister Meng Xin, we have always felt that being able to meet big brother Ling Tian was really the greatest luck of our lives.

It was big brother Ling Chen who brought us to witness so many novel things that we could never have imagined, completing miracles one after another that we would not even dare to have thought of. It was also big brother Ling Tian that let us acquire a brand new ‘Heart’s Dream’, and it was also big brother Ling Tian who made us so addicted into the world of Mystic Moon..... We believe in our own eyes and believe in our own heart and feelings, that even if all the people in the world are bad people, Ling Tian would not be a bad person.

It was the Long family that harmed Ruo Ruo, it was because of Ruo Ruo that big brother Ling Tian had barged into the Long family, not even caring for your own life. How can you be a bad person when you are a person that feels deeply, is sentimental and righteous. The real bad people are the ones that harmed Ruo Ruo, big brother Ling Tian and Tian Tian, the ones that say that big brother Ling Tian is a fugitive! It was the crazy and ridiculous Long Tian Yun!!

Big brother Ling Tian is not a bad person, we will only ever like big brother Ling Tian. Even if everybody in the world objects or ridicules us, we will stand beside big brother Ling Tian and will never change forever.”

Ling Chen, “.....”

Su Er’s eyes were almost overflowing with tears as she said timidly, “We..... we love big brother Ling Tian the most. Big brother Ling Tian is not a bad person and you never were one, but instead, the very best person.”

Ling Chen gently took in a deep breath and silently closed his eyes... there seemed to be something that was quietly moving in his heart.

Yun Meng Xin gradually spoke, “Xiao Qi and Su Er’s words were also what I wanted to say. Although the time that we knew each other was not that long; during this period of time, if we couldn’t even differentiate whether you were a bad guy or someone that we could trust, then how are we fit to be your companions? How can we, with a peace of mind, always enjoy the miracles and glory that

you have brought to us with a clear conscience.”

Chapter 355 – Farewell (2)

“Thank you all.....” At this moment, Ling Chen realised that he could only form these few words. Initially, he only joined Mystic Moon for Yun Meng Xin, but now, in this place, he found a faint sense of belonging.....

“We are all companions so you don’t no need to thank us. After all you too had said this.” Yun Meng Xin slightly smiled, while Xiao Qi and Su Er eagerly nodded. Subsequently, Yun Meng Xin’s expression dimmed, “Also, there’s something that we need to tell you.”

Initially, they didn’t plan on mentioning this matter, so as not to let Ling Chen and his emotions become even more disoriented. However, looking at his condition, it was even better than expected, thus Yun Meng Xin still decided to say it, “Heart’s Dream..... has been destroyed by Long Tian Yun..... just a couple days ago.”

While discussing the matter, the expressions on both Xiao Qi and Su Er’s faces were of grief; almost bursting into tears. That day, they could only stand and look at “Heart’s Dream” come apart while being smashed, and could do nothing to stop it. This sense of powerlessness was the feeling that made their hearts shatter into pieces. The blow that they had suffered during that time was even almost on par to the heartache they had felt for Ling Chen.

Although hearing this kind of news, Ling Chen wasn’t surprised at all and only clenched both his hands a little tighter as he calmly said, “I knew..... Actually before coming over here, I had already

thought that it would be like this, only that I did not go to confirm it..... Haha, however, the one that had been destroyed was not 'Heart's Dream' but only a form that represented our existence. We're all still here, aren't we?

“Yes, yes!” All the girls vigorously nodded their heads as Xiao Qi said loudly, “The thing that was destroyed had merely an image. I'm here, Su Er is here, big sister Meng Xin is here, big sister Mu is here, Tian Tian is here..... and most important of all, big brother Ling Tian is here. As long as big brother Ling Tian is here, there are no obstacles that cannot be overcome, as long as there is big brother Ling Tian to lead us, there will be a time where Heart's Dream would be glorious again. Big brother Ling Tian, together with you we can make it, right?”

A eager look full of anticipation appeared in the girls' eyes, and towards this, Ling Chen nodded. But then shook his head as he said, “Of course I will..... but, the reason I came here today is to say farewell to all of you.”

“Ah?”

All the girls were stupefied, even Mu Bing Yao and Tian Tian just stood there with a blank stare.

“Big brother, where are you going?” Tian Tian immediately asked as she grabbed onto his shirt.

“Farewell..... what do you mean, farewell? Why are you saying farewell?” Xiao Qi asked anxiously.

“Ling Tian, are you going somewhere and leaving for sometime? Or..... Or are you leaving because you want peace and quiet? Yun Meng Xin, who was usually as calm as water, hurriedly spoke her words. The things that she had mentioned were the best possible outcomes she had thought of... The word farewell would normally be used for a long-term absence or as an eternal goodbye, but she refused to think that, no matter what.

Ling Chen patted Tian Tian’s shoulder, indicating that she did not need to worry, “I have an important thing I must do and I don’t want to be distracted. I may be on the move for a sometime.”

“What important thing is it? Can you tell us? We..... We could all help. And..... How long would you be? A few days? Or a few weeks..... Or.....” Xiao Qi became even more anxious as she rushed forward and grabbed onto Ling Chen’s clothes, afraid that he would turn and leave immediately. Su Er also quickly moved and stood at his other side, looking at him with panic.

Ling Chen said carefully, “It’s a very important thing, a thing that is even more important than my own life. I have to complete it, and only I can complete it, nobody is able to help me. As for how long it would take..... I am not sure myself, maybe a year, maybe a few years..... Haha, maybe not so exaggerated also, I could even complete it tomorrow.”

Ling Chen laughed, but none of the girls could laugh as their hearts were so heavy it made them almost unable to breathe.

A thing more important than his life..... these words let them know that they could not as well as should not persuade him otherwise. They were even unable to help. And as for the time..... A few months..... a few years..... a few decades.....

How many few months, few years, and few decades would a person's life have.....

Let's say that he was unable to complete it after such a long duration of time, then would it mean that they would never meet ever again?

The girls didn't ask again about what he was going to do, because if Ling Chen had wanted to tell them, he would have already done so.

After a long silence, Yun Meng Xin faintly asked, "Then..... When do you plan to move? Where will you be going?" Yun Meng Xin asked remotely after staying silent for a long time.

"Immediately..... As for where I am going, I do not know either. But, I will always be in the world, Mystic Moon." Ling Chen replied.

The reply he had given exceeded all their expectations.

Initially, they had thought that the 'thing more important than his life', that Ling Chen had talked about with such seriousness, would have definitely been something in the real life. Never did

they expect that he would actually say that he would ‘always be in the world called Mystic Moon.’ Xiao Qi said in surprise, “It’s in the game world? But..... bu t.....”

The voice full of questions could not even complete more than half of its sentence. Since Ling Chen had already decided to leave and he did not want to say much, she felt that she should not ask too much. She became depressed as she switched her tone and said, “Must you really go now? Why can’t you leave a few days later..... it was so difficult for us to meet.”

“Yes, I will leave immediately, because this..... is the most important thing that must be completed in this life time of mine. I do not wish to delay it for even a minute or second, so, I can only say farewell to all of you here..... Meng Xin, Qi Qi, Su Su, me and Tian Tian are very well, you all don’t need to worry. The thing that all of you must do is to take care of yourself and after that, using your own method and hard work, develop Heart’s Dream..... I have to go now.”

He pulled Tian Tian along and placed her little hands into Mu Bing Yao’s hand before bending down and gently saying, “Tian Tian, I cannot accompany you in this game any further, you must listen to the big sisters when you’re with them, understand?”

Before going into the game, Tian Tian had totally not known of Ling Chen’s decision. Her small head was still in confusion even at this moment, but after looking into Ling Chen’s eyes, Tian Tian, in an effort to be obedient, lightly nodded her head.

Ling Chen gave a small smile before turning around, and with a

wave of his hand, a big shooting star flew towards the south without reluctance, giving the girls a view of a lone back.

He left..... just like that.....

Always, when he had occupied their thoughts, they had always felt afraid or on edge. But when they had finally met, he had already left after only saying a few short lines. They still didn't even know when they would see each other again.

Mu Bing Yao did not know what to do as she stared at Ling Chen's back. She too, did not know what Ling Chen was going to do. The rim of Xiao Qi and Su Er's eyes went red as they thought of how they would not know which year or month they'd see him again..... for Xiao Qi, her life would come to an end in less than half years' time. As for Su Er, in also less than half years' time, she would be facing the day she had not wanted to face the most, which too, would be the day she wanted Ling Chen to appear the most.....

Coincidentally, they all forcefully held onto their lips at the same time while they saw Ling Chen not too far away yet already completely hazy from the mist. At the side, Yun Meng Xin stared at the direction that Ling Chen left silently as a pair of beautiful eyes became hazy like the fog underneath the veil.

Even if they hated him leaving and did not want to part with him, not one went to stop him and hold him down. Because it was for something that was more important than his life, every one of them had not allowed themselves to become his burden.

However Ling Chen himself had stopped in his tracks.

He turned his body around and looked at the girls who were trying their best to suppress their urge to weep. His face revealed a helpless smile, “I said to all of you, it’s only separating for a period of time, it’s not as if we are not seeing each other again. Why make it as if we are going to part forever? Also, it’s easy to travel in Mystic Moon so whenever I miss you all too much, I will put down all my things on hand and come back to find all of you..... You never know, I may come back tomorrow. Alright, alright, since all of you couldn’t bear leaving me, and I can’t bear to leave all of you, how would I bear leaving for too long..... alright, if you all can’t bear it.....”

Ling Chen faced them as he opened his arms wide, “then let’s hug before separating.”

“Big brother Ling Tian!!”

Xiao Qi and Su Er could no longer suppress their emotions and tears as they wept, not caring about the people around. They threw themselves forward as both girls, one left and one right, hugged Ling Chen tightly. Their tears were like the water from an uncontrollable dam that had just gushed out.

With two soft gems in his embrace and a fragrance that intoxicated his heart, having two gorgeous young women hugging him at the same time was a kind of luck that no ordinary man would be able to enjoy. Their cries from both left and right were as

if they were telling Ling Chen their worries, heartache and their deep reluctance to separate, causing the corner of Ling Chen's eyes to be slightly moist.

“Alright, don't cry anymore, I have already said that I cannot bear to leave all of you for too long, and have also promised all of you that I would work hard together with you all for the sake of Heart's Dream.” Ling Chen consoled them in a low voice. Before Shui Ruo left, the first thing that she made him promise had specifically mentioned Xiao Qi and Su Er. Clearly, she could already tell that he had already quietly owed a heavy emotional debt towards these two girls; being close sisters, she did not want to see them get hurt, and was even more unwilling to see Ling Chen hurt them because of her.

As for Ling Chen, having to lose Shui Ruo made him understand further that certain people and certain things needed to be cherished, or else once you lose it, no matter how much it is, pain or regret could not bring it back.

After hugging for a long while, the two flower-like girls finally left his shoulders with their eyes red from crying and an adorable redness that had surfaced on their face. Since they were young ladies, they were still shy from the bold actions they had taken, even after their hearts had gradually calmed down; moreover, Meng Xin and Bing Yao was still there watching them.

“Xiao Qi, once I leave, head over to Vermillion Bird to take a look, alright? In this world, it's not true that some things do not exist just because you think that it does not exist. You might think that it will not occur just because you think it's impossible. A lot of

unimaginable wonders are actually around us, and very close to us. It's just that we have not discovered it yet. The Vermillion Bird could give you back your energy, and may even..... give you life.”

After hearing Ling Chen's words, Xiao Qi became dumbstruck and just nodded as her eyes stared blankly. This may have been the first time in her life that she, who was usually stubborn and in high spirits, had cried so disorderly. It was also at this moment that she suddenly realised how much Ling Tian actually meant to her in her heart. Just not long ago had she been simply admiring him, yet he was firmly filling and affecting her heart, silently occupying all of her. Now, no matter what was said by Ling Chen, she would still nod her head and agree.

Chapter 356 - Devastating Beauty

“Su Su...” After talking with Xiao Qi, Ling Chen turned to Su’Er. Su’Er was naturally quite shy, and usually didn’t say much. What caused the change in their relationship was that fateful night... from then onwards, he could see something had changed in Su’Er’s eyes. Ling Chen smiled as he said, “You’re a very good and kind girl. You’ve always wanted to be as brave as Meng Xin... but truthfully, it’s not that you’re not brave enough-it’s that you’re too kind. You don’t like refusing other people, and you’re afraid that you’ll hurt others if you don’t go along with what they want-this is especially so for your family. In reality, we should be living for ourselves. You should learn to think more for yourself, and be a little more selfish, okay?”

“I...” Su’Er sniffled as she looked at him with tearful eyes. She engraved each of his words onto her heart. As they gazed at each other, it was as if Ling Chen could see into her heart.

Ling Chen looked over to Yun Meng Xin as he smiled, “Meng Xin, do you want a goodbye hug?”

As the sole daughter of the Yun family, she had been treated as the treasure of the entire family. Her personality was dignified and elegant, and countless people had pursued her, but not a single one could get close to her. She was the only woman who Long Tian Yun truly desired, but even he could not obtain her. She had never been intimate with a man before-the most intimate she had been in the past was shaking hands.

Intimately hugging a man was something that seemed out of the

question. However, in her heart, only a single person had the right to be so close to her body.

Meeting Ling Chen's gaze, Yun Meng Xin's heart became somewhat chaotic. Part of it was the inherent shyness of a woman who had never been intimate with a man before. However, she immediately remembered all of the things that had happened recently, as well as the fact that once they said goodbye, she wouldn't know when they could meet again. Her heart became even more chaotic, and she couldn't stop herself from walking forwards.

Ling Chen also walked towards her, and gently hugged her. Yun Meng Xin's body was incredibly soft, and the fragrance from her body was enchanting. Ling Chen didn't dare to hug her too tightly, afraid that she would think he was taking advantage of her. However, he felt her arms wrapping around his back, and pulling him tighter against her. Her large and soft breasts were now pressed against his chest, and their faces were only centimetres away from each other.

This was the first time he had been so close to Yun Meng Xin, and it had actually caused him to become quite flustered. His right arm was around her waist, and he almost didn't want to let go. He suddenly felt a desire to see what she looked like, and after a few moments he softly said, "Meng Xin, these days have been the lowest point in my life, and I even considered breaking my promise to you. However, you all trust me so much, so now that I'm back, I'll definitely do my best not to disappoint you... I will definitely fulfil what I promised you and Yun Feng... even if I can't help you win your bet, I'll still help you gain control over your own destiny. Believe in me, alright?"

Yun Meng Xin and Ling Chen hugged for quite a long period of time. By now, Xiao Qi and Su'Er had both stopped sniffing and crying, and stared with a hint of jealousy in their eyes. Finally, Yun Meng Xin and Ling Chen separated. Under her veil, no one could see what Yun Meng Xin's expression was like, but she still looked down, as if she was too embarrassed to look at Ling Chen anymore. She said in a gentle voice, "Take good care of yourself. We'll be waiting for you."

Ling Chen smiled and nodded. He looked at Meng Xin, and voiced the request he had been keeping in his heart all this time, "Meng Xin, we've known each other for quite some time now, but I still haven't seen what you look like... can you let me see your face?"

No matter if it was in the real world or within the virtual world, Yun Meng Xin would always cover her face. Beauty was an asset, but being too beautiful was also a disaster. Yun Meng Xin was very clear about this. After coming to age, covering her face had become a habit, and only her family and closest friends knew what she looked like.

She was so used to this habit that even she had forgotten that Ling Chen had never seen what she looked like. Whenever they met, she was always wearing a veil.

Yun Meng Xin softly nodded. How could she refuse, at this point in time? This was the least she could do for him. She slowly stretched out her hand, and lifted the veil up. Her face was finally revealed to Ling Chen.

In that moment, the smile on Ling Chen's face froze. He simply couldn't draw his eyes away from her face, and he even forgot to breathe...

It was as if all the beautiful waves in the world were gathered in her eyes, making her look like a stunning goddess from a world-class artist's painting. Her skin was as flawless as a piece of jade, and her mouth and nose looked as if they had been personally crafted by the gods.

If was as if the heavens had put all of their resources and effort in sculpting this face.

Ling Chen could almost feel himself falling into a trance as he stared at her. The feeling was as if he was falling into a bottomless pit, and yet he didn't want to stop falling.

“So beautiful...” Ling Chen couldn't stop himself from uttering those words. He continued to stare unblinkingly at Yun Meng Xin.

Devastatingly beautiful-beauty that could cause the downfall of a country. Ling Chen had heard this saying many times before, but only now did he understand what it meant. It would take a single glance of hers or a single smile to bring down an entire country.

At this moment, he completely understood why Yun Meng Xin would always cover her face when she went out. If she didn't do this, then she would be constantly harassed wherever she went. If she was born in ancient times, there would have been countless wars because of her, and many heroes would have sacrificed

themselves for her.

It was no wonder that while Long Tian Yun was still a teenager, he had already said that he was determined to make her his wife. Qi Yue, that demoness, was seductively beautiful-but that type of beauty could only appear in games... however, looking at Meng Xin, Ling Chen realised that her looks weren't inferior to Qi Yue's by even a bit. While Qi Yue was seductive and racy, Meng Xin's beauty was one of elegance and purity. Qi Yue was a demoness whereas Meng Xin was a goddess.

“Big sister Meng Xin... is so beautiful...” Tian Tian also stared, transfixed. It was also her first time seeing what Meng Xin looked like. Although she was a girl, she couldn't take her eyes off her either.

“You like what you see?” Seeing Ling Chen and Tian Tian's stares, Meng Xin couldn't help but smile. Since she was young, whenever men looked at her, they would always stare and reveal that sort of expression. The first time Long Tian Yun had met her, he had stared for many minutes, and forgot about everyone around him... however, even Long Tian Yun wasn't lucky enough to see her smile.

Yun Meng Xin fully embodied the saying: “Bringing down a city with a single smile”. Her voice and the faint smile on her face caused Ling Chen to gradually come back to his senses.

He looked down as he tried to regain control over his heart. When he looked up, he was once again astounded by her beauty, but he no longer lost control. He smiled, “Definitely... you're so

beautiful that I almost don't want to leave.”

“But you're still going to.” Yun Meng Xin said softly.

“What I need to do is more important than my life.” Ling Chen repeated what he had said earlier. Yun Meng Xin's beauty was enough for a man to devote himself to her and give up everything else. However, to Ling Chen, there was nothing else more important in the world than Shui Ruo.

“Meng Xin, after I leave, I'll send things to your storehouse in Azure Dragon City from time to time. I'll send memos with the things, so make sure you leave enough space. How you use those things will be up to you-I've always believed that your wisdom surpasses mine. Seeing as you made that unfair bet with your father, I'm sure you have quite a bit of determination and faith in yourself. I believe that even if you lose the bet, you'll have a way out. Two years is enough for you to think of other ways-to be able to have these two years, you've already won.”

Yun Meng Xin's smile grew wider. What Ling Chen had said exactly reflected her own thoughts. All along, everyone thought she was just rebelling... but only Ling Chen was able to see into her heart.

“I'm going... please take care of Tian Tian for me. I'll do my best and try to come back soon, because I really don't want to part with you guys. Tian Tian, make sure you listen to your big sisters... Qi Qi, please thank your big brother for me. I won't forget what he's done for me.”

Ling Chen finally turned and left. He lifted his hand up as he walked away, leaving them with an image of his back. He continued to walk, and disappeared from their vision. This time, he didn't turn around.

When he left, he had been smiling and his voice had been calm and clear. As they watched his figure disappear into the distance, all of the girls' hearts ached.

Because of him, Heart's Dream's goal wasn't just a mere dream anymore. With him there, any problem could be solved. With him there, they would no longer be afraid of anything. Although they had not known each other for a very long time, he had become their support.

However, he had lost his most important person, and was going to do something incredibly difficult by himself... he was in the darkest moment of his life.

During this time, what could I possibly do for him...

All of the girls asked themselves the same question as they gazed at the direction he had disappeared in.

Chapter 357 - Xiao Qi's Decision

“Yun Feng.”

“Ling Tian, where are you?! I’ll come and find you immediately; there’s so much I need to talk to you about!” Yun Feng sounded like there was something extremely urgent.

“No need. I know you’re worried about me, and that you’ve kept me in your thoughts. I’m very grateful,” Ling Chen said, “You’re a good friend-although I’ve been made a fugitive, and everyone’s been slandering me, you’re still willing to stand on my side. Ruo Ruo has passed away, but before that, I was able to live happily with Ruo Ruo. That was all because of you. I will never forget the kindness you showed to us. Don’t worry, I’ll fulfil what I promised you.”

“Ling Tian, that’s not what I meant. I just wanted to say...”

“Let’s talk after I’m back. I’m going to do something very important right now, and I don’t want to think about anything else for the time being. For quite a bit of time, no one will be able to contact me. Don’t try to find me either. After I’m back, we can have a good chat. Take care... goodbye.”

After he finished speaking, Ling Chen turned off his communication device. He wouldn’t be able to contact anyone, and no one would be able to contact him.

After stocking up on large amounts of potions and teleport

scrolls, Ling Chen headed towards a certain forest... the Fairy Forest.

“Little master, who would have thought that the little sister called Meng Xin would be so devastatingly beautiful. After seeing her, even I wanted to make her my pet. I could tell little master’s heart was beating so chaotically.” Qi Yue said as she giggled.

Truth be told, although Ling Chen had imagined how beautiful Yun Meng Xin would be, she was much more beautiful in real life. She was the only woman he knew who could compare to Qi Yue.

“Mm, Meng Xin is indeed quite beautiful,” Ling Chen replied, before looking up, “When Ruo Ruo’s older, she’ll definitely be as beautiful as Meng Xin.”

Qi Yue burst out laughing, and asked, “Then why did little master want to leave so quickly? You could have spent some more time with them. All five of those girls are as beautiful as goddesses, and any man would consider it their greatest fortune to spend time with even one of them. Little master could have had all five of them, and yet just left like that. If I was a man, I definitely wouldn’t have left.”

“Right now, there is only one thing that I care about.” Ling Chen flatly said. He had already made his decision, and would not change his mind. He didn’t bother wasting any more words with Qi Yue.

After quite a some time, the Fairy Forest appeared in front of

him. Although he had been here before, he couldn't help but marvel at the purity and beauty of this place.

His sole aim was to enter the Fairy Realm and put Ruo Ruo's body into the Fairy Fountain. He knew what the consequences would be, but there was no other way.

“Little master, keep in mind that you'll face three main problems. The first one is that Fairy called Ying Xue. Last time, you had escaped, but seeing as you came, they'll think that it was Nature that brought you back to be with her. They will do everything in their power not to let you escape again. The second is that they will never let any outsiders touch the Fairy Fountain. The third is... little master, after you enter, how will you come out? Could it be that you'll enter the Lunar Sky Hell again, and use the Spatial Stone to escape? Or will you directly use the Spatial Stone in the Fairy Realm?”

Ling Chen calmly looked ahead of him for a while, then walked forward with a look of determination on his face, “I'll just do my best.”

In front of Ling Chen, a dark light flashed, and a small figure appeared. It was a girl who looked 12 or 13, with a pair of jet-black eyes. She was hugging a doll wearing a princess dress.

“Leng'Er.” Ling Chen called out. He had not been around in a while, and he wondered if she had been lonely.

Leng'Er looked at him with her jet-black eyes. Looking into her

eyes made Ling Chen feel like he was looking into boundless, dark night. She stared at Ling Chen for a while, before saying in a soft voice, “Master... where... did you go...”

Ling Chen walked over to her and stroked her hair. Now, Leng’Er was already fine with him touching her. Ling Chen said warmly, “I had to do some things, so I couldn’t spend time with Leng’Er. It’s all master’s fault. Did you miss me?”

Leng’Er’s eyes blinked as she thought for a while. She softly nodded her head, and said in a small voice, “Yes.”

Ling Chen smiled, and took out two new dolls, “Master likes Leng’Er more and more. Look, these are some pretty dolls for Leng’Er. I missed Leng’Er as well. In future, I won’t leave Leng’Er for that long anymore, alright?”

Leng’Er’s eyes lit up as soon as she saw the dolls. She hugged the two dolls in her arms, and revealed an extremely happy smile.

After following Ling Chen, Leng’Er began to smile more and more, and her smiles gradually more natural.

Ling Chen called out Xiao Hui, and together with Leng’Er, they walked into the Fairy Forest. After Ling Chen left, the girls all felt a bit dazed. They wanted to talk with Ling Chen more, but found that they couldn’t contact him. From now on, unless Ling Chen appeared, they wouldn’t be able to see him, and wouldn’t even be able to hear his voice.

Xiao Qi's mind rang with Ling Chen's words over and over again. She gripped her clothes as she finally made a decision... a decision that she would not allow herself to regret.

“Big sister Meng Xin, big sister Bing Yao, Su'Er, Tian Tian... from today, I won't be able to see you all for a long time, I...”

“Eh?” All of the girls looked at Xiao Qi in shock. Su'Er hurriedly grabbed onto her hand as she asked, “Qi Qi, are you alright? Is... is it because your illness has gotten worse? Big brother Ling Tian just left... we... we can't lose you as well.”

Xiao Qi shook her head and turned to look to the south as she replied, “Do you remember what I told you about the Vermillion Bird... I'm going to go ahead with that.”

“Vermillion Bird... but Qi Qi, do you really think that a creature in the game world can cure you? Plus, you said that it'll take many months, if not years... your body is already... already...”

Yun Meng Xin wanted to say that Xiao Qi's body wouldn't be able to handle the illness flaring up again... however, she wasn't able to say it.

“I may not be able to believe the Vermillion Bird or that a creature in the game world can cure me. However, I believe in big brother Ling Tian. He said that he thinks it's possible, so I'll try it. Even if it can't cure me, but it said that it can make me more powerful. If I become stronger, maybe... maybe I can do something

for big brother Ling Tian. So please don't try to stop me, alright? Back when things were going well for Heart's Dream, I could only reap the benefits, but I couldn't contribute anything. Now that such a big thing has happened, and big brother Ling Tian has been hurt so much... I couldn't do anything to help him. Even if I have a bit of power to help big brother Ling Tian beat the Yan Huang Alliance, that'll be enough."

Xiao Qi bit her lips. The more she spoke, the more useless she felt, and the more determined she became. Her words struck each of the girls in their hearts.

Finally, Yun Meng Xin opened her mouth. She sighed, and said, "He has something magical about him that makes every word he says seem believable. Qi Qi, if you really want to go, then go... perhaps a miracle really will happen."

"Mhmm!" Xiao Qi raised her head and looked at them, "I want to go right now."

"Ah? Why are you in such a hurry?" Su'Er was surprised.

"Because I'm afraid that if I wait too long, I won't be able to leave you guys." Xiao Qi's eyes became red. As she spoke, she took out a teleport scroll for the Vermillion Bird City, "Big sister Meng Xin, big sister Bing Yao, Su Su, Tian Tian, I'm going now. Don't worry about me-I'm not going to do anything dangerous. I'll just be away for a while. Maybe it'll go really well, and I'll be back in a few days. You all need to take care yourself. Don't let me see that you guys have gotten skinner when I'm back."

At this point, Xiao Qi was barely able to hold back her tears. She gritted her teeth and shattered the scroll, then disappeared.

“Qi Qi!!”

Su'er couldn't help but call out as she watched Xiao Qi disappear. She stood in shock, and took out a teleport scroll as she also shattered it.

“Su Su, you...”

Yun Meng Xin was about to say something, but then stopped. She watched as Su'Er disappeared as well. She knew that Xiao Qi and Su'Er had grown up together, and were incredibly close-closer than real sisters. They had pretty much spent their whole lives together, and would often sleep on the same bed. How could Su'Er bear to be apart from Xiao Qi for such a long time? In the end, she chose to follow Xiao Qi to the Vermillion Bird City to say farewell.

Chapter 358 - Heaven's Secrets Sect Successor (1)

Vermillion Bird City Central Square.

There were not many people here, due to the extremely hot weather. After coming to the Vermillion Bird City, Xiao Qi felt a lot calmer. A person had to make countless choices in their lifetime, and the choice she just made seemed like an extremely silly one. However, she was still determined to come here, because this was a path that Ling Chen had given her, and it was the only one with hope.

Xiao Qi picked up her communication device and contacted Xiao Qiu Feng.

“Big brother, I’ll be staying online for a long time-maybe even a few months. Can you help me arrange the life-support systems and look after them? If something goes wrong with them, your little sister’s body might be damaged~”

“What?” Xiao Qi’s words greatly shocked Xiao Qiu Feng. He frowned as he replied, “Staying online for a few months? What are you doing? You’re joking, right?”

“I’m completely serious. It might just be a few months, but it could be... even longer.”

“Absolutely not!!” Seeing that Xiao Qi was serious, Xiao Qiu Feng

immediately refused, “Don’t do this, Qi Qi! If you do that, you’ll definitely hurt your body. And also... it’ll be too dangerous if your illness flares up during that time!”

“Hehe, don’t worry about me. You know, this is actually to cure my illness. If I do this, then on the day I come out, my illness could be fully cured!” Xiao Qi said in a relaxed manner.

“What?” Xiao Qiu Feng was completely surprised, “Qi Qi, what are you doing?!”

“Just believe in me, big brother. Having such a great big brother and dad makes me very reluctant to just die. As such, I’ll do my best to keep living. It was big brother Ling Tian who told me this method, but I need to keep it a secret from big brother. When I come out, you’ll receive a big surprise. Alright, I’ll leave everything to big brother. Oh, and also, big brother Ling Tian asked me to thank you. He said that he’ll always remember what you’ve done for him... during this period, you and dad need to take care of yourselves. Don’t worry about me, and don’t force me out of the game, no matter what. Alright... bye bye!”

“Qi Qi!!”

Xiao Qi ended the conversation, and Xiao Qiu Feng immediately tried to call her back. However, Xiao Qi had already turned off her communication device. Xiao Qiu Feng’s emotions were in a complete mess.

What’s Qi Qi doing? She said that her illness could be cured... is

this true... is this even possible?!

It is; it has to be real!! Xiao Qiu Feng rapped on his head with his knuckles, trying to make himself feel more positive. His mind rang with the last words Xiao Qi had said... Ling Tian had charged into the Long family's residence by himself, causing terror and chaos. He had killed countless guards, and many of the Long family's elite soldiers. Even Murong Xiong Tian, Xuanyuan Sheng and Xuanyuan Dao, the strongest bodyguards of the Long family, had been defeated by him. This person... no, this monster, was simply incredible. When Xiao Qiu Feng and his father had first heard about the death count in the Long family, they had both trembled.

The Long family was utterly terrified of Ling Chen. Indeed, no one wouldn't be afraid of such a person. This was evidenced by the fact that they had made Ling Chen a national fugitive and had locked down Beijing. They had even mobilised the national army to look for him. Right now, the only thing they wanted was to have Ling Chen dead. If they knew that he was still alive, they would do anything in their power to destroy him.

To have someone like this feel so grateful to him and owe him a favour... Xiao Qiu Feng wondered how this favour would be repaid. It seemed that helping him that night had been the right decision.

After Xiao Qi ended the call with Xiao Qiu Feng, she immediately turned off her communication device. She didn't have any expectations or hopes for her illness to be cured. All she wanted was more power, in order to help Ling Tian and the other girls. What she had said was to let her big brother and dad be at ease, so

they wouldn't worry as much. As for what would actually happen... she left that up to her fate. At the very worst, she would just waste the last few months of her life.

As if they shared a mental connection, Xiao Qi suddenly turned around and saw Su'Er standing behind her. Su'Er's eyes were red, and Xiao Qi smiled and went over to hug her, "I knew that Su Su would have definitely followed me."

"Wuu... wuu..." Su'Er started to cry out loud, and her tears dampened a large patch on Xiao Qi's shoulder. She was a girl who cried easily, and had cried many times in the past few days. Xiao Qi started to sniffle as she smiled in a reassuring manner, "Alright, Su Su, it's not like I'm going to do something dangerous. It's just that I won't be around for a bit. You never know-maybe I'll be cured by the time I come back, and will be even stronger in the game. Perhaps I'll be as strong as big brother Ling Tian, hehe."

"But I don't want to be apart from Qi Qi. What will I do without Qi Qi... wuu, wuuu..." Su'Er started to cry even harder. She was usually always with Xiao Qi, and they were quite emotionally dependent on each other. This time, they would separate for a long time, and she might not even be able to see her ever again. Su'Er simply couldn't calm down.

Su'Er couldn't bear to part with Xiao Qi, and Xiao Qi didn't want to part with Su'Er either. They were both quite attached to each other. In all these years, the longest they had ever separated for was three days. Hearing Su'Er's voice, and seeing her tears, Xiao Qi felt even more reluctant to go, and started to rethink her decision. She gently pushed Su'Er away, and held onto her hands as she

looked into her eyes, saying, “Su Su, do you remember, a few years ago we talked to a fortune-teller. That fortune-teller said that we’ll be together forever! I believe that fortune-teller was right. In order to be sisters forever, it’s worth it for me to leave for a little while.”

“Qi Qi...”

Xiao Qi let go of Su’Er’s hands, and summoned her mount. She climbed onto it, and waved at Su’Er as she smiled, “My little Su Su, wait for your big sister to come back. You’re not allowed to cry anymore, alright?”

After speaking, Xiao Qi gritted her teeth, hardened herself, and charged forwards on her mount. As soon as she left, the smile on her face disappeared, and her tears wouldn’t stop flowing... Su Su, I don’t want to leave you either.... But so that we can be sisters forever, I’m willing to believe big brother Ling Tian... I’ll definitely come back...

Su’Er watched as Xiao Qi left, and stood there, unmoving. She stood for five minutes... ten minutes... but still wasn’t willing to leave.

At this moment, the peacefulness of the Vermillion Bird City Central Square was shattered by an ear-piercing yell.

“Fifteen days, fifteen-freaking-days!! We’ve walked around in this town 800 times, I can even remember what all the pigs look like. Can’t we go somewhere else? I’m goddamn sick of this place.”

“The stars have decreed that this is the place. The Vermillion Bird city is vast-how can we find the person in a measly fifteen days? Brother Xiao, I’ll have to trouble you to accompany me for a few more days.”

“God-freaking-dammit, you’re not willing to find out the Heaven’s Secrets, and you’d rather use some crappy stars. If those ‘stars’ are so useful, why would you even use those Heaven’s Secrets?”

“The stars and Heaven’s Secrets are different. The stars point in a general direction, and don’t give any specifics. Ai, brother Xiao, please stay for another three days. If we still can’t find the person, then I will accept that our destinies have not been connected yet, and will look elsewhere.”

The two voices were coming closer and closer. These were two old men. One of them looked around 60 years old, and half of his hair and beard was white. He was wearing tattered, grey clothing, which looked somewhat clean. Although he was an old man, but he would hop and skip around as he walked, and his expressions were quite comical. The other old man looked around 70 or 80 years old. He was wearing a green Daoist robe, and held a horsetail whisk in his hands. His hair completely white, and was so long that it reached his waist. His gaze was deep and calm, as if he was some sort of immortal. Despite how raucous the old man beside him was, he did not seem agitated at all. The atmosphere he gave off was one of seriousness and tranquillity, and the way he walked made it seem like he was walking on clouds.

It was quite strange to see these two completely different old men

walking together.

Indeed, these two old men were the Sect Leader of the Feng Chen Sect, Xiao Feng Chen, and the Sect Leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect, Daoist Tian Qing.

After escaping from the Lunar Sky Hell, Xiao Feng Chen went to find Daoist Tian Qing for two reasons. The first was to meet up with an old friend who he hadn't seen for a thousand years. The second was to help Ling Chen with his issue, which resulted in him being dragged into helping Daoist Tian Qing find a successor. Originally, they had relied on Xiao Feng Chen's Feng Chen Technique to run around aimlessly. One day, Daoist Tian Qing saw something in the sky, which directed them to the Vermillion Bird City. As such, Xiao Feng Chen was dragged to stay in the Vermillion City for half a month. He was forced to use his Feng Chen Technique countless times, and yet they still couldn't find anyone with the qualifications to become the successor of the Heaven's Secrets Sect. Xiao Feng Chen had long since run out of patience.

“The hell?! Another three days? This stupid place doesn't even have any beauties; how can it have the sort of person you're looking for... Screw it, screw it, I'll just accept that I owed you in my past life or something. If it wasn't for that boy, I would've ditched you ages ago.”

Daoist Tian Qing had already become used to Xiao Feng Chen's ramblings. No matter how much Xiao Feng Chen cursed and complained, Daoist Tian Qing's heart remained calm. He knew that Xiao Feng Chen couldn't control that mouth of his, and that

he was doing his best to help him. In fact, Xiao Feng Chen had even begun to view this as a personal matter. Daoist Tian Qing laughed as he said, “I’ll have to trouble brother Xiao then. If I really can find a successor, I will definitely help brother Xiao with Ling Tian’s matters.”

“Cheh, my only friend from back then who’s still alive is you, you old thing. If you die, who would keep me company? Alright, alright, hurry up and find your successor and get them to do it. Try to live for a few more years... eh?” Xiao Feng Chen suddenly stopped walking. He looked forwards as his eyes shone, “Wow, wow, what were we talking about before? Who would have thought that there would be such a cute girly in the Vermillion Bird City.”

Chapter 359 - Heaven's Secrets Sect Successor (2)

Xiao Feng Chen and Daoist Tian Qing eventually walked to the middle of the Vermillion Bird City Central Square. Near the revival point was a young girl standing there by herself. She was quite young, and looked only about 15 or 16 years old. She was staring towards the south, her eyes sparkling like crystals made of raindrops. Although she was young, but she was incredibly beautiful, and onlookers would find it difficult to stop looking at her. In that moment, she looked like a beautiful and pure fairy. There was an atmosphere of shyness and weakness around her, which would make anyone want to protect her and take care of her.

“My goodness, the Vermillion Bird City’s full of ugly and old women. Where did this cute little girly come from?” Xiao Feng Chen gasped as he stared. He then grinned as he said, “Old man Tian Qing, I’ll betcha that this girl isn’t from the Vermillion Bird City. Man, the more I look at her, the more I like her. I wish I had a granddaughter like her...” He suddenly whacked himself on the head as he began to laugh, “Old man Tian Qing, I’m going to adopt her as my granddaughter, yahaha!”

“Brother Xiao, don’t scare... Hey, brother Xiao... Ai...”

Daoist Tian Qing knew that Xiao Feng Chen was definitely going to use the Feng Chen Curses to mess with the girl. This was how Xiao Feng Chen was-when he was excited, he would always act rashly and stupidly. Daoist Tian Qing couldn’t stop him at all, and could only sigh. He hoped that Xiao Feng Chen wouldn’t be too

excessive. From what he had just said, it seemed that he wanted to use the Feng Chen Curses to make the girl acknowledge him as her foster-grandfather.

Which curse would he use... that was the question.

Hmm I definitely can't use the really harsh ones... Ah, I'll use... a "Complete and Utter Belief Curse!!"

Xiao Feng Chen's monkey-like eyes flashed, and directed a "Complete and Utter Belief Curse" at Su'Er. Immediately, he put on an extremely distressed and pitiful expression and cried out as he ran at Su'Er, "Ah! Granddaughter, my good granddaughter. I've finally found you! I'm your long-lost grandpa!"

After Xiao Qi left, Su'Er continued to stare towards the south. This sudden voice gave Su'Er a fright, and what she saw when she turned around frightened her even more. It was a skinny old man wearing tattered clothing rushing over with an extremely emotional expression.

She quickly stepped backwards as she yelled, "No... you've got the wrong person. I'm not your granddaughter, I'm... I'm just a player. I definitely can't be your granddaughter..."

Xiao Feng Chen immediately stopped running, and his jaw dropped.

Xiao Feng Chen had lived for over 2,000 years. The Feng Chen

Curses he used were at the absolute pinnacle-even the Moon Goddesses were affected by them. They were always guaranteed to work. The number of existences that were on par with the Moon Goddesses could be counted on a single hand, and this girl definitely wasn't one of them. Even from afar, Xiao Feng Chen and Daoist Tian Qing could tell that she was incomparably weak. And yet, this "Complete and Utter Belief Curse" had no effect on her.

This girl had looked at him with innocence, shock and fear, and denied that she knew him.

Once a person was affected by the "Complete and Utter Belief Curse", they would believe anything that the user said, with no exception. However, this cute little girl... evidently wasn't affected.

Xiao Feng Chen was completely dumbfounded, and even Daoist Tian Qing was shocked.

This was impossible!

After Xiao Feng Chen had lived for 1,000 years, his Feng Chen Curses had only failed once. That was when he had met that little monster Ling Tian in the Lunar Sky Hell. The reason why his curses had no effect on Ling Chen, and had even backfired was simple-Ling Chen's mental energy was far too powerful, and Xiao Feng Chen's mental energy simply couldn't compare to it.

Somehow, this cute, and weak-looking girl had resisted the curse... from the incredibly weak and kind look in her eyes, it

didn't seem like she had incredibly strong mental energy.

“Ah... uh... this... hahahaha...” Seeing Su'Er staring at him in fright, Xiao Feng Chen could only awkwardly laugh... the hell? Did my Feng Chen Curse just fail? No way... maybe I'm rusty. I'll try again!

“Utter Despair Curse!”

The Complete and Utter Belief Curse was one of the lower-tier curses, whereas the Utter Despair Curse was an intermediate level Feng Chen Curse. Even Ling Chen wasn't able to use it yet. Once someone was affected by the Utter Despair Curse, they would lose interest in everything, as well as lose all motivation for living.

The only change in the girl after Xiao Feng Chen used the Utter Despair Curse was that she looked even more frightened, as well as alert. Evidently, she saw Xiao Feng Chen as a crazy old man.

“Deity Curse!”

“Complete Cold-heartedness Curse!”

“Striptease Curse!”

“... Fudge!!”

Xiao Feng Chen had tried low level curses to high level curses,

using five in a row. And yet, Su'Er seemed completely unaffected. When his fifth Feng Chen Curse had been rendered ineffective, he started to jump up and down as he yelled at Daoist Tian Qing, "Holy fudgesticles! Old thing, this girl isn't affected by my Feng Chen Curses! Fudge!! She's the one you're looking for!"

There were three possibilities for why a Feng Chen Curse could fail. The first was because the target's mental energy was far stronger than Xiao Feng Chen's. The second was that the target's overall strength was far above Xiao Feng Chen's-the gap needed to be so large that Xiao Feng Chen's mental energy couldn't make up for it. The third possibility was much rarer than the first two: and that was that the target had a completely pure and innocent heart. This sort of person would not be affected by even the strongest Feng Chen Curse.

The qualifications for becoming the successor to the Heaven's Secrets Sect was that one must have a heart that was completely devoid of evil and malice-one that was absolutely pure.

However, having a completely pure heart was virtually impossible. Apart from newborn babies, who could be completely free of evil thoughts? Even someone who had never done an evil deed in their life was bound to have harboured some evil thoughts at some point in their life. Moreover, good could not exist without evil, and evil could not exist without good. Finding a being that was completely devoid of evil was simply far too difficult.

However, this didn't mean that it was impossible. When a person's soul was pure to the extreme, their evil side would be gradually suppressed, until it was completely covered. Although it

was still there, it would be completely suppressed by their overwhelming purity, as if it wasn't there.

The girl in front of them was evidently this sort of person-the person that Daoist Tian Qing wanted to find. The Feng Chen Curses being ineffective against her was the best, and most direct, proof.

When the first Feng Chen Curse had failed, Daoist Tian Qing's eyes had lit up. As Xiao Feng Chen's expression became more and more outraged, he had become more and more ecstatic... this girl looked incredibly meek and pure, and there was not a single trace of impurity on her.

There was no doubt about it! She was the type of person he was trying to find! The stars had not cheated him-he had indeed found the person in the Vermillion Bird City.

Whether the person was male or female was not important at all. To be able to find a successor was Daoist Tian Qing's greatest wish. If he couldn't find a successor within 30 years, when his time was up, the Heaven's Secrets Sect would disappear forever. He was incredibly excited as he stared at the young girl in front of him.

At this moment, Xiao Feng Chen started to congratulate Su'Er. He charged over to her with a "whoosh", as if he was afraid that she would run away. Seeing Xiao Feng Chen flash over at an incredible speed, Su'Er became even more frightened. Xiao Feng Chen began to holler, "Girly! Great blessings! Great blessing are about to be showered on you! You see that old guy with the white hair? Hurry up and become his disciple! He's the Sect Leader of the

Heaven's Secrets Sect, one of the three sects founded by the Night Demon Clan's Three Sages! Hurry up! Don't miss this opportunity!"

Su'Er was completely terrified at this point. Her face was incredibly pale as she held her hands out in front of her and retreated, her eyes wide and full of fear.

Daoist Tian Qing, who was normally incredibly calm, now felt like throwing Xiao Feng Chen into the pig sty so he could be repeatedly violated by those pigs. Any normal person would think that Xiao Feng Chen was crazy, and would run away from him. Daoist Tian Qing hurriedly went up to Su'Er and swished his horsetail whisk before bowing and saying, "Little friend, please don't be afraid. My friend is quite enthusiastic and raucous, but he bears no ill will towards you. I am the Sect Leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect, and I have searched my entire life for a successor. Little friend, you have an incredibly pure heart, and are a perfect candidate. I would like to invite this little friend to become part of my Heaven's Secrets Sect-are you willing?"

Currently, Daoist Tian Qing felt exactly the same way as Xiao Feng Chen had felt when he met Ling Chen in the Lunar Sky Hell-he was terrified that this little girl wouldn't be willing. No matter if it was the Feng Chen Sect or the Heaven's Secrets Sect, finding a successor was simply too difficult. Being able to find one was an incredible stroke of luck. Moreover, Daoist Tian Qing only had 30 years left in his lifespan. If he couldn't find a suitable successor within 30 years, he would become the greatest sinner of the Heaven's Secrets Sect. As such, he had to convince Su'Er no matter what.

Daoist Tian Qing was like an ancient immortal, and his voice was infused with a bit of the power of the Dao. It made all hearers of his voice feel that they could trust him and become close with him. However... this didn't help the current situation much. Su'Er had just been standing there when a crazy old man had suddenly started babbling at her, while the other old man asked her to become his disciple. She had never heard of the "Heaven's Secrets Sect" before, and it was virtually impossible for her to agree.

Su'Er rarely left the house, and usually only interacted with her family and her close friends. She wasn't used to interacting with strangers, and these two men were simply too intimidating. She hurriedly shook her head as she stuttered, "I... I... no... I need to do something... goodbye..."

After speaking, she quickly turned to leave.

Chapter 360 - The Diverging Paths

“Please wait, little friend, please wait!!” Seeing that Su’Er was about to leave, Daoist Tian broke into a sweat. There were three sects left behind by the Night Demon Clan’s Three Sages: Heaven’s Secrets Sect, Earth Fiend Sect and Feng Chen Sect. As the leader of the other sects, even the Emperor had to give due respect to the Heaven’s Secrets Sect. To become the successor of the Heaven’s Secrets Sect was something that people didn’t even dare to dream about. If the Heaven’s Secrets Sect openly recruited disciples, the applicants would be enough to fill an entire mountain range.

The people of the Heaven’s Secrets Sect could find out Heaven’s Secrets-this meant that they could foretell the future, see back into the past and reveal the secrets of the present. Although their battle power wasn’t great, who wouldn’t want this sort of ability? Countless people had begged to become disciples of the Heaven’s Secrets Sect. Even the most powerful experts, as well as the noble Emperor had to treat them with utmost respect. They never knew when they would require their assistance one day. Moreover, the revenge and retaliation from one who could see Heaven’s Secrets was far too terrifying if they were offended.

It was quite strange though-although the Heaven’s Secrets Sect and Feng Chen Sect were held in such high regard, they had to beg their successors to join. Ling Chen had initially refused, and now Su’Er was also refusing.

Daoist Tian Qing’s body blurred, and he reappeared in front of Su’Er. He once again bowed to her, “Little friend, please do not be afraid. We hold no ill intentions towards you. It is as I just said-I am the only one left in my generation in the Heaven’s Secrets Sect.

I've spent a long time searching for a suitable successor, and I finally found this little friend. I hope that little friend can hear me out."

Daoist Tian Qing's voice was calm and amicable, and anyone listening to it would gradually relax. Su'Er became a bit less anxious, but immediately, a rowdy voice yelled out.

"That's right, that's right! We're here to find a disciple! This old man's the Sect Leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect! The Heaven's Secrets Sect, I tell you! Lil' girl, this is the best thing that will ever happened to you! If you join the Heaven's Secrets Sect, you can know whatever you want to know. Even the strongest expert in the world will have to step to the side when you walk past, and even the Emperor will treat you with respect. When the time comes, you can have as much money as you want, and whatever man you want. Even if you want 72 male concubines, that's absolutely possible! What are you waiting for? Hurry up and call that old man your master and become the successor of the Heaven's Secrets Sect! When this old thing is dead, you can do whatever you want! Look at me, and my sincere eyes! Everything I said was the absolute truth!!"

Saliva flew everywhere as Xiao Feng Chen rambled on while wildly gesticulating. His body language seemed to convey even more than his mouth was. His words caused her to become even more frightened, and her face was completely pale... this old man was the manifestation of madness. Su'Er retreated a few steps, and simply turned and ran.

"Xiao Feng Chen!!"

Daoist Tian Qing was furious at this point. Xiao Feng Chen just had to yell like that when the girl was finally calming down. Let alone a little girl like her, even a grown man would be scared away by him. He glared at Xiao Feng Chen as he yelled, “Do you even know how to speak!! Do you think this is like 10,000 years ago? The Heaven’s Secrets Sect has hidden away for such a long time-there’s barely anyone who knows about it anymore! That little girl’s evidently one of those people from another world, so it’s impossible for her to know about it. Everything you just said would make someone think you’re absolutely mad-who would believe you?! I finally found the perfect successor-what are you going to do if you scare her away?!”

Daoist Tian Qing looked over and saw that Su’Er had already taken out a teleport scroll, and his hair almost stood on end. He swished his horsetail whisk, and a semi-transparent light descended from the sky and covered Su’Er’s body. Su’Er immediately froze, unable to move at all. Only her eyes trembled, full of shock and fear.

Xiao Feng Chen sulked as he stood at a distance. He knew what sort of person Daoist Tian Qing was. As someone who cultivated in the Dao, he had gradually severed away his seven emotions and six desires. Only very rarely would he become extremely emotional-this was the first time Xiao Feng Chen had seen him so furious. Evidently, Daoist Tian Qing was very worried about this matter, as it concerned the extinction of his Heaven’s Secrets Sect. As such, he couldn’t hold back as he roared at Xiao Feng Chen.

Xiao Feng Chen rubbed his nose. That little girl was indeed scared off by him, so he could only mutter, “It’s not like you don’t

know how my personality is. If it wasn't because I also wanted you to find a successor, why would I have stayed in this crappy place for so long? That boy Ling Tian brought me out of that damn place, and fulfilled my greatest wish. In order to help him, I need to help you find a successor... goddamit, you convince her by yourself then. I won't say a single word from now on."

Daoist Tian Qing's forehead was covered in sweat. He had finally found a suitable successor, and was now forced to bind her like this. If this little girl wasn't willing...

He slowly walked forwards in front of Su'Er, and used his warmest and kindest voice and expression, "Little friend, please do not be angry or afraid. I had no choice but to bind you. We're really not bad people, and don't hold any ill intentions towards you. I just hope that you can listen to me first, and I will release you immediately. Afterwards, whether little friend wants to stay or leave, I won't try to stop you at all. Please forgive me for doing this."

Daoist Tian Qing was about to go into the details about the Heaven's Secrets Sect, such as the powers and status she would receive. He was fully confident that after hearing the complete explanation, she would be willing to join. However, before he could start speaking, Su'Er blurted out a question, "You... You just mentioned Ling Tian... is he a player like me?"

Hearing the name Ling Tian, Xiao Feng Chen's ears perked up, and he immediately jumped up, "Of course! What, do you know him? Right, he also comes from another world; maybe you're friends or something. I'll have you know that Ling Tian is my

disciple, and is my Feng Chen Sect's successor. He's an absolute genius..."

Daoist Tian Qing glared at Xiao Feng Chen, who promptly stopped speaking. Daoist Tian Qing smiled amicably, "Little friend Ling Tian is indeed a 'player' from another world. Do you know him by any chance?"

"Then... then what did you say big brother Ling Tian needed help with? Is it something really difficult and really important, and might take a long time?" Su'Er hurriedly asked. Ling Chen had departed to do something in the game. When she heard Xiao Feng Chen and Daoist Tian Qing speaking, she suddenly thought of the reason why Ling Chen had left.

Su'Er's reaction caused Xiao Feng Chen's eyes to light up. He let out a long sigh, and started to exaggerate Ling Chen's plight, "He needs to find some things, which he says are more important than his life. Even if he searches every inch of the Forgotten Continent, he has to find them, no matter what. Seeing that he was serious, as his master, I decided to help him. The only person who can help Ling Tian is this old man. Who would have thought that this old guy isn't able to help anymore; only his successor will be able to help Ling Tian. That's why we're looking so desperately for a successor for him.

"Ahaha, that's indeed how it is," Daoist Tian Qing said calmly, "Half a month ago, brother Xiao asked me to reveal the Heaven's Secrets to help Ling Tian find some things. Using the Heaven's Secrets Sect's methods to find objects is extremely simple. However, it's a pity that I'm already at my limit. If I continue to

reveal the Heaven's Secrets, I will receive divine punishment, and immediately die. Only by finding a successor will I be able to help little friend Ling Tian. Little friend Ling Tian's matter seems to be quite important, but it will be almost impossible for him to find what he seeks in the vast Forgotten Continent. If he doesn't have the aid of the Heaven's Secrets, he may have to spend his entire life searching. As such, brother Xiao and I have been searching for a successor for my Heaven's Secrets Sect, and finally found little friend today."

From Su'Er's reaction, Daoist Tian Qing could see that she not only knew Ling Tian, but was quite close with him. As such, he didn't bother talking about the Heaven's Secrets Sect, but instead focused on Ling Tian's quest. For the Heaven's Secrets Sect, he would have to act selfishly. As soon as he finished speaking, he began to sweat even more.

"Look for some things... Heaven's Secrets..."

Su'Er felt quite confused, but she knew that what they were talking about was related to Ling Tian leaving. As such, she asked, "If I join your Heaven's Secrets Sect, will I be able to help big brother Ling Tian find what he's looking for?"

"Indeed. The requirements for becoming the successor of the Heaven's Secrets Sect are extremely strict-perhaps you are the only one in the entire world who can help him." Daoist Tian Qing said. The scene of Ling Chen leaving surfaced in Su'Er's mind, as well as Xiao Qi's departure... Su'Er softly nodded her head. The weakness in her eyes were replaced with a look of determination, "Grandpa, I believe you. If I can help big brother Ling Tian, I'm willing to join

the Heaven's Secrets Sect.”

The binding had been lifted, but Su'Er did not leave. She looked at Daoist Tian Qing with determination in her eyes... she wanted to be able to help Ling Chen, even if it was a bit. Although she couldn't confirm whether these two old men were good or evil, or whether they were telling the truth or not, she simply wanted to help him...

Daoist Tian Qing was overwhelmed with joy, but he did his best to keep it inside of him. He slowly nodded his head, but his voice still trembled, “Good... good... from today onwards, you are my Heaven's Secrets Sect's fifteenth generation disciple. When you have mastered the power of the Heaven's Secrets, you will be the Heaven's Secrets Sect's fifteenth generation Sect Leader!”

.....

The members of Heart's Dream had been brought together by Meng Xin. Now that Heart's Dream had been destroyed, their paths all diverged...

For that sliver of hope, Ling Chen had embarked on an almost impossible quest; similarly, for a sliver of hope, as well as to help Ling Chen, Xiao Qi had gone to the Lava Purgatory; by a turn of fate, Su'Er had met Daoist Tian Qing, and joined the Heaven's Secrets Sect to help Ling Chen... although she hadn't understood what joining the Sect or becoming the Sect Leader really meant. Yun Meng Xin gave up on her battle profession and worked with Li Xiao Xue to develop the piece of land. Mu Bing Yao took Tian Tian to dangerous regions to train. Tian Tian originally never went to those sorts of places, but in order to become stronger and to hone

her battle sense, Mu Bing Yao had no other choice. Mu Bing Yao wanted Tian Tian to unlock the full potential of her “strongest profession”.

Chapter 361 - Returning To The Fairy Realm

South of the Vermillion Bird City, Lava Purgatory.

The heat waves caused Xiao Qi's skin to turn bright red. She hadn't stopped even once on her way from the Vermillion Bird City to the Lava Purgatory. As she rode on, she became more and more determined to follow through with her decision.

When she arrived, she called back her mount and took out the feather that the Vermillion Bird had given her. She gripped it tightly in her hand... after yelling out the Vermillion Bird's name, there would be no going back. Since she was already here, she wouldn't allow herself to harbour any regrets.

Big brother Ling Tian, I believe in you.

Xiao Qi lifted up the feather and closed her eyes. Within her mind flashed many familiar figures. When she opened her eyes, there was not a hint of hesitation anymore. She yelled out, "Vermillion Bird... Vermillion Bird!!"

The Vermillion Bird's feather lit up, and a gigantic crimson shadow appeared in the sky. It was the image of a bird radiating majesty and power. The bird had the head and tail of a phoenix, claws of an eagle, neck of a snake, and was covered in burning, crimson feathers.

It was the Vermillion Bird's phantasm.

“You’ve come. It’s been quite a while; you must have had quite a lot of doubts about coming.”

The Vermillion Bird’s voice boomed out.

The first time she had met the Vermillion Bird, Xiao Qi’s heart had been full of terror and apprehension. This time, she was incredibly calm. She looked up and replied in a loud voice, “Vermillion Bird, I wish to inherit your flames.”

“Very good. That is the answer I hoped for. However, I want to remind you: once you enter the Lava Purgatory, until you finish the inheritance, you will not be able to leave in body or in spirit. That means you will not be able to return to your own world. Have you prepared for this?”

“Yes, and I won’t regret it either. If you can give me power, and even... even cure my illness, I will do all I can to thank you.” Xiao Qi said.

“There’s no need to thank me; this is my destiny. You will receive great benefits, and will also fulfil one of my greatest wishes. If you’ve made up your mind, then walk forwards into the Lava Purgatory.

Xiao Qi didn’t reply as she took a step into the Lava Purgatory.

Whoosh!

A ball of flames ignited under Xiao Qi's feet, and began to expand. Soon, it covered her entire body. Xiao Qi let out a gasp of shock, but immediately, her fear turned into wonder and awe. She looked at the flames around her... they were definitely real, but she didn't feel any heat from them at all.

A gust of wind blew over, causing the flames to grow even more. All of Xiao Qi's clothes and equipment were instantly incinerated, revealing her beautiful body.

“Ahhhhhhhh!!!”

Xiao Qi instinctively cried out, and covered her chest with her arms. However, her arms and small hands weren't able to cover her entire body.

“What do you need those low-grade equipment for? If you bring them into the Lava Purgatory, they will be incinerated anyways. As the inheritor of my Vermillion Bird's Flames, how can normal equipment match up to the flames you will inherit? Because you are not of my clan, and do not have feathers, I will make a battlesuit of holy fire for you from my feathers. Prepare yourself for the inheritance-the first few days will be the most painful part of the inheritance. If you can endure it, the rest of the process will go smoothly. If you can't endure it, then your consciousness will be consumed by my Vermillion Bird's Flames, and will disappear. It is too late to change your mind, so please be prepared.”

The Vermillion Bird's voice gradually dissipated, and Xiao Qi's

body and the flames around it also disappeared...

At the same time, in the Fairy Forest.

With Xiao Hui leading the way, Ling Chen quickly found the Bewildering Formation, the entrance to the Fairy Realm. This time, Ling Chen didn't need Xiao Hui to show him how to activate the teleportation channels. After all, he had gone through all of them before.

Very soon, Ling Chen passed through the Bewildering Formation. The scenery in front of him changed, and he once again saw the beautiful Fairy Realm.

This was the third time he had come to the Fairy Realm, but he felt completely different to how he had felt the first two times.

“Lalala... lalalala... lalalalala...”

The sound of cheerful singing travelled into Ling Chen's ears. The voice sounded young and sweet, and the song consisted of just “lala”. This song should have sounded quite plain, but Ling Chen couldn't help but listen to it as he stood still.

The song was extremely simple, yet it made him feel calmer, as if it contained some sort of magic. When he came back to his senses, it felt as if a long time had passed.

This voice...

“Cai’Er, is it you?” Ling Chen looked around him as he shouted out. This voice was most probably Cai’Er’s, but because she was so small, it was hard to see her in the sea of flowers and grasses.

“Eee?”

The singing stopped, and a light blue figure floated out of the sea of flowers and grasses. It was a little girl who was only about half a metre tall, and was wearing a light blue gown. She had black hair, and her eyes shone like stars. On her back were two wings that were quickly flapping, and she was holding a small basket in her hands. It was indeed Cai’Er.

When Cai’Er saw Ling Chen, her eyes widened and she stared for a long time, unable to believe her eyes. Her little mouth opened wide, and she flew over with a ‘swish’ as her eyes sparkled, “Big brother! It’s really big brother! Big brother’s fine, and he actually came out! Dad and granny said that big brother went to a very horrible place, and might never come out. But... big brother actually came out! Awesome, awesome!”

Cai’Er flew around him as she excitedly yelled out. The joy and happiness that she displayed caused Ling Chen to feel moved. He smiled as he said, “Cai’Er, long time no see. Are you here to collect flower nectar?”

“Mhmm, Cai’Er comes out to collect flower nectar every day.

Just like butterflies and bees, flower nectar is our food.” Cai’Er said as she happily nodded. Her head tilted as she continued, “However, after eating your human food, flower nectar doesn’t taste as good anymore, and I always feel like eating human food... and I also miss those big sisters. Big brother, are you here to visit Cai’Er? Did the big sisters come? I really want to see the prettiest and kindest one, big sister Shui Ruo. I like her the most.”

Ling Chen trembled, and his expression froze for a split second. However, he immediately recovered and smiled, “I came here today to play with Cai’Er, as well as to talk to your dad... and granny. Cai’Er, can you take me to meet them?”

“Okay, okay!” Cai’Er immediately nodded. She flicked her wrist, and the little basket mysteriously vanished. She flew in front of Ling Chen as she talked, “Dad and granny have always kept big brother in their thoughts. After big brother vanished, they said that big brother went to a very dangerous place, and would probably never be able to come out. They were really worried about you, and blamed themselves, and would often say that they hated themselves for what they did. And big sister’s been really sad as well, and hasn’t played with Cai’Er in days. If they see big brother, they’ll definitely be really happy.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

The Fairy Realm was quite large, and took up nearly a quarter of the Fairy Forest. However, there were only roughly 2,000 or so Fairies living there. It was quite tragic to see that the once powerful Fairy Clan had been reduced to such a state. The reason for this was because of the current low fertility rate of the Fairies,

as well as the fact that they were sealed inside the Fairy Realm. If they continued on like this, even if they did not engage in any battles, they would disappear from the Forgotten Continent.

The only way to restore their Fairy Clan was for the Fairies to live among humans, and reproduce with humans. This was the Fairy Clan's greatest desire, but they were prevented from doing so by the barrier.

“Dad, granny, big sister... big brother's back. Big brother's come back to see us!”

Cai'Er's clear voice rang out, breaking the peacefulness of the Fairy Realm.

A green light flashed, and the first to appear was Fairy Chief Greenwood. As soon as he saw Ling Chen, a look of surprise flashed across his face, before he quickly regained his calm, “Ling Tian... you were actually able to escape from the Lunar Sky Hell.”

Chapter 362 - Absolutely Impossible!

There were not many Fairies in the Fairy Clan, and they all lived together. Whenever “something big” happened, the entire clan would know quite quickly. After Greenwood spoke, the Fairy Clan’s ten elders appeared simultaneously. When they saw Ling Chen, their expressions were full of shock. Not too long ago, this human had been forced into the Lunar Sky Hell because of them. The place where the Moon God Clan sealed the vilest and cruellest creatures, a terrifying place. No one had ever escaped from the Lunar Sky Hell before.

And yet, this human was standing in front of them, completely fine. They simply couldn’t understand what was going on.

“It seems that the Moon God Clan discovered that you had mistakenly entered, and that you’re not a great evildoer, so they let you out. After all, the Moon Goddesses are all righteous and kind-hearted. Although they hate evil, they would never wrongly punish an innocent person.

Before Ling Chen could even explain, Greenwood had already set an explanation for him. Perhaps, to the Fairies, this was the only believable explanation. With the countless powerful demons and monsters in the Lunar Sky Hell, it would have been impossible for a human like Ling Chen to escape in one piece. Hearing Greenwood’s words, the ten elders all nodded together.

Behind them, a green door was silently opened, and Ying Xue appeared at the door. She didn’t come out, but instead stared at Ling Chen, her eyes filled with chaotic emotions. No one could tell

what she was thinking.

Her First Wings had been taken away by Ling Chen, and no matter what, she could only be with Ling Chen. As the daughter of the Fairy Chief, she had to follow this rule. After Ling Chen was forced into the Lunar Sky Hell, she had accepted that she would be alone for the rest of her life, and had calmed herself down in just a few days. However, the person who she thought that she could never meet again was now standing right in front of her. Her heart trembled as waves crashed within it. She now somewhat understood what her grandmother meant by “connected by destiny”.

“Fairy Chief Greenwood, Elders, it’s been a while.” Ling Chen said. Actually, only half a month had passed since he had left the Fairy Clan, which wasn’t very long. However, that event seemed like a lifetime ago. Upon entering the Fairy Realm again, it felt like a long time had passed.

The Fairies could only see calmness in Ling Chen’s eyes; there was no anger or hatred, which was what they had expected. After all, they had forced him into a place where he was almost guaranteed to die. If it wasn’t for his luck, he almost certainly would have died, or spent an eternity in darkness. This was something that they had felt guilty about, causing them to regret forcing their own traditions and beliefs onto a human. Fairies were creatures with the purest souls in the entire world. Although they tried to keep their thoughts and desires pure, but their devotion to Nature, as well as their traditions, was almost fanatical...

Seeing Ling Tian appear before them again, they were greatly

shocked, but also relieved. However, they couldn't help but wonder... why did he come back here?

Last time, because of their demands, Ling Chen was forced to flee into the Lunar Sky Hell. Surely, after escaping from the Lunar Sky Hell, he had no reason to come back here. Moreover, he knew that the Fairy Realm was sealed-there would be no way to leave once he came again.

Was it for revenge? Evidently not. With his strength, most Fairies could instantly kill him.

In that case, there was only one possibility...

He must have finally come around, and decided to join the Fairy Clan by becoming a Fairy. Otherwise, why would he have come back?

Thinking to there, Greenwood spoke, "Ling Tian, I'm greatly relieved that you're fine. Now, you know where that teleportation channel leads. After that day, we all reflected on our actions. Although we maintain that our beliefs were not wrong, we nearly sent you to your death, so we're glad that you're back. Haha, this time, you're probably here for something important. Here, come inside this room and take a seat. Don't worry, we won't let what happened last time repeat itself. Even if you want to rebuke us and ask for compensation, we'll be willing."

"No, that's alright," Ling Chen shook his head, "I wasn't hurt during my time in the Lunar Sky Hell, but instead received great

benefits. Let's forget about what happened last time. This time, I have come to the Fairy Realm for something incredibly important—there's something I need your help with.”

“Oh? What is it?” Greenwood asked. The ten elders also listened attentively.

Ling Chen looked down as he slowly said, “My little sister, because of some unforeseen events, has fallen into a very deep sleep. I want to use your Fairy Fountain to protect her body.”

Those few sentences clearly stated his reason for once again coming to the Fairy Realm. However, when he mentioned the name “Fairy Fountain”, Greenwood and the ten elders' faces immediately darkened.

Evidently, the Fairy Fountain was very important to them.

“Ahhh!!!” Cai'Er was the first to react. She looked at Ling Chen in shock, then let out a cry of horror as she covered her mouth with her hands, saying, “Big brother's little sister... big brother's little sister... could it be that big sister Ruo Ruo... she...”

Although Cai'Er was pure and innocent, she wasn't stupid. Of course, she understood what Ling Chen had meant by Shui Ruo falling into “a very deep sleep”. Moreover, the Fairy Fountain was only ever used to protect the bodies of deceased Fairies.

Ling Chen didn't answer Cai'er. To him, Shui Ruo was merely

asleep, and was waiting for him to wake her up. However, his silence gave Cai'Er her answer. Cai'Er covered her mouth with her hands as her tears leaked out, and she started to wail, "Wuuuu... big sister Ruo Ruo's dead! No! I don't want big sister Ruo Ruo to die! Cai'Er missed her so much... Cai'Er missed her every day!! How can she die like this... this can't be real!! No... wuuu..."

Greenwood couldn't help but look surprised. He couldn't think of where Ling Chen had heard of the legend of the Fairy Fountain from. After all, the Fairy Clan had disappeared for countless years, and very few outsiders knew about the Fairy Fountain. Seeing the look in Ling Chen's eyes, he could see how important this "little sister" was to him, that he would return to this place. However...

Greenwood spoke, "So it's like that. My condolences about your sister. However, the Fairy Clan is unable to help you with this matter."

"Reason?" Ling Chen coldly asked. After the events from last time, Ling Chen no longer had any favourable thoughts towards the Fairy Clan. No matter what their reasons were, they had nearly forced him to his doom. If it was any other player, they would have been stuck in the Lunar Sky Hell forever. As such, even though he required their help, he didn't show the courtesy he would have. He was someone who repaid both favours and grudges.

"We're indeed unable to help you with this." The leader of the ten elders said as he stepped forwards. An expression of worship appeared on his face, "Since you know about the Fairy Fountain, you should also know how important it is to the Fairy Clan. The Fairy Fountain is the holiest place of our Fairy Realm, and is the

place we must protect with our lives. The Fairy Fountain is a holy place granted to us by Nature itself. Countless years ago, our ancestor was born from this Fairy Fountain. The water in the Fairy Fountain contains the purest Nature energy in the world, which is extremely suitable for Fairies. The Fairy Realm's flowers and grasses could grow so beautifully, and even the air and dewdrops are infused with so much life energy, all because of the Fairy Fountain. Even the Fairy Forest is affected by the Fairy Fountain.

“The Fairy Realm can only exist because of the Fairy Fountain. In the Fairy Realm, every Fairy has flawless bodies and looks, as well as incredibly pure energy. We never succumb to illness, and our strength grows quickly. If the water from the Fairy Fountain is poured on a tree, it will be thriving with leaves and fruits overnight. If one drinks the water from the Fairy Fountain, they will be able to go an entire month without eating, drinking, or sleeping, and still feel more invigorated than otherwise, as well as be cured of many illnesses. Using the water from the Fairy Fountain to regularly clean one's body can allow one to retain their youthful looks. Also, as you know, putting a deceased creature into the Fairy Fountain can preserve, and even purify, their bodies for thousands of years.”

The elder began to look more serious as he continued, “The Fairy Fountain was a blessing given to us by the Nature God. If the Fairy Fountain disappears, or is contaminated, then the Fairy Clan will face great peril. Every single drop of water from the Fairy Fountain is incomparably important to us. Because of how close we Fairies are with Nature, it is impossible for us to contaminate it. However, creatures from the outside world are full of impurities-if they so much as even touch the water, all of the water in the Fairy Fountain will be contaminated. As such, we've never allowed any creature outside of the Fairy Clan to touch the Fairy Fountain, or

even go near it. This is something that we absolutely will not compromise on.”

“What the head elder said is what I was going to say,” Greenwood sighed, “After what happened last time, we all reflected on our actions. Although our traditions are important, we shouldn’t force them on outsiders. However, this time, it’s not us forcing you to do anything. In fact, even if you wanted to return Ying Xue’s First Wings, we wouldn’t refuse. If it was anything else, we would be willing to negotiate with you. However, it is absolutely impossible to allow an outsider to be placed into our Fairy Fountain. After all, the Fairy Fountain is directly connected to the life and death of our entire clan. I’m sorry, but we can’t help you with this request. In fact, even now, only six bodies have been placed into the Fairy Fountain, and they were all ancestors who made great contributions to the clan. Only they have the right to this glory. Although I’m this generation’s Fairy Chief, even I won’t be qualified to be placed into the Fairy Fountain after I die. We simply can’t agree to your request.”

Chapter 363 - Forcing His Way In!

Greenwood's reply was one that was unnegotiable... it was absolutely impossible to fulfil Ling Chen's request!

They were even more adamant than Ling Chen had expected.

There were already many Fairies gathered around them. Many of them looked absolutely furious that he would even think about putting an outsider's body into the Fairy Fountain. Fairies were all kind and amicable-for them to become angry so easily showed just how important the Fairy Fountain was to them. That was indeed the truth-contaminating the Fairy Fountain was even more unforgiveable than killing them. Even if they died, they wouldn't let any outsiders touch the Fairy Fountain.

Ling Chen looked around him, and saw the hostile looks on the Fairies' faces. If he continued to insist, it was possible that they would crush him. He slightly frowned, but calmly replied, "You can rest assured-although my little sister is a human, her body and heart are incomparably pure. She definitely won't contaminate your Fairy Fountain."

"You know just as well as I do whether humans' bodies and hearts have any impurities." Greenwood waved his hand, his face becoming more and more unseemly, "Of course, there are kind-hearted humans who love purity, but living in the outside world, without Nature's power cleansing them, it would be impossible for humans to be without any impurity. Moreover, even if there were such humans, what could give them the right to be placed in our Fairy Fountain? Since the ancient times, my clan has had countless

powerful and noble Fairy Kings, but only six of them were qualified to be laid at rest in the Fairy Fountain. We don't even put every Fairy King in-why should we put an outsider in? If we really did this, what would this mean for all our ancestors? If our Fairy Fountain is contaminated, then we'll become the greatest sinners of our Fairy Clan, and might even cause our clan to be wiped out! Enough, don't bring up this matter anymore. Unless you have the power to destroy our entire clan, we won't let you close to the Fairy Fountain."

Greenwood's words were incredibly heavy, and carried a warning. He suddenly realised that he spoke a bit harshly, as after all, this was a human who didn't understand the true significance of the Fairy Fountain to the Fairy Clan. He began to use a kinder and calmer voice, "Ling Tian, I'm sure you're still emotional from losing your loved one. To be able to come here for your loved one, I can see that you loved her very much. However, we simply can't help you with this. No outsiders have ever touched the Fairy Fountain before-we wouldn't even let the Moon Goddesses to touch it, let alone you. Ai, dead people can't be brought back-even if you put her in the Fairy Fountain, you'll just be preserving her body, and there isn't much point in that. I suggest you let this go, and properly bury her."

"Who said that people can't be brought back to life?" Ling Chen said as he stared down Greenwood, "I came here to preserve her body, so that I can bring her back to life in future! Fairy Chief Greenwood, you Fairies are all supposedly kind and compassionate-will you really not help in saving a life?"

Greenwood frowned, and stared back into Ling Chen's eyes. All he could see within Ling Chen's eyes was calmness and

determination, and none of the madness that he had expected. However, he simply couldn't fathom how a clear-minded person had declared that he would bring someone back to life so matter-of-factly. Greenwood temperately replied, "Ling Tian, I know that it's difficult to accept a loved one dying. However, death must come sooner or later to living creatures. Dying is a natural process that happens to everyone. Let alone humans and Fairies, even gods cannot escape death. This is something no one can change. If this was changed, then the order of the world would descend into chaos. Resurrection from the dead is simply impossible."

"Hmph, even if everyone in the world doesn't believe in resurrection, I'll still believe in it! If reviving someone from the dead is going against the heavens, then I'll go against the heavens." Ling Chen looked just as determined as ever. Greenwood's words simply couldn't shake him, "Fairy Chief Greenwood, please agree to this selfish request of mine. After putting my little sister in the Fairy Fountain, I will look for a method to revive her... thirty years, please give me thirty years. No matter if I succeed or fail, I will definitely come back and agree to any request you ask of me. Even if you ask me to stay here forever, or become a slave, I will be wholeheartedly willing."

Seeing Ling Chen's expression, Greenwood knew that no matter what he said, he wouldn't be able to change Ling Chen's mind. However, the Fairy Clan couldn't back down either. Greenwood exasperatedly sighed, and did his best to remain calm, reminding himself that Ling Chen had just lost someone important to him. He replied, "Put your little sister at rest in the earth, and let this matter go. Please stop deluding yourself. No matter what, we won't let any outsiders come into contact with the Fairy Fountain."

“Deluding myself? Ha...” Ling Chen could no longer maintain his calm breathing. In truth, he had expected this outcome. From his experience last time, he knew that Fairies were extremely stubborn creatures. Qi Yue had said that the Lunar Scourge could only preserve Shui Ruo’s body for seven days, and six days had already passed. Today was the seventh day, which meant that if he couldn’t find another place to preserve her body by sundown...

Even if he could find a way to revive her, it would be completely useless. His last bit of hope would be extinguished.

“And if I insist?” Ling Chen’s face darkened... since good cop hadn’t worked with these Fairies... it looked like he had to switch over to bad cop.

“If you refuse to let this go, then we will have to restrict your freedom. Just to inform you, we have already sealed the teleportation channel to the Lunar Sky Hell. Now that you’ve come again, you’re destined to stay here forever this time.” Greenwood said in a low voice. All of the Fairies around them started to glare at Ling Chen murderously. Ling Chen was a LV20 player, and even the weakest Fairy in the Fairy Realm would be able to take care of him easily. Ling Chen’s words didn’t cause them to feel any threat at all, only fury. Wanting to contaminate the Fairy Fountain was something they would never accept.

“Looks like I have no other choice...”

As Ling Chen said this sentence, his eyes flashed and he leapt to the right...the head elder said that the Fairy Realm was created due to the Fairy Spring, and that the closer one was to the Fairy Spring,

the thicker the scent of Nature would be. That meant that the Fairy Realm grew around the Fairy Fountain... meaning that the Fairy Fountain was in the middle of the Fairy Realm!

As soon as Ling Chen moved, Greenwood also moved in response. Although Ling Chen's overall strength was comparatively quite weak, he had powerful items. Last time, he had used an item that had an AOE stun, giving him the opportunity to escape into the Lunar Sky Hell. This time, they wouldn't make the same mistake.

The ten elders also moved into action. Anyone could see that this weak human actually wanted to force his way into the Fairy Realm's most sacred place. He was definitely carried away by his wishful thinking, and greatly overestimated himself.

But... was it really just wishful thinking, and that he had overestimated himself?

The current Ling Chen was the same level as the last time he had come, but there was a significant difference... and that was that he had joined the Feng Chen Sect. The Feng Chen Sect's greatest strengths were in its Feng Chen Curses, as well as... running away!

In that moment, pressure from countless Fairies locked onto Ling Chen's body, almost crushing him. Tens of streams of Fairy energy also shot over from different directions. They didn't contain any attack power though-evidently, they didn't want to hurt Ling Chen. However, if any of them touched him, he would lose his ability to move.

“Broken... Shadow!”

As if a gale had caught onto his body, his entire body became incredibly light, and he charged towards his destination.

Whoosh!!

All of the pressure and Fairy energy that had been locked onto Ling Chen was left far behind by him. The Fairies all heard the roar of a gale, and all that was left of Ling Chen was an afterimage.

Greenwood, the ten elders and all the other Fairies present all stared in shock. By the time they realised what had happened, Ling Chen had already disappeared from their sight. They had never seen this sort of speed before-in fact, they had never even heard of such a speed before!

“Hurry! Go to the Fairy Fountain!!” Greenwood was finally able to react, and his eyes widened as he yelled out. His yell travelled a long way, and covered almost the entire Fairy Realm, causing every Fairy to hear it. The direction Ling Chen had left in was precisely the direction that the Fairy Fountain was in. It was not very far to the Fairy Fountain, and at the monstrous speed he was travelling, it would take less than half a minute for him to arrive! Moreover, because of the Bewildering Formation, the Fairy Clan had never worried about outsiders entering, and so they had never prepared any defences for the Fairy Fountain.

If that human really did put his little sister in, then they would be finished.

Swish swish swish swish swish...

Light flashed, and Greenwood and the ten elders all disappeared. Within the Fairy Realm, they could borrow Nature's power to manipulate space, and use teleportation. After teleporting a few times, they reached the Fairy Fountain and waited for Ling Chen's arrival with darkened expressions. With Ling Chen's speed, it was impossible for them to chase after him. As such, they decided to wait for him at the Fairy Fountain to stop him. All of the other Fairies also flocked towards the Fairy Fountain.

Chapter 364 - Endless Jade

As soon as Ling Chen used Broken Shadow, there was not a single Fairy who could catch up to him. Very soon, the Fairy Fountain was surrounded by Fairy Chief Greenwood, the ten elders, as well as a large crowd of strong Fairies who could also use Nature's power to teleport. They formed a protective circle with the Fairy Fountain in the middle. To them, using such a formation against a LV20 human was simply overkill. However, since this concerned the Fairy Fountain, they did not hesitate in the least. What happened last time still remained clear in their memories.

Ling Chen's body flew forwards like a strong gale. Although the wind howled in his ears, he was still able to see clearly. Before, he had only been heading in a rough direction, but the direction Greenwood and the others had teleported in confirmed where the Fairy Fountain was.

No matter what... even if the entire Fairy Clan ends up hating me, I must put Ruo Ruo into the Fairy Fountain! I'll take whatever consequences are thrown at me! There's nothing more important than Ruo Ruo being revived!

"Be careful of the items he throws out!" Greenwood cautioned. Approximately 10 metres behind him was the Fairy Fountain. A green glow appeared in his hands. They had to take Ling Chen down before he reached the Fairy Fountain, no matter what.

"Understood." The head elder replied. Last time, they had personally experienced how powerful his items were. They wouldn't fall for the same thing again. If Ling Chen used that same

AOE stun item, they were confident that they would be able to seal it before it could activate.

Ling Chen's speed was simply monstrous. By the time they had said a few sentences, Ling Chen had already appeared in their field of vision, and closed in on them at a terrifying speed.

Currently, Ling Chen could only activate Broken Shadow for 20 seconds at a time, and could only use it 3 times per day. However, this 60 seconds was more than enough!

“Restrict him... no, forget it-kill him immediately!!”

Ling Chen's determination to defile their holiest place finally enraged all of the Fairies.

Greenwood and the ten elders attacked simultaneously. Immediately, one, ten, then thousands of light-green elemental arrows appeared in front of them, and shot out like a sea of arrows.

In the instant the Fairies saw Ling Chen, he also saw them. He looked past them, and saw the glimmer of water. It was a fairly small fountain, and the light that reflected off it was pure and warm. When he came closer to it, he noticed that the air became clearer and more refreshing, causing his vision, hearing and consciousness to become more focused.

“That's the Fairy Fountain!” Qi Yue yelled.

Even without Qi Yue's yell, Ling Chen knew that this was definitely the Fairy Fountain.

In front of him, countless elemental arrows rained down towards him. Greenwood was Mysterious God grade, and the ten elders were all definitely at least Heaven's End grade. To be able to defeat the Demon Beast Clan back then, the Fairy Clan was definitely quite powerful. A single arrow would be able to instantly kill Ling Chen. Moreover, the range of these arrows was terrifying-although they were shot from over 200 metres away, it looked as if they definitely were able to hit him.

Fairies were all natural-born Archers-this was something known by everyone in the Forgotten Continent.

However, how could Ling Chen allow himself to die?

As Ling Chen continued to run, he sidestepped to the left and right continuously. To the Fairies, it looked as if there were a hundred Ling Chens approaching at once, causing all of the Fairies' eyes to widen.

The countless elemental arrows rained down onto Ling Chen, piercing through his afterimages. Because Ling Chen was far too fast and agile, even these Mysterious God and Heaven's End grade Fairies couldn't tell which was the real Ling Chen and which ones were the afterimages. They saw many of their arrows chaotically crashing into each other, or passing through an afterimage. Ling Chen, who continued to charge at them, and was now only 100 metres away.

“W-what?!”

Greenwood and the ten elders were flabbergasted. Last time, they hadn't been able to stop Ling Chen because of his powerful items. To them, attacking a weak LV20 human was like an elephant stepping on an ant, and would not take any effort. Moreover, they had all attacked simultaneously with their elemental arrows. Not only did Fairies have incredible range, but the speed of their arrows was also incredibly fast. They had shot so many arrows so densely, and yet he was still completely fine.

They simply couldn't believe their eyes.

Greenwood's face darkened. With Ling Chen's strength, he wasn't able to cause any threat to their lives. However, with that sort of speed, if he was allowed to come close, they wouldn't be able to stop him. If he really put his little sister into the Fairy Fountain... everything would be over.

Greenwood stretched out his hand, and a jade-green bow appeared. The bow was incredibly large, with the bowstring at 2 metres in length. It was even taller than Greenwood himself.

When the bow appeared, all of the Fairies stopped moving, and stared at the bow, their eyes filled with reverence. It was as if they were looking at a divine being. They knew that for Greenwood to summon this bow, he had truly become furious, and was determined to destroy this human. The appearance of the bow also sealed this human's fate... the other Fairies didn't even need to

attack anymore. To do so would be blasphemous to the bow.

The massive bow hovered in front of Greenwood. His hands didn't touch the bow, but as he made the motion of drawing a bow, the massive bowstring began to be slowly pulled back. A glittering jade-green elemental arrow was quickly formed on the bowstring, pointing towards Ling Chen.

All of the Fairies held their breath, because the appearance of this arrow caused all of the surrounding air and energy to be sucked into it. The arrow grew longer and longer, thicker and thicker, and the colour of the arrow became deeper as well...

The name of this arrow was "Endless Jade". Within the same class of attacks, its destructive power was strong, but not extremely strong. Its strength was in its lightning fast speed, as well as the fact that it would not stop chasing its target, even if it had to chase him or her to the ends of the world!

This sort of arrow, shot by this sort of bow, against a LV20 human was simply ridiculous. However, Ling Chen had powerful items that could cause AOE stuns, and was able to escaped unscathed from their combined attack. This caused Greenwood to take out his trump card... the Fairy Fountain was simply too important, and they couldn't take any risks.

A white figure appeared next to the Fairy Fountain, and seeing that jade green light, her face fell and she couldn't help but yell out, "Father, no!!"

Woosh!!!

As soon as the “Endless Jade” was shot out, it was as if the space around it was like a thin piece of paper that was ripped apart, causing all of the Fairies to shudder.

The giant bow vanished, and Greenwood looked towards the jade-green arrow as he sighed inside his heart, “Forgive me, Ling Tian. For the Fairy Fountain, I have no other choice. Your speed and agility have exceeded my expectations, so I have no other option but to kill you with a single strike.”

When the “Endless Jade” arrow was being formed, Ling Chen’s gaze fell on it coldly. The instant it was shot out at him, the feeling of death surged inside of him, causing the hair on his body to stand on end. The dot of green that was speeding towards him was like a jade-green fang that was about to pierce his body.

At this moment, he was less than 50 metres away from Greenwood and the others. Let alone 50 metres, even at 20 metres, he would have the confidence to dodge normal arrows. However, this was certainly not a normal arrow. This ray of green light was many times faster than even the fastest bullet in the human world. Immediately, Ling Chen knew that he wouldn’t be able to dodge it.

Bang!!

Under the gaze of all of the Fairies, the Endless Jade arrow smashed into Ling Chen’s chest. The green light exploded, covering Ling Chen’s body. Endless Jade had never been dodged or

escaped by any person before. Even if Ling Chen was able to dodge its initial onslaught, it would be impossible for him to dodge it forever.

Seeing the green light explode, all of the Fairies lapsed into silence. Ying Xue bit her lips, and closed her eyes. She knew that Ling Chen was definitely dead. Last time, because of her, the Fairy Clan had forced him into the Lunar Sky Hell. This time, the Fairy Clan had personally killed him. This man who had taken away her First Wings had caused conflict in the Fairy Clan again and again, which was something she couldn't understand.

However, at that moment, the Fairies seemed to hear a furious roar. Within the green light surrounding Ling Chen's body, they could faintly see two blood-red dots.

Woosh!!

The air was once again torn, and the green glow that had just disappeared once again shot out... however, this time, it was shooting towards the Fairies. The Fairies all looked on with fear and dismay as the arrow, releasing boundless pressure, streaked towards Greenwood.

Bang!!

No one could dodge Endless Jade, and that included Fairy Chief Greenwood...

The Endless Jade arrow that had hit Ling Chen now shot into Greenwood's body, and exploded into green light. Greenwood gasped, and his body was blasted away by the Nature energy that the arrow contained. His closeness with Nature meant that he wouldn't be hurt by the Endless Jade arrow, but that didn't mean he could fully stop the momentum that it carried. In fact, not only Greenwood, but even the ten elders gathered around him were blasted back by 100 metres. They were now no longer in front of the Fairy Fountain, but behind it.

Ling Chen, who they were confident was dead, once again appeared in their field of vision. However, his face was now covered by a golden glow, with many spikes extending out of it-the Evil God's Mask!

Chapter 365 - Into The Fairy Fountain

The Endless Jade arrow shot out by Greenwood was meant to instantly kill Ling Chen. However, he didn't know about the Evil God's Mask in Ling Chen's possession. With the Evil God's Mask, all attacks that could instantly kill Ling Chen were useless, and would even be reflected back to the attacker!

There were not many Fairies who could use Nature's power to teleport, and as such there was a large gap in the circle left by Greenwood and the ten elders. Ling Chen sped towards that gap-with his speed, no one would be able to stop him!

If Greenwood hadn't shot out the Endless Jade arrow, and had just used the large numbers of plants to form a barricade, it would have been virtually impossible for Ling Chen to make it. However, the Endless Jade had not only not affected Ling Chen, but gave him a chance to break through.

“Lock down the Fairy Fountain!!”

After being blasted back, Greenwood did not panic. He yelled out, and green light began to shine from his and the ten elders' bodies. Instantly, countless thick vines sprang up from around the Fairy Fountain, rapidly growing towards a point in the air directly above the Fairy Fountain. Evidently, they wanted to use these vines to completely seal it off. That way, even if Ling Chen was able to come close, he wouldn't be able to do anything to the Fairy Fountain. However, this method had a large drawback-and that was that all of the energy and life force from the Fairy Fountain would also be sealed, which would affect all of the plants and

creatures in the entire Fairy Realm. However, they simply had no other choice. In all these years, they never had to completely seal off the Fairy Fountain before.

They never thought that such a weak human would be able to force them to such an extent!

While Greenwood and the ten elders were locking down the Fairy Fountain, the other Fairies were also kept busy as well. They worked together, causing many large vines to burst out about 10 metres in front of the Fairy Fountain, wanting to stop Ling Chen. Seeing that the Fairy Fountain was quickly being sealed, Ling Chen's eyes flashed in urgency. He hurriedly yelled out, "Leng'Er, help me! If you help, I'll give you five... no, ten new dolls!!"

Leng'Er was now much closer to Ling Chen, but was still not at the point where she would follow every order from him. Although she would occasionally help Ling Chen out when she felt like it, she wasn't like Xiao Hui, who would unconditionally obey him. The only way to mobilise her was to bribe her with dolls. Leng'Er had never been able to resist the temptation of dolls.

Under the offer of ten dolls, Leng'Er's eyes lit up, and she immediately nodded. She stretched out her two arms, and her eyes flashed with a black light. "Darkness Lock" was activated, and illusory chains passed through the wall of vines, and wrapped around the nearest Fairies, locking their active skills.

All of Leng'Er's skills forced a certain condition onto the target. Evidently, even these Fairies were not strong enough to resist Leng'Er's skills.

The Fairies who were focusing on making the vines grow as quickly as possible suddenly shuddered, and an expression of surprise surfaced on their faces... the Nature energy that they could easily control suddenly fell dormant, and couldn't be controlled by them. The vines, having lost the energy that was controlling and nourishing them, quickly withered. Gaps began to appear in the originally dense wall of vines.

Ling Chen burst through one of the gaps, flashing past the Fairies, with wind howling behind him. With Broken Shadow, let alone block him, the Fairies weren't able to even react in time.

“Stop him!!” All of the Fairies looked on with fear.

Ling Chen's current speed was one that could ignore almost everything.

Fairies were naturally much more powerful than humans. As soon as a Fairy was born, they would be stronger than a human who had cultivated for more than ten or so years. Within the Fairy Clan, any little kid would have been able to defeat Ling Chen in a direct confrontation. And yet, Ling Chen was able to throw the entire Fairy Clan into complete chaos. This was all because of his skill “Broken Shadow”.

No matter how strong one was, or how powerful their abilities were, what was the point if they couldn't even keep up with their opponent? Back when Xiao Feng Chen was trying to convince Ling Chen to join the Feng Chen Sect, he had explained this very

clearly. All of the human experts who were put into the Lunar Sky Hell were much more powerful than he was, but only he was still alive... why was that? It was because when he ran, none of the demons or beasts could touch a single hair on his head. So what if those experts were all incredibly strong? Without sufficient speed, all of that was completely useless.

After joining the Feng Chen Sect, Ling Chen only received one skill for running away, which was Broken Shadow. He could only use it for 60 seconds per day, but these 60 seconds were more than enough to throw the entire Fairy Clan into chaos. Ling Chen had to admit, although the Feng Chen Sect didn't have any powerful attack skills, but the skills they had were all astonishingly brutal and effective.

The Fairy Fountain was right in front of him, and Broken Shadow's effects were still active. Stopping him... was already impossible.

The vines densely covered the Fairy Fountain, creating an impenetrable cage. The only region that remained unblocked was the top of the 'cage', which was gradually becoming smaller and smaller. If even that small space was blocked, it would be impossible for him to reach the Fairy Fountain... but it seemed that he could make it!

Ling Chen deeply breathed in, and leapt upwards. With his extreme speed, he was able to jump incredibly far and high. While in the air, he felt ten or so pressures locking on to him. He didn't bother to turn around as he coldly harrumphed, activating the Lunar Scourge's "Moon Flare."

Woosh!

A blinding light pierced into all the Fairies' eyes like a sharp sword, causing them to cry out in pain. The pressures that locked on to him disappeared. It was simply impossible resist the light from Moon Flare. With Moon Flare, everyone's vision, except Ling Chen's, was rendered useless.

As soon as the white light began to appear, Greenwood could feel that something was amiss. Last time, it was also this blinding white light that had allowed Ling Chen to escape. He tightly closed his eyes, and the green glow around him remained just as strong. He mustered all of his strength, trying to close that final gap in the cage.

Taking advantage of the chaos and confusion, Ling Chen sped along the vines, charging towards the last gap. By now, every other place had been completely and utterly sealed-only the two-metre-wide gap at the very top was still closing up. In another two seconds, not even a bit of light would be able to enter.

Through the gap, he saw the still fountain. The water was so clear that even from that distance, he was able to clearly see the bottom. The fountain simply emanated purity and holiness.

This was... the Fairy Fountain...

Ling Chen didn't have any time to marvel at it. Just as the effects of Moon Flare were ending, it was replaced with a dark silver flash

of light.

Moon Shadow!

Immediately, the vines stopped, frozen in place.

The Fairies finally regained their vision. Looking up, they saw Ling Chen standing high in the air, on top of the vines, with a large gap in front of him.

Greenwood's face fell, as he found that no matter how hard he tried, the vines at the top couldn't budge at all. This caused him to become utterly shocked. Ling Chen's power definitely couldn't overcome his control of Nature energy... moreover, he felt that his connection with Nature hadn't been affected, but those vines at the top had been restricted by something, and even his power wasn't able to overcome it!

What was this power?

Greenwood quickly calmed down, and stopped trying to make those vines grow. Ten or so elemental arrows instantly formed in front of him as he shouted, "Quickly stop him!"

As he yelled out, the elemental arrows shot out towards Ling Chen. The other Fairies also moved into action, and started to shoot their own arrows towards him. In an instant, countless arrows swept towards Ling Chen. The ten elders disappeared, and teleported near Ling Chen, preparing to destroy him in one blow.

However, a strange scene met their eyes.

Countless elemental arrows shot at Ling Chen from every direction. Unless Ling Chen could fly, it would be impossible for him to dodge. However, when the elemental arrows came close to Ling Chen, they all stopped. They didn't vanish or fall down, but rather froze in place. Very soon, what they saw was a cage of vines, with a smaller cage of arrows above it. Furthermore, the ten elders who teleported close to Ling Chen weren't able to move either. They were unable to budge, and even their eyes stared unblinkingly. It was as if time had paused for them. Only shock and terror could be seen in their eyes.

The Fairies all stopped attacking, and watched with wide eyes, unsure of what to do.

Within Ling Chen's arms, a beautiful girl had appeared.

Although she seemed to be in a deep sleep, she looked dazzling and pure. As Ling Chen gently held her, his mind became chaotic, and repeatedly replayed her last words, "I'm sorry..."

Indeed, Shui Ruo's body had somehow appeared in this 'virtual world'. However, by now, Ling Chen didn't feel any shock.

Seven days. It was the first time they had been apart for so long. After today, perhaps they would be apart for much longer. He couldn't bear to part with her, and wanted to hug her forever. However, he knew that he couldn't allow himself to do that.

That short embrace contained boundless, endless longing. Ling Chen buried the grief and sorrow inside of him as he softly said, “Ruo Ruo, sleep well. Sleep... until I wake you up.”

Ling Chen closed his eyes, and gently let go... Ling Shui Ruo’s body gently floated down like a feather towards the Fairy Fountain. The Fairies all stared in horror, but there was nothing they could do. All of their elemental arrows had stopped short of their target, and even the ten elders were unable to move an inch. Under the effects of Moon Shadow, apart from Ling Chen and things that he allowed to move, there was nothing that could escape its bindings.

Splash...

The sound of Shui Ruo’s body entering the water travelled into every Fairy’s ears, causing their hearts to plummet.

Chapter 366 - Destroying The Barrier (1)

Ling Chen watched as Shui Ruo's body gently landed into the water. Ripples spread out from her, and she slowly sank to the bottom of the Fountain. She looked so peaceful and beautiful as if she was a sea princess who had been cursed to a long sleep, waiting for her prince to wake her up.

The effects of Moon Shadow ended, and the elemental arrows all dissipated. The ten elders also regained control of their bodies, and stood as a group, looking at Ling Chen in fear and fury. Although their bodies were restricted, they could still see and hear what was happening. This human had put another human in the Fairy Clan's holiest place, which mustn't be contaminated no matter what.

However, what's done was done. There was no way to reverse what had just happened. This was the first time an outsider had ever come into contact with the Fairy Fountain, and had even completely submerged within it. The Fairies were all completely furious. As the most peaceful and kind clan, they rarely became furious. What Ling Chen had done had pushed them too far.

“Ling Tian... you... you...” Greenwood's face was unsightly, and flames of anger burned in his eyes. His fists were gripped so tightly together that blood almost started to flow from them. What he, and the rest of the Fairy Clan, feared most, had just happened right in front of his eyes. He felt as if he had been struck by lightning, and suddenly felt incredibly dizzy. Boundless fury erupted inside his chest, and he was so overwhelmed by anger that he could only point at Ling Chen. He wanted to order this human killed, but even if they killed him, they wouldn't be able to change the fact that their Fairy Fountain was now contaminated. Even if they killed

him a thousand times, nothing would change, and their anger still wouldn't have dissipated.

“Are you happy now, Ling Tian? Do you know... what you've done?!” Greenwood vehemently spat out as his body trembled. As the Fairy Chief, he didn't want to fight or kill, but he now felt killing intent welling up inside of him.

“I know what I've done. However, I will compensate your Fairy Clan for this.” Ling Chen matter-of-factly replied.

“Compensation?” Greenwood coldly laughed, “The Fairy Fountain is the foundation of our Fairy Clan. As soon as the Fairy Fountain was contaminated, our clan was doomed! This was what our greatest ancestor told us! And yet, you... you...”

Ling Chen looked around at the Fairies. All of them were giving him murderous looks, filled with boundless hatred. As soon as Greenwood gave the order, they would do all they could to destroy him. Ling Chen continued to calmly reply, “Is the fate of your Fairy Clan really dependent on a fountain? Before today, your Fairy Fountain had never been touched by an outsider before, and yet your clan is declining to such an extent. With your low fertility rate, as well as being sealed from the outside world, even if the Fairy Fountain was ten times as big, or a hundred times as pure, you would still be in decline! In not too long, your Fairy Clan will dwindle down to just a few Fairies, and may even go extinct! I'm sure you're even more clear than me about this!”

Greenwood frowned, and gnashed his teeth, but could not rebut what Ling Chen had said. The Fairies who were listening were also

speechless. They all knew the current condition of the Fairy Clan, but no one wanted to talk about it. Ling Chen's words had ripped open a wound that they wanted untouched, and the Fairies' faces all darkened.

“I can't deny what you said. However, our Fairy Clan was born from Nature, and is extremely close with Nature. I don't believe that our clan will ever go extinct. You, a human, don't need to worry about these things.” Greenwood's tone was devoid of the courtesy he had previously shown. If he wasn't doing his best to suppress his anger, he would have gone up and ripped Ling Chen to shreds long ago. He continued, “You committed the gravest crime possible against our clan... no matter who you are, we simply can't forgive you. The person you put inside the Fairy Fountain... must disappear immediately!”

Greenwood charged forwards as he yelled, as did the ten elders. How could they possibly allow a human to remain within the Fairy Fountain?

“Don't you dare!”

Ling Chen's calm voice immediately became murderous, causing Greenwood and the ten elders to instantly stop, their bodies stiff. They felt an incredibly cold pressure covering their bodies, causing them to freeze... killing intent! This was an incredibly overwhelming wave of killing intent. They looked up at Ling Chen, who had not moved an inch. Ling Chen's eyes and expression had completely changed. His eyes were completely dead, and unmoving. Being stared at by these eyes, even many of the Heaven's End Grade Fairies couldn't help but shiver.

All the Fairies were born in the Fairy Realm. They didn't have any predators, or any other races to go to war against. Killing intent was something that many of them had never experienced before. This suffocating and icy pressure caused them to understand what killing intent really was. This wave of killing intent was so large that they simply couldn't fathom how releasing such amount was possible!

The one releasing this killing intent was actually a LV20 human. They couldn't understand how a weak human like this could make them feel so much fear.

“Hmph!” Greenwood coldly harrumphed as he released his own pressure, reducing Ling Chen's killing intent by half. However, his shock was still visible within his eyes. He did not retreat, and stared into Ling Chen's dark and cold eyes, saying, “You think that you can stop us? No matter how impressive your aura is, you won't be able to withstand a single blow from us.”

“I know I can't stop you,” Ling Chen's body and eyes were unmoving. Only his lips moved, as he released more killing intent, causing the airflow to become chaotic, “But if you dare to touch my little sister, and she loses the last bit of hope she has in reviving... I will cause your beloved Fairy Fountain to become the dirtiest marsh in the entire world! You can kill me, but in this world, I can revive as many times as I want. Moreover, your Bewildering Formation is completely useless against me-I can come in as I wish. Today, I was able to put my little sister in. Next time, I can do the same thing and put other things in, and can continue to do this for as long as I want. If you kill me a hundred times, I'll revive a hundred times and pollute your Fairy Fountain a hundred times...”

try touching my little sister's body, and we'll see whether I dare to do this or not!"

"You!!" Greenwood pointed his finger towards Ling Chen, his face ashen. However, he didn't dare to go any closer.

They had all personally seen Ling Chen's terrifying speed and his strange abilities. Today, even with Greenwood and the ten elders present, they had been unable to prevent Ling Chen from putting a person into the Fairy Fountain. They didn't want to admit it, but it was completely possible for Ling Chen to do the same thing again. Moreover, as a player, he could revive limitlessly and harass them limitlessly...

Thinking about this, Greenwood gnashed his teeth and frowned. But, how could Greenwood and the other Fairies back down? What Ling Chen had done was simply unforgiveable.

"Alright, settle down. Since things have become like this, threatening each other won't help resolve the issue. Everyone calm down."

An elderly voice slowly spoke, and hearing this voice, much of the Fairies' fury dissipated. Looks of respect appeared on their faces and even Greenwood became much calmer. They turned to look at Granny Witherwood, who had appeared without any of them noticing.

"Mother, we were useless and couldn't stop these humans from contaminating the Fairy Fountain... we'll let mother decide what

to do from here.” Greenwood said while sighing The Fairy Realm had existed in peace for thousands of years, and today was the biggest thing that had ever happened. Greenwood was incredibly furious, but didn’t know what to do.

“Since this has happened already, just let it go. Everyone go back to your homes.” Granny Witherwood said. Her words caused all of the Fairies, who were planning to beat up Ling Chen, to stare at her in shock.

“Let it go? How can we just let it go? Because of his selfishness, he contaminated the entire Fairy Fountain. This is unforgiveable! The Fairy Fountain is the foundation of our Fairy Clan!” Greenwood couldn’t stop himself from yelling out. Granny Witherwood was the only authority higher than him in the Fairy Clan, and even he would follow her orders. However, he was simply unable to understand why she would tell them to ‘let it go.’

Granny Witherwood looked up, her eyes calm and wise, “For his loved one, Ling Tian was willing to go against our entire Clan with his bit of strength. Although what he did was extreme, and nearly caused a catastrophe, but his spirit is admirable. Moreover, you don’t need to worry-the Fairy Fountain’s water has not been contaminated. Can’t you feel there’s something familiar about that girl’s aura?”

“The Fairy Fountain hasn’t been contaminated? Mother, do you mean...?” Greenwood was dumbfounded. They had all watched as Ling Chen put the human girl in the Fairy Fountain. However, because of their rage, they hadn’t paid attention to that girl’s aura.

Granny Witherwood didn't reply. Her hunched figure slightly straightened up, and she waved the walking stick in her hand. Immediately, a jade-green light shot down from the sky, covering all of the Fairies around the Fairy Fountain, as well as Ling Chen. After the light disappeared, they found that they had moved to the edge of the Fairy Fountain, and the cage of vines had disappeared.

The water in the Fairy Fountain was so still and transparent that it was almost as if it wasn't there. Everyone could clearly see every inch of the fountain. In the middle of the Fairy Fountain was a human girl, who looked as beautiful as a Fairy... she looked like she was sleeping extremely peacefully, but there was not a bit of life within her. Seeing her up close, all the Fairies suddenly felt a desire to protect her, as well as... a sense of pain within their hearts, like they were being stabbed by needles.

Around her body, there was a white glow of purity, which also contained a hint of light green.

“That... That’s...” Seeing the aura around her, Greenwood and the ten elders were completely flabbergasted. Even Ling Chen was shocked... What’s going on? Why is there light coming from Ruo Ruo’s body?

Chapter 367 - Destroying The Barrier (2)

“This feeling... could it be...”

All of the Fairies were staring at the girl in the Fairy Fountain. The light around her body was very similar to the Nature’s light on their own bodies, but it was somewhat different. However, what they felt from this light was true Fairy energy. What’s more, it seemed to be even purer than theirs. Although this aura was quite weak, but its purity and warmness resonated with their own.

The Fairies all valued peace, and sought the purest of energy. Their Fairy energy was the purest in the entire world. However, they couldn’t understand how their energy had appeared on a human, as well as how it could possibly be even purer than theirs. Moreover, the aura the girl radiated even contained a bit of holiness.

“It seems that most of you have realised.” Granny Witherwood’s voice broke the silence. She looked at the girl in the Fairy Fountain, her ancient eyes filled with reminiscence, “That is our Fairy energy. In fact, it’s the holiest type of Fairy energy that disappeared a long time ago. This sort of Fairy energy barely contains any attack power-such that it is unable to even use the Fairy arrows or control plants. Instead, every bit of the energy is used to help and protect other people. In our clan, this is the holiest, purest and most selfless form of Fairy energy.”

“But didn’t the Holy Fairy energy disappear in the ancient times... moreover, this girl is evidently a human. How can a human possess our Fairy energy?” Greenwood asked in shock.

Every other Fairy had these questions in their minds as well.

“Disappear? Indeed, it did disappear. If it wasn't for this girl, I also would have believed that the holiest Fairy energy had been lost forever. However, it seems that the Blue Sky Queen found some way to pass on her power and energy.”

Upon mentioning the name “Blue Sky Queen”, Granny Witherwood slightly stood up straighter, as a form of respect towards her, “Back then, our ancestors lost faith in humanity, and declared that all Fairies would return to the Fairy Realm forever. Our ancestors couldn't stand the dirtiness of the outside world, as well as the betrayals, lies and greed of humans. Almost all of our ancestors agreed, but there were a few who opposed this. At that time, the Fairy Clan had three Fairy Kings and Queens. The one who was in strongest opposition to this decision was the only Fairy Queen, the warm-hearted and respected Blue Sky Queen. She was the only Fairy with the Holy Fairy energy. However, the overwhelming majority of Fairies were in support of the decision. Many of them believed that if they continued to stay in the outside world, their energy would start to become impure, and they would no longer be Fairies. Moreover, with how greedy the humans were, it was difficult to say when they would try to take over the Fairy Clan.

“In the end, our ancestors all returned to the Fairy Realm, and created the Bewildering Formation, as well as sealed off the Fairy Realm. There was only one Fairy who did not return to the Fairy Realm... and that was the Blue Sky Queen. The normally mild and warm Blue Sky Queen became incredibly obstinate, and left the Fairy Clan. At that time, our ancestors didn't understand why she would be so stubborn... but looking back, Blue Sky Queen was the

truly wise one. Our ancestors made that decision in the best interests of our clan, but after thousands of years, we've fallen into a hopeless cycle of decline."

The Fairies all listened silently. They knew what Granny Witherwood said was true-the Fairy Clan was indeed in a hopeless cycle of decline. Although the Nature energy here was abundant, and they had no enemies or wars... there were only 2,000 Fairies left.

This was a chilling number. Furthermore, this number would gradually decrease more and more over time... it was entirely possible for the Fairy Clan to one day disappear from the Forgotten Continent.

"Could it be that the Holy Fairy energy on that girl is from the Blue Sky Queen?" Greenwood asked. After all, Granny Witherwood had just said that the Blue Sky Queen was the only one who possessed the Holy Fairy energy.

"Indeed, there's no other explanation." Granny Witherwood said as she continued to talk, "I'm sure the Blue Sky Queen didn't want her Holy Fairy energy to disappear. However, at that time, she was in the outside world by herself, so she couldn't find a Fairy to pass it on to. She must have used some sort of secret method to pass her power on to humans, so that humans could pass it down to their descendants. The human who inherits her power will have their body purified, and will become as pure as us Fairies. This is evidenced by the light and aura from that girl's body. Although she is a human, she inherited the Holy Fairy energy, so not only is she free of impurity, but her purity exceeds even ours. She won't

contaminate the Fairy Fountain at all.”

Ling Chen silently listened as his questions were answered.

Shui Ruo's profession was the Fairy Priest, and was obtained by him for her from the Hall of Heroic Spirits. This profession didn't have any attack skills, but its healing and support skills were far superior to those of normal Priests'. Although Shui Ruo could only use the basic skills of this profession back then, she became a key player in their group. When training together, she was the support for all of the other girls.

It seemed that the Fairy Priest profession really did come from the Fairy Queen “Blue Sky Queen”. She most likely put her power into a scroll before she died, so that it could find a suitable successor. Eventually, it ended up at the Hall of Heroic Spirits, and was obtained by Ling Chen for Shui Ruo, thus allowing the Holy Fairy energy to come into the world again. No wonder the description contained “If a person with this profession enters the Fairy Clan they will have the goodwill and trust of the Fairies”.

Back when Ling Chen had obtained the Hidden Profession Scroll, he didn't know any of this. At this moment, in his heart, he sighed in relief. He had never thought that this profession would become so important. Now, the fury from the Fairies would be reduced by at least half, and it would be much easier to take care of the rest.

“The Holy Fairy energy has reappeared, and come back to the Fairy Realm. Although it's on the body of a dead girl, but it still came back. Perhaps this is the Heavens' will.” Granny Witherwood said, “That energy belonged to the Blue Sky Queen, so perhaps it

contains a bit of her spirit. By letting the girl sleep in the Fairy Fountain, this last bit of Holy Fairy energy will not be lost.”

Hearing that the Fairy Fountain had not been contaminated, the Fairies all let out a breath of relief. The fury and fear in their hearts also quickly disappeared. Greenwood thought for a moment, before looking at Ling Chen and frowning, “So it’s like that. However, that girl is a human. Many ancestors were not qualified to be placed into the Fairy Fountain, despite all of their contributions to the clan. To give this glory to a human girl who is unrelated to us, this is sacrilegious to all of our ancestors. Although she inherited the power of the Blue Sky Queen, in the end, she’s not the Blue Sky Queen herself. This reason... is not sufficient.”

Granny Witherwood fell silent. What Greenwood said was the truth. Only Fairies who had made significant contributions to the Fairy Clan had the right to be placed into the Fairy Fountain upon their death. After all these years, there were only six Fairies who had earned this glory. If they let this human girl stay in the Fairy Fountain... practically every Fairy would have this right. This sort of precedent couldn’t be allowed, otherwise all order in the Fairy Clan would be disrupted.

“You want a reason? Alright, I’ll give you a reason.” Ling Chen coldly said.

Immediately, all eyes fell on Ling Chen. Greenwood looked over and said, “You? Alright, what sort of reason can you provide?”

“I’ll destroy the Fairy Clan’s barrier, allowing your Fairy Clan to rejoin the outside world. Is that reason sufficient?” Ling Chen

calmly said. His words were uttered in a steady voice, but they resounded like thunder in all the Fairies' ears.

Whoosh...

The Fairies all fell completely silent, and every Fairy had a look of disbelief on their faces.

“Destroy the Fairy Clan’s barrier, allowing your Fairy Clan to rejoin the outside world”. Ling Chen had said this so casually, but how could it be so simple? If this barrier was really gone, the Fairy Clan would be able to escape their impending doom... it would be equivalent to saving the entire Fairy Clan! Equivalent to saving all of these Fairies, as well as their descendants!

This was something that they had dreamed and longed for, but knew was impossible.

Greenwood’s body trembled, and his eyes widened. Even the extremely calm Granny Witherwood couldn’t help but gasp. However, immediately, Greenwood’s expression returned to normal. He looked at Ling Chen deeply as he said in a low voice, “If you can really destroy the barrier, then let alone allowing the human girl reside in the Fairy Fountain, we’ll even give you another ten requests. However...” Greenwood stretched out his right hand and pointed to the sky, “You should know what sort of barrier this is! Back then, our ancestors asked the magnificent Moon Goddess “Order” to create it, and it was reinforced by more than 300 of our ancestors. It is incredibly tough, and even the Moon Goddesses wouldn’t be able to destroy it. In the past, countless ancestors tried to destroy it, but failed. Even with the

combined efforts of 10,000 Fairies, it would be impossible to even create a hole. Our Fairy Clan does not specialise in attacking and destroying, but I am able to destroy mountains with my power. However, even my power is vastly insufficient to even scratch the barrier. You, a weak human, saying such words is simply delirious ramblings.”

Chapter 368 - Destroying The Barrier (3)

Indeed, over the years, many Fairies had combined their power in an effort to destroy the barrier, but had all failed. How could a mere human destroy it? The crowd of Fairies had murmured in excitement when Ling Chen first claimed to do so, but the excitement quickly died down... the Fairy Clan had tried to do this generation after generation, and had long since given up. It was simply impossible for a human to succeed. To the Fairies, the only words that could describe what Ling Chen had just said were “laughable” and “arrogant”. No one believed that it was possible, especially Greenwood.

Ling Chen didn't care at all about their reactions. He calmly replied, “In that case, if I can really destroy the barrier, will you allow my little sister to rest in the Fairy Fountain without anyone disturbing her?”

“Ha,” Greenwood's lips curved to form a smile that didn't quite look like a smile. His eyes shone with the phrase “you're too naïve” as he replied in a serious tone, “This barrier has sealed my Fairy Clan for thousands of years. At first, it was simply a protective barrier, but now, it has become a nightmare. All these years, as our Fairy Clan's numbers dwindled, we felt more and more danger from it. In order to protect the younger Fairies, we tell them that this is a protective barrier that separates us from the dirty outside world. That way, their desire to go outside is also reduced. After they've matured, every Fairy wishes that this barrier would disappear. If there is someone who can destroy this barrier, they will be the saviour and benefactor of my entire clan. Let alone sleep in the Fairy Fountain, if that person is pure-hearted and kind, we can even gift the Fairy Fountain to him or her.

As Greenwood spoke, a look of desire and longing appeared on every Fairy's face. The Fairies that were present were all the most powerful Fairies of the clan, and were all clear about the peril that the Fairy Clan faced. However, despite knowing this, there was nothing that they could do. They could only look at the barrier every day and sigh.

“Alright,” Ling Chen slowly nodded, “If I really can do it, I only request that you allow my little sister to stay in the Fairy Fountain, and no one is allowed to disturb her... Fairy Chief Greenwood, Granny Witherwood... I know you definitely don't believe me, but please come with me.”

After speaking, Ling Chen walked towards his right. That was the direction in which the closest part of the barrier was.

Ling Chen's confidence surprised Greenwood and Granny Witherwood, and complex emotions flashed within their eyes. They were unable to believe that a human could destroy the barrier that countless generations of Fairies hadn't been able to destroy. However, seeing Ling Chen's back, they could feel their hearts racing.

“Let's have a look. Even if there isn't much hope, we have nothing to lose by letting him try. After all, there's only one outcome waiting for us if this continues... before we come back, no one is allowed to touch that girl.”

After speaking in her ancient voice, Granny Witherwood

followed behind Ling Chen. Greenwood frowned, and also ordered, “Alright, go and do what you will. Without my permission, no one is to do anything to the girl in the Fairy Fountain. Afterwards, we’ll try to reach an agreement with him.”

After speaking, his body flashed, and appeared next to Ling Chen.

30 minutes later.

After passing through a large garden of flowers as well as an empty piece of land, Ling Chen saw distortions in the air in front of him. He slowed down, stretched out his hand and felt an invisible wall.

They had finally reached the barrier.

Greenwood and Granny Witherwood stopped behind Ling Chen. This entire time, neither they nor Ling Chen had spoken a single word. In front of them was the transparent barrier that had sealed the Fairy Clan for thousands of years. Greenwood and Granny Witherwood were both incredibly familiar with this barrier. Granny Witherwood tapped the ground with her walking stick as she asked, “Young man, how are you going to destroy the barrier? At least, with your current strength, it’s impossible for you to damage the barrier.”

Ling Chen took a few steps back, and asked, “Fairy Chief Greenwood, in the past, when you Fairies tried to destroy the barrier, you used your Fairy energy, right?”

“That’s right.” Greenwood nodded, feeling that Ling Chen had asked a stupid question. Without using their Fairy energy, could they have tried to blow it away with their mouths?

Ling Chen thought for a few moments before asking, “Fairy Chief Greenwood, can you please use your Fairy energy to attack this barrier?”

“Of course, but don’t feel disappointed.” Greenwood didn’t refuse. He calmly swept his gaze over Ling Chen as a white glow flashed on his body, and a thick white-coloured elemental arrow soundlessly appeared in front of him. The Fairy Clan did not specialise in attacking, and using Fairy arrows was their main form of attacking. All Fairy arrows contained a bit of the Holy element, which was effective against Demonic creatures. With Greenwood’s strength, casting elemental arrows didn’t require the use of a bow. This simple elemental arrow contained enough power to pierce through a mountain.

Whoosh!!!

The elemental arrow was shot out, and was surrounded by an extremely berserk airflow, pushing Ling Chen back by many metres. The elemental arrow smashed into the transparent barrier, and fragmented into motes of starlight like a fragile ice shard.

The space in front of them was exactly the same-that attack had no effect at all.

Greenwood turned and looked at Ling Chen, who had been pushed away by the elemental arrow, as he said flatly, “My attacks are useless.”

Ling Chen could tell what Greenwood was subtly saying... My attacks are useless, so you trying will be pointless.

The airflow from Greenwood’s attack made it evident that the attack was incredibly powerful. However, just like Greenwood said, it was useless.

Ling Chen ignored Greenwood’s words. He walked up to the barrier, and stretched out his hand, confirming where it was. His hands flashed with light as the Zephyr Blade and the Great Ravager appeared in his hands. He raised up both weapons as he said, “Let me try this time.”

“As you wish.” Greenwood expressionlessly replied. He looked forwards, away from where Ling Chen was, as if he didn’t even bother to watch. Granny Witherwood sighed. She could clearly see Ling Chen’s strength. If Ling Chen’s plan to destroy the barrier was relying on himself... there would be no hope at all.

“Ling... Tian... Slash!”

Ling Chen stared in front of him, with the Zephyr Blade in his left hand and the Great Ravager in his right. Two Ling Tian Slashes viciously smashed towards the invisible shield. Both Greenwood and Granny Witherwood looked over, their eyes filled with shock. They were surprised that a LV20 human could release

such a powerful attack... as well as that his left and right hands were equipped with completely different weapons!

Bang!!

The Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager heavily crashed onto the barrier. However, the attacks didn't dissipate like Greenwood's elemental arrow; what resulted was a massive colliding sound. This sound caused Greenwood and Granny Witherwood to suddenly turn around, and their pupils contracted. Two red damage figures floated up from the area where the two weapons had hit the barrier... -4228, -4190 !

“This... This...” Greenwood, who had carried no hopes in Ling Chen being able to damage the barrier at all, gaped with his mouth wide open. Shock and dismay were written all over his face. His eyes trembled, and he was unable to believe what he saw. Even Granny Witherwood couldn't contain the emotions in her voice, “What... what is going on?! Even my attacks are unable to damage this barrier, and your attack power is far below mine... so how did you damage the barrier?!”

Before, when Greenwood had attacked, there had not even been a damage figure.

Seeing the disappearing damage figures, Ling Chen smirked. It was just as he had thought. This barrier was incredibly tough, and even the powerful Greenwood was unable to damage it in the slightest. However, with the Lunar Scourge and its orbs, Ling Chen had a massive advantage. With the Cancer Orb, all of Ling Chen's attacks ignored all Defence, which included even “Absolute

Defence”. Although this barrier had incredibly high Defence, such that it could ignore even Greenwood’s attack, but it was completely disregarded by the Cancer Orb.

“Even so, it’s useless,” Granny Witherwood came back her senses as she slowly shook her head, “Over thousands of years, my clan has had many powerful Fairies who were able to damage the barrier. Our Fairy Clan’s strongest weapon is also able to deal massive damage to it. However, this barrier is not only tough, but has incredibly strong regeneration abilities. Unless you can destroy it in one blow, it will instantly repair itself. Although your attacks can damage the barrier, but it’s still too far away from being able to destroy it instantaneously. Even if you stand here and attack it for hundreds, or even thousands, of years, you won’t be able to achieve anything.”

If the barrier could be destroyed so easily, it wouldn’t have been able to seal the powerful Fairy Clan for such a long time. Although Ling Chen had the Lunar Scourge, he didn’t naively believe that he would be able to destroy the barrier so easily. He yelled out as a red light, as well as ripples, began to emanate from his body.

“Soul Sacrifice!”

The fully levelled Soul Sacrifice raised his Attack Power by 400%. The shocking aura that he was releasing caused Greenwood and Granny Witherwood to feel slightly suffocated, which was simply unbelievable. How could this sort of aura appear on a LV20 human?!

“Four Corners Star Formation!”

“Thousand Kilogram Rend!”

“Hah!!!”

Ling Chen roared as he unleashed his two most destructive abilities, mercilessly smashing them towards the space in front of him... a deafening explosion sounded out, causing Greenwood and Granny Witherwood’s ears to ring as they saw two gigantic damage figures... -78,312, -43,143 !

A yellow damage figure and a red damage figure appeared in front of Ling Chen. The space in front of him trembled, and a crack that was as long as a finger appeared in front of him. However, it instantly disappeared.

Ling Chen’s strongest attacks in his strongest state were only able to slightly damage the barrier. Moreover, the damage lasted only for a split-second.

Greenwood and Granny Witherwood also saw the crack, and the shock in their hearts greatly surpassed that of Ling Chen’s. Even for Greenwood, creating a small crack like that would be incredibly difficult, and yet that human had accomplished it so easily.

However, the barrier was simply too powerful. Although that small crack was enough to make them feel shocked, it was completely inconsequential.

“Young human, you’ve caused this old granny to doubt her own eyes. With that sort of power, I believe that in the outside world, there isn’t any barrier that can stop you. No wonder you had the confidence to destroy this barrier. However... Ai, this barrier was created by a Moon Goddess, as well as our clan’s most powerful ancestors. Its toughness is comparable to that of the ‘World Boundaries’ that surround each Continent. To be able to achieve this much, you’ve done quite well. However, even if that attack was ten times stronger, you still wouldn’t be able to destroy it.” Granny Witherwood sighed as she shook her head.

Ling Chen didn’t reply. His left hand flashed with light as he recalled the Zephyr Blade. He gripped the Great Ravager with both hands as he lifted it high into the air.

“Battle Soul Possession!”

The red glow around his body was now mixed with a chaotic white light, causing Ling Chen’s aura surge to be doubled. Those two strikes just then were simply Ling Chen running some tests-he didn’t have any hopes for them to succeed. In order to destroy this barrier so that Shui Ruo could sleep peacefully in the Fairy Fountain... he took out his ace.

“Shura’s... Death... Domain!!!”

Chapter 369 - Shura's Death Domain

“Shura's... Death... Domain!!!”

Ling Chen roared out the three words. In order to destroy the barrier around the Fairy Realm, he used the most powerful skill he had. His goal was very simple, but even he didn't know what would happen after he yelled out “Shura's Death Domain”.

The moment Shura's Death Domain activated, Ling Chen's mind rumbled, and his vision changed. The world in front of him instantly became crimson red, as if everything had been stained by blood. A terrifying and overwhelming murderous aura had burst out from within, flooding his body and mind. He felt as if he'd been possessed by a demon, and the killing intent released shocked even himself. This aura surged and began to eat away at his mental energy, trying to destroy his mind.

This feeling surprised Ling Chen, but with his abnormally strong mental energy, it still would have been incredibly difficult for him to lose his sense of reason. He lifted up the Great Ravager, allowing the ocean of energy to fill his body, and sent every bit of his strength into his downwards swing.

“Break!!!”

“Wuaaaaaah!!!”

Blood-red light burst out from within Ling Chen's body, making it look as if his entire body was bathed in a pool of blood. The Great

Ravager was also dyed by the light, making it look pure red. A terrifying wave of energy swept around Ling Chen's surroundings, and the originally clear sky instantly became dark as boundless black clouds covered the sky.

Both Greenwood and Granny Witherwood gaped in fear and shock, and Granny Witherwood's walking stick clattered to the ground. She didn't hesitate as she grabbed Greenwood and yelled, "Hurry and leave!"

Their bodies flashed, and they teleported hundreds of metres away. And yet, that monstrous pressure still covered their bodies, causing them to tremble. This was true terror. It was the first time they had felt such terror in their lives. What was shocking was that the one who had caused this, was the human who they thought to be insignificant. Blood-coloured energy swirled around Ling Chen, and the pressure it released caused them to tremble uncontrollably...

"What... What sort of power is this!!" Greenwood stuttered. Was this really a LV20 player?! Was this really the same human who they had forced into the Lunar Sky Hell? How could this aura, enough to freeze his blood, come from a mere human?!

"This is an extremely cruel and merciless energy, but it's not the same as the evil energy from Demon Clans. This sort of energy exists solely to destroy and massacre. I even smelled the scent of death just then. This human, who... who..." Without her walking stick, Granny Witherwood stood with her back hunched, shivering uncontrollably. It was the first time she had felt such fear in her life.

The Great Ravager was surrounded by a crimson red glow that was five metres long, and it smashed into the barrier.

BOOOOM-----

-31,325,000!!

The instant the Great Ravager collided with the barrier, the incredibly tough barrier that had sealed the Fairy Clan for thousands of years was blown open like a sheet of thin ice. A three-metre-high hole appeared in front of Ling Chen.

Rumble...

The ground of the entire Fairy Realm shook, and the air trembled. Countless Fairies cried out in shock as they saw innumerable long cracks appearing in the sky above them. The cracks grew longer and spread out at a blinding speed, and soon they covered the entire sky. Following that, was the sound of glass shattering.

Like a popped balloon, the barrier that surrounded the Fairy Realm was destroyed in seconds, and completely disappeared.

“The barrier!! The barrier has been destroyed! We can go out!!”

When the ground stopped shaking, the Fairies all started to cry

out in joy. More and more voices joined the cheering, and soon, the ordinarily quiet Fairy Realm was filled with cheers of excitement and jubilation.

“It’s broken... it’s really broken!!”

A gigantic hole had opened up in the barrier, and the cracks had spread all over the barrier, causing it to shatter. Greenwood’s jaw dropped to the ground, unable to be closed, and he stared at Ling Chen fixedly. It was his greatest wish that the barrier would be broken. Now that it had been destroyed, he should be uncontrollably shouting and yelling for joy... but the shock and terror in his heart completely covered all the joy that he felt.

At that moment, to them, Ling Chen was no longer a “human” or a “player, but a “monster”.

A monster who had been able to destroy the barrier that the Fairy Clan had been trying to destroy for thousands of years!

“This is... a miracle.” Granny Witherwood whispered.

After the barrier had been destroyed, the blood-red light still swirled around Ling Chen. Only now did it start to grow fainter and fainter until it disappeared.

The Great Ravager in Ling Chen’s hands vanished. Ling Chen did not turn around, but fell to his knees on the ground, with one hand on his head and the other clawing the ground.

Fury, bloodlust and brutality... all sorts of negative emotions and thoughts chaotically swirled around within his mind, developing the greatest killing intent Ling Chen had ever felt in his entire life. Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he did his best to suppress those feelings, his body covered in cold sweat. If he could see his eyes, he would find that they had become a dark crimson colour.

“Little master, control your emotions. Don’t let those negative emotions and thoughts affect you. The Shura’s ultimate moves all require killing intent to fuel them. The Shura’s killing intent is boundless, but little master is not a Shura. After forcefully using that skill, a lot of the remnant negative emotions and killing intent is still within you. If you can’t contain it, you’ll become an out-of-control killing machine!” Qi Yue quickly said in his mind. In reality, she was not too worried. After all, Ling Chen’s mental energy was simply too powerful. Even the Lunar Scourge couldn’t destroy his mind, much less these negative emotions and thoughts.

Sure enough, not too long after, Ling Chen’s body stopped trembling. He looked up, and his eyes had recovered their original look and colour. He deeply breathed in and out, then stood up. He looked at his hands, trying to calm down his heart.

This was the power... of a Shura.

With his power at LV20, using one of the Shura’s ultimate skills was able to release such damage... how powerful would a true Shura be?

“Ding... you forcefully activated the limited use skill ‘Shura’s Death Domain’, your level will be decreased by 9 levels, Strength-30, Constitution-30, Agility-30, Spirit-30.”

“Ding... your level has been decreased to LV11. The bonus stats from Wind Chaser Bandanna, Purple Crystal Armour (Lower), Ghost Cloak, Four Spirit Ring have been invalidated. Your Strength is lower than 200, so you cannot equip the Great Ravager. Your pet Xiao Hui’s level has decreased to LV11, with no changes to the level of its skills. Your pet Leng’Er’s level has decreased to LV11, with no changes to the levels of its skills.”

“Ding... Shura’s Death Domain remaining uses: 1”

Using an incredibly overpowered and broken skill like Shura’s Death Domain had incredibly harsh repercussions. Ling Chen’s level had fallen by nine levels, and wasn’t able to equip his strongest weapon anymore. Furthermore, although he still had on his equipment, he could not receive the benefits from the bonus stats from the four strongest ones. If he removed them, he wouldn’t even be able to equip them again. He had suffered a loss of 120 points of stats in total. If it wasn’t for Ling Chen’s professions, “Ling Tian Battle Soul” and “Feng Chen Curse Zanni”, which gave him many stat points, some of his stats would have fallen into the negatives.

However, this was worth it.

In front of him, there were no more distortions in the air. The barrier was gone. After hearing those announcements, Ling Chen didn’t look crestfallen at all, but rather, smiled. Levels could be

gained back and stats could be earned back. In order to protect Shui Ruo's safety and her last bit of hope, as well as repay the Fairy Clan, this wasn't much of a loss for him.

After completely calming down, Ling Chen took a deep breath, then turned and walked to Greenwood and Granny Witherwood, saying, "The barrier has been destroyed. My only request is that you allow my little sister to safely stay within the Fairy Fountain until I come to wake her up again."

No matter if it was Greenwood or Granny Witherwood, they looked at Ling Chen in a completely new light. That overwhelming, horrifying pressure that felt like it would devour their souls... was like the aura of Demon Gods only heard of in legends.

"That girl... we will guarantee that no one disturbs her..." Greenwood said with difficulty, as his throat was completely dry. In his ears, the joyful shouts grew louder and louder, but he still couldn't believe what had happened... a LV20 human had destroyed the barrier that had sealed the Fairy Clan for thousands of years.

Granny Witherwood recovered much faster than Greenwood. She stepped forwards as she sincerely said, "Young human, you've created a miracle. This miracle has saved our entire Fairy Clan."

"I only did it for my little sister. Moreover, I didn't want to owe you anything. I never feel at ease owing people." Ling Chen replied in a casual tone.

“Regardless, you are our Fairy Clan’s saviour and great benefactor. By destroying this barrier, you have saved our entire clan, as well as our descendants. This cannot be repaid simply by allowing your little sister to rest in the Fairy Fountain. Our Fairy Clan does not like to owe other people either; we will remember what you have done forever. We definitely will not allow anyone to disturb your little sister. Moreover, you can request anything of us. As long as it is within our power and conforms with our morals, we will do our best to fulfil it.” Granny Witherwood earnestly said.

Chapter 370 - Fairy Fountain Water

Seeing that the barrier was gone, the entire Fairy Clan was in full celebration. Today was the most lively day in the history of the Fairy Realm. What the lack of the barrier meant for the Fairy Clan wasn't just that they could freely go into the outside world; it meant that their race was no longer doomed.

After finding out that it was Ling Chen who destroyed the barrier, the animosity that the Fairies held towards Ling Chen instantly disappeared, and was replaced with gratefulness and respect... as well as fervour. Countless Fairy ancestors had tried and failed to destroy this barrier, but it had actually been destroyed by this human. This human, who they had looked down on, became like a god within every Fairy's heart. Very soon, Ling Chen was even described to be an ambassador sent from the heavens.

As for the matter of allowing Ling Chen's little sister to rest in the Fairy Fountain, there were no Fairies in objection anymore.

Greenwood's joy was also evident, and he profusely thanked Ling Chen. However, he simply couldn't get rid of the shock in his heart... he had personally witnessed Ling Chen destroy the barrier. Greenwood could almost still feel that Demon-God-like pressure bearing down on him, and he would shiver whenever he thought about it.

Although the barrier was gone, none of the Fairies left the Fairy Realm. The Fairies had disappeared from the Forgotten Continent for thousands of years, and now faced the issue of how to interact

with the outside world. Before making sufficient preparations, they wouldn't leave the Fairy Realm. It seemed that this would take a long time.

After staying in the Fairy Realm for half a day, Ling Chen came to the Fairy Fountain and looked at Shui Ruo for a long time, before turning around and saying, "Granny Witherwood, Fairy Chief Greenwood and everyone, I should be going. I leave my little sister to you."

"Don't worry. We won't allow anything to happen to her." Granny Witherwood replied. There was not a single Fairy who was against this matter anymore.

"Are you sure you don't want to stay for a few days? We haven't even properly thanked you yet." Greenwood said.

"No need," Ling Chen shook his head, "Helping me look after Shui Ruo is enough. There's no need for anything else."

Ling Chen walked in front of Ying Xue, and took out her First Wings as he apologetically said, "Ying Xue, these are your First Wings. Back then, I didn't take them on purpose-I didn't know that it would be so important to you Fairies. I'm so sorry about what happened. However, I'm a human, not a Fairy, so I don't follow your Fairy traditions-I'll return your First Wings to you now."

Ying Xue didn't stretch out her hands to receive them. She only stared at him as her chest ached with pain. Greenwood and Granny

Witherwood sighed inwardly, but didn't say anything. Indeed, it was wrong to force Fairy traditions on a human, and they couldn't force their great benefactor to bend to their will. It was just that this outcome was not very ideal for Ying Xue.

“I refuse. No matter what, when a Fairy loses their First Wings, they don't have the right to take them back. If you feel like they're a burden to you, feel free to throw them away.”

Ying Xue's beautiful face flashed with anger, and her voice was incredibly cold. After speaking, she turned around and disappeared in a white flash.

Ling Chen held Ying Xue's First Wings in his hands, his face full of awkwardness. Seeing the expressions of the Fairies around him, he could only silently put them away. He once again said his goodbyes, and walked towards the direction he had entered from.

After placing Shui Ruo in the Fairy Fountain, Ling Chen did not have anything else to worry about. His mission was now to gather all of the Lunar Scourge's orbs. Before gathering all of the ingredients required, he most likely would not be coming back here. He didn't know when he would back, and didn't even know where to start searching. However, what he did know was that no matter how arduous and difficult this journey was, he would see it to the end.

When Ling Chen left, all of the Fairies in the Fairy Realm came to see him off in order to show their gratitude. After walking for a long time, Ling Chen finally came to the place where he had arrived after being transported by the Bewildering Formation. The

barrier that had blocked it off was now gone, and if he continued to walk forwards, the Bewildering Formation would send him outside.

“Big brother... Big brother, please wait!!”

An urgent shout sounded out from behind him. Ling Chen stopped walking, and turned around. The little Cai’Er furiously flapped her wings as she rushed towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen smiled and said, “Is Cai’Er unwilling to see me leave?”

Cai’Er flew as fast as she could, and finally reached Ling Chen. After huffing and puffing, she stretched out her hand towards Ling Chen. In the middle of her hand was a small bottle, as big as one’s pinky finger, “Big brother, granny told me to give this to you. Granny said that it will help you a lot.”

A bottle? Could it be medicine? Ling Chen took the bottle and shook it. Indeed, it was some sort of liquid.

[Fairy Fountain Water]: Water that comes from the Fairy Realm’s Fairy Fountain. It contains the purest Nature energy in the world. After drinking, HP+1000 permanently, MP+1000 permanently. Strength+10, Constitution+10, Agility+10 and Spirit+10 permanently. The effects can only take place once.

Clatter... the little bottle fell to the ground.

Hallucinating... Ling Chen was sure that he was hallucinating!!

Ling Chen picked up the bottle with a “whoosh”, and he read the description again and again... no, the effects weren’t just temporary-they would permanently add 1000 HP, 1000 MP, and 40 points of stats! Permanently!

After his stats had all been decreased by 30, Ling Chen’s current HP and MP were only around 700. This tiny bottle of water from the Fairy Fountain could actually more than double them! Moreover, it also gave him a total of 40 stat points.

“Ah? Big brother, are you alright? You don’t like it? Water from the Fairy Fountain tastes really good. It’s very cool and refreshing.” Cai’Er said as she tilted her head.

“No, no, I really like it.” Ling Chen gripped the tiny bottle in his hand. Inwardly, he finally realised why the Fairy Clan viewed the Fairy Fountain so importantly-it was simply incredible. This little bottle of water was the most powerful item Ling Chen had seen in Mystic Moon. He looked up at Cai’Er and asked, “Cai’Er, can you ask your granny if she can give me a few more bottles of this water? I want to bring some back for your big sisters.”

“Oh, I’ll go and ask granny. Wait here for me, big brother.” Cai’Er nodded as she obediently flew back.

After a while, Cai’Er again flew over like a little butterfly. In her arms were ten little bottles. When she had given them all to Ling Chen, Ling Chen couldn’t help but beam like a child.

“Granny told me to give these to big brother. She told me to tell you that it takes a long time for the Fairy Fountain to produce a drop of water, so we can’t take too much at once. If we take too much, it will affect the Nature energy in the Fairy Realm, so we can’t take anymore for now.”

“It’s enough, it’s enough. Remember to thank your granny for me.” Ling Chen carefully put away the 11 bottles of Fairy Fountain Water as he screamed inwardly, “I’m rich!”. Any player who used this game-breaking item would be able to have a massive advantage over all other players.

“That’s right, there’s also this.” Cai’Er opened her hand. It was a pair of jade-green earrings that were as big as a fingernail, “Big sister told me to give these to you. She said that if you don’t want them, you can throw them away, but she won’t take them back.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Earrings... Out of all the jewellery equipment, he already had a ring and a necklace. The only thing he was missing were earrings. Could it be that Ying Xue had noticed that he didn’t have a pair?

Ling Chen picked up the jade-green earrings from Cai’Er’s little hand, his heart full of complicated emotions, which he quickly suppressed. He looked at the description and stats of the earrings.

[Fairy’s Blessing]: Type: Earring, Grade: Gold, Equipment

Requirements: Luck must be greater than 5. An earring that contains the blessing of a Fairy. After equipping, recovery+30% when using recovery items or benefitting from recovery skills.

This earrings' effects were incredibly useful. An additional 30% recovery would often mean the difference between life and death. Ling Chen thought for a few moments before putting the earrings on. He said to Cai'Er, "Cai'Er, please thank your big sister for me, and tell her that I really like the earrings, and have already put them on."

Gold grade earrings were worth far more than other Gold grade equipment, due to their rarity. This gift was much too precious, and Ling Chen simply couldn't think of what to give Ying Xue in exchange. He looked through his bag, and found that the thing that he carried the most of... were dolls.

As such... "Also, please give this doll to your big sister for me... oh, and here's the one for Cai'Er. The big one's for your sister, and the smaller one's for Cai'Er." Ling Chen took out a big doll and a small doll, and gave them to Cai'Er.

"Wow! These toys are so cute! They're even prettier than the ones big sister bought last time." Cai'Er happily yelled as she hugged the two dolls, her body flying around in circles. Her eyes shone with joy as she said, "I'm sure big sister will like these pretty dolls. After I came back last time with those toys, everyone was really jealous of me. Big sister really liked them too, and would always try to play with them. She'll be really, really happy to receive this from you!"

Eh? That cold Fairy liked dolls as well? It seemed that it was the right decision for him to carry around a mountain of dolls with him.

“Big brother, are you going now?” After calming down from her excitement, Cai’Er looked at Ling Chen with disappointment in her eyes.

“Mhmm,” Ling Chen nodded.

“Then, when will you be back?”

“... I’m not sure.” Ling Chen could only give this answer. He would only be back when he had gathered all of the necessary ingredients to revive Shui Ruo. He had no idea when that day would be.

“Then... Then...” Cai’Er eyes shone as a look desire, as well as hesitation, appeared on her face. It seemed that there was some internal conflict going on within her. After a while, she finally said, “Big brother, can you secretly bring me with you? The barrier’s gone, but dad won’t let me go out. I really want to go and play outside; I think about it every day.”

“No, I can’t do that,” Ling Chen said as he gently patted her head, “Alright, go back now. Make sure you listen to the adults-if you ran off by yourself, everyone would be very worried about you... I’m going now.”

Without giving Cai'Er an opportunity to respond, Ling Chen waved, and walked forwards into the Bewildering Formation, then disappeared.

“Big brother... wuu...” Seeing that Ling Chen was gone, Cai'Er started to cry. In front of her was the exit of the Fairy Realm. She really wanted to go, but she was afraid that she would get lost, or run into something scary. Moreover, there was also her dad's orders... She stayed there for a long time, gazing out, then turned around and flew back.

Chapter 371 - Levelling Begins!

After Exiting the Fairy Realm, Ling Chen appeared at the place where he had originally entered the Bewildering Formation. He had left the Fairy Clan, as well as Shui Ruo.

Ling Chen walked forwards for a few steps, then stopped. He looked forwards, but didn't know where to go. Out of the four ingredients, the Demon Emperor's Soul and Moon Goddesses' Blood were the things that were currently impossible for him to obtain. Every single one of the ten ancient beasts were Mysterious God grade, and even a fart from them would be enough to kill him tens of times. The Moon Goddesses were even more out of the question-even Moon God Representatives would see him as an ant, let alone the three Moon Goddesses Fate, Freedom and Order. Moon God Representatives were 'gods' that oversaw a Continent, and even the Emperor would have to prostrate himself before them. As for the Shura's tear... at least Ling Chen had a goal for the Moon Goddesses' Blood and Demon Emperor's Soul. However, he didn't even know where to start looking for a Shura's tear.

Right now, the only thing he could do was do his best to look for the Lunar Scourge's orbs. The more orbs he found, the more powerful he would become. Only then would he be qualified to seek the Demon Emperor's Soul and Moon Goddesses' Blood. With the sheer size of the Forgotten Continent, running around without specific places to search meant that it could take him an eternity. Moreover, according to Qi Yue, the orbs were all in extremely secret or dangerous places, or were in the possession of powerful creatures. They would all be incredibly difficult to obtain.

The Gemini Orb was given to him by Tao Tie, the Sagittarius Orb

was found by Xiao Hui in the War God's Trial Ground, the Cancer Orb was given to him by the Shura's Spirit, and the Pisces Orb had been gifted to him by Xiao Feng Chen. Out of these four Orbs, the first and fourth were gifted to him, and the other two had been found by sheer luck. After all, he had coincidentally obtained these orbs, and had not gone out of his way to search for them. All of the orbs had appeared to him by themselves; he had never expected to find them where he did.

Now, he didn't even know where to start looking for the remaining orbs. However, he wasn't worried about how he would find them-after all, he had Xiao Hui. Whenever they passed by a place, if there was any treasure, Xiao Hui would be sure to find it.

“Little master, you should first raise your level back up. You've become far too weak, and don't have the power to search for the Mysterious God grade Orbs. I recommend that little master does nothing but train until he's LV50. That'll make little master's life a lot easier. Not only will you be able to enter the Lost City, but you'll be able to go to at least half of the places in the Forgotten Continent.”

Qi Yue knew what Ling Chen was thinking about, so she gave her recommendation. Truthfully, even Qi Yue didn't know where to start looking for the orbs. The Forgotten Continent was simply too vast, and if one wanted to search every inch of it, it would take several lifetimes.

Ling Chen considered Qi Yue's words, and nodded, “My level is indeed far too low right now. If I don't raise my level, searching the Forgotten Continent will just be a joke.” He thought back to

half a month ago, when he had met Daoist Tian Qing and Xiao Feng Chen at the Vermillion Bird City as he muttered, “Xiao Feng Chen seems to be on good terms with that old Daoist. If that old Daoist can find a successor, maybe that successor will be able to tell me where the orbs are... I hope they can find that person soon. For now, I’ll just train.”

It was already getting late, so Ling Chen took a look at his greatly reduced stats, then logged off.

Ling Chen got up, but found that Tian Tian was not next to him. He sniffed, and smelled something cooking in the kitchen. He raised his eyebrows as he smiled amusedly. The reason he had logged off so early was so he could cook dinner for Tian Tian. He never thought that Tian Tian would have logged off even earlier than him, and it seemed that dinner was almost ready.

Walking into the dining hall, Ling Chen saw that there were already two dishes and a big bowl of soup on the table, which all looked quite decent. Although they might not taste too good, but at least they were burnt, and didn’t have any strange smells. Hearing the sounds from outside, Tian Tian poked her head out of the kitchen. She was wearing a white apron and holding a spatula. Seeing Ling Chen, she blinked as she asked, “Big brother, are you hungry? Wait for a bit-there’s still one more dish, and the porridge is nearly ready.”

“I’ll come and help.” Ling Chen said as he smiled. When it came to cooking, Tian Tian could be barely considered to be a beginner, whereas he was world-class.

“Okay, okay... ah... it’s going to be burnt!” Tian Tian happily agreed, then darted back into the kitchen.

With Ling Chen helping out, dinner was finished quickly. Three dishes, a big bowl of soup, two bowls and two pairs of chopsticks... but they were missing someone. Ling Chen was unable to quickly adjust to this, and he often still felt melancholic. However, seeing the little girl who was sitting opposite him with her sweat-covered forehead and bright red cheeks, he felt much better.

“Big brother, what are you doing in the game? Why did you say such a formal farewell? All the big sisters cried.” Tian Tian asked the question she had been holding the whole day as she filled Ling Chen’s bowl with porridge. Ling Chen leaving didn’t mean much to her, since they were living together. However, the feeling was completely different for the other girls.

Ling Chen knew that Tian Tian would ask this question, and he casually replied, “I’m looking for some things that are very important, but I don’t know when I’ll be able to find them all. I don’t want to have other things distracting me before I’ve found them, so I said goodbye to your big sisters. Alright Tian Tian, let’s eat.”

“I see...” Tian Tian sort of understood, but sort of didn’t. She didn’t continue to ask, and started eating. She looked at Ling Chen as she rested her cheeks on her hands and said, “Oh, by the way, big brother, your communication device was turned off for the entire day today. There was a lot of things that we wanted to tell you, but couldn’t. Big sister Qi Qi also said goodbye to us, saying that she was going to the south to find... um... right, the

Vermillion Bird. She should be there now, since her communication device is also off.”

Ling Chen’s actions slowed down, and he nodded as he said, “She made the right decision. When she comes back, she might even be more powerful than me.”

“And also, big sister Su Su also left. After big sister Qi Qi left, big sister Su Su went to say goodbye to her. Afterwards, she said that she was going somewhere, and might be away for a long time.”

“Eh?” Ling Chen looked up, shocked, “Where’s Su Su going?”

“She went to... to... eh I forgot what it was called, let me think...” [Tian Tian](#) looked up, trying her best to remember, then uncertainly said, “Something starting with ‘Tian’... I can’t remember.”

[TLN: Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s first character is ‘Tian’ (天), but just ‘Tian’ by itself is incredibly ambiguous so I didn’t translate it as ‘Heaven’].

“What sort of place is that?” Ling Chen was incredibly surprised, as well as curious. Su’Er had never mentioned anything like that to him before. Moreover, Su’Er’s personality was quite soft, and was quite dependent on her friends. It was quite rare that she would make a decision like this by herself. Where could she have gone?

“So now it’s just you and Bing Yao?” Ling Chen sighed inwardly. Yun Meng Xin had given up on her battle profession, Xiao Qi and Su’Er had left, and Shui Ruo... out of the original team of six girls,

only Tian Tian and Mu Bing Yao remained.

He didn't know when he would be able to see those six girls fight together again.

“Mmm, right now it's big sister Bing Yao who's training me. Big sister Bing Yao has been teaching me a lot about something called “battle sense”, but a lot of it I can't understand or learn properly.” Tian Tian's voice became smaller as she talked, evidently embarrassed by her inability to learn.

Battle sense? Ling Chen shook his head as he placed some food into Tian Tian's bowl, saying, “Tomorrow, tell your big sister Bing Yao that I said that she doesn't need to teach you those things. Tian Tian, just play however you want in the game, in any way that makes you happy, alright?”

“Hehe, big brother's the best!”

Mu Bing Yao evidently wanted Tian Tian to become stronger, and unlock the full potential of her ‘strongest profession’. However, this wasn't what Ling Chen wanted for her. Only after losing something would one truly treasure it and know how important it was. Now, Ling Chen just wanted Tian Tian to live happily and heavily. He didn't want her to have any unnecessary burdens after all she had been through.

At night, after making sure that Tian Tian was asleep, Ling Chen once again returned to the Mystic Moon world.

Ling Chen sent 10 bottles of the Fairy Fountain Water to Yun Meng Xin, as well as a memo for how to distribute them... 1 was for Yun Feng and 1 was for Xiao Qiu Feng in order to thank them for helping him that night. 2 were for Xiao Qi and Su'Er, and another 2 were for Mu Bing Yao and Tian Tian. The remaining 5 bottles were for Yun Meng Xin to do what she pleased with them... whether she wanted to sell them, auction them or keep them was up to her. This sort of overpowered item would be able to sell for astronomical prices.

Ling Chen took out the remaining bottle and drank the contents. Immediately, an incredibly refreshing and cool taste entered his mouth, filling his entire body.

“Ding... you have consumed “Fairy Fountain Water”, HP+1000, MP+1000, Strength+10, Constitution+10, Agility+10, Spirit+10.”

A small bottle of fountain water had caused his HP and MP to more than double. This sort of shocking effect could make people go crazy. After looking at his current stats, Ling Chen took out a teleport scroll and teleported to the town closest to the Fairy Forest, then walked out the southern exit of that town. The Fairy Forest was a completely natural region, and all the beasts inside it were quite weak and cowardly. Most of them had no attack power at all, and were all LVo. Because this town was close to the Fairy Forest, the monsters here weren't very high level either. Ling Chen remembered that there were some LV20 monsters to the south of this town.

With his current strength, it would best for him to train in this region.

Not too long after walking out of the town, he reached a vast grassy plain, and saw herds of grey sheep.

[Grey Sheep]: Type: Beast, Level: LV20, HP: 800, a mutant sheep that is completely grey. It has a bloated body and incredibly sharp horns. Its innocent expression reduces peoples' desire to attack it.

Passive Abilities: 20% resistance against all Magic Damage, can slowly recover its HP by eating grass.

Attack Skills: [Charge]: Uses its horns to charge into enemies. Attack Power is average, and frequency of attacks is high. 20% change of critical strikes.

Weaknesses: Slow Movement Speed, slow reaction speed.

Chapter 372 - A Message From Su'Er

This place was quite far away from the Azure Dragon City, and there were countless high level monster territories and dangerous regions in between them. Very few people could travel from Azure Dragon City to the Vermillion Bird City at this stage of the game, and even fewer people were willing to spend their time on such a trip. As such, there would be no one there to disturb his training.

The Grey Sheep Territory was fairly vast, and there were even large herds of Grey Sheep moving together. Ling Chen was incredibly pleased and grinned. He held the Zephyr Blade in his right hand, and Soaring Cloud, which he hadn't used in a long time, in his left. He rushed up and sent a Ling Tian Burst towards a large herd.

Bang bang bang bang bang.

-1339, -1386, -1391, -2800, -1385.

A cluster of 'bangs' rang out as the Zephyr Blade sent a light-green arc of light into a group of five Grey Sheep. They were all blasted away as they were insta-killed, and dropped a large patch of sheep wool and copper coins.

Although Ling Chen's stats and level had been decreased, and was unable to use the Great Ravager, he was still able to easily insta-kill these ordinary LV20 monsters. After all, he still had the Heaven Wind Technique and War God Technique, as well as two Celestial grade weapons, and the Cancer Orb which ignored

Defence and Sagittarius Orb which gave him Absolute Hit.

Seeing that someone was killing their kin, the other Grey Sheep started to charge over, raising their horns at Ling Chen. However, their fates had been sealed from the instant Ling Chen arrived. Ling Chen was able to completely destroy these sheep with one hand, let alone both hands. Whenever he attacked, two large arcs of light would shoot out, destroying all the Grey Sheep that had come close. As long as Ling Chen didn't let down his guard, he wouldn't be in any danger.

Ling Chen was like a tiger among the herd of sheep and rushed across the Grey Sheep Territory over and over again, from north to south, from east to west. Sheep wool fell everywhere, and bleats repeatedly rang out. Xiao Hui faithfully ran around collecting coins and potions, as well as the equipment that occasionally appeared, but didn't pay any attention to the sheep wool.

The Grey Sheep originally filled the whole grassy plain. At the beginning, when Ling Chen had jumped into a crowd of sheep, it was the sheep charging towards him. After a few minutes, it had become Ling Chen chasing the sheep, and after a while, there were only a few sheep left... half an hour later, there was not a single sheep left-they had all become EXP for Ling Chen. Ling Chen stood in the middle of the Grey Sheep Territory, his hands holding his weapons as he looked around in annoyance. Xiao Hui lay behind him, wagging his tail happily... it wasn't that there weren't enough monsters here, or that they respawned too slowly, but that the speed at which he destroyed them was simply too fast. One second, one herd; the next second, the next herd. It was simply impossible for the respawn rate to keep up with him.

After a long time, a few Grey Sheep finally respawned. Ling Chen shot over like a starved wolf, and within a few seconds, the ground was once again littered with sheep wool.

From north to south, from east to west, Ling Chen killed the Grey Sheep again and again. A training area that was big enough for 20 to 30 people was monopolised by him. Despite the “Heaven’s Jealousy” debuff, killing monsters that were nine levels higher than him in large groups caused his LV11 EXP bar to fill up quickly. After killing and waiting for the Grey Sheep to respawn 20 or so times, a significantly larger Grey Sheep appeared, with two flashing stars above its head. Ling Chen didn’t even bother to look at its stats as he sent two Ling Tian Bursts over. The newly spawned Two Star Elite didn’t even get to breathe before it was reduced to a corpse.

“Ding... you have killed the LV20 Two Star Elite [Super Grey Sheep], SP+40, Fame+40.”

“Young master, we have some bad news.”

“Speak.” Long Tian Yun looked up, his face expressionless.

“It’s Ling Tian... his Fame on the Fame Rankings... has increased.” Flame Shadow stuttered.

Long Tian Yun shot up, his face dark.

Ever since that night, they had not stopped trying to track down Ling Chen. They were sure that even if Ling Chen wasn't dead, he was most likely crippled. However, even so, the shadow that he had left on the entire Long family was simply too great, and they weren't willing to take any risks. They simply couldn't allow Ling Chen to keep living. After so many days, they still had not received any information, and he had also disappeared from the game world. To the Long family, this was good-after all, no news was good news. Long Tian Yun was finally able to gradually calm down-surely, that Ling Tian was dead.

“Are you sure... that it's Ling Tian?” Long Tian Yun asked as he gnashed his teeth.

Flame Shadow quickly nodded his head, “We're certain... he has fallen from the Player Level Rankings, but his ranking on the Fame Rankings hasn't changed. Currently, the only person in all of China who has broken the 10,000 Fame Points barrier is Ling Tian, and his Fame just increased by 40 points. Evidently, he just finished a quest, or killed a small boss. Every person in the intelligence group can confirm this.”

Bang! Long Tian Yun smashed his fist onto the table, “He's not dead... he's actually not dead.”

Long Tian Yun suddenly turned to look at Flame Shadow, his eyes were like fiery pits, causing Flame Shadow to shiver, “Although he's alive, his life isn't going to be easy. Right now, everyone knows his face. No matter where he goes, he'll be found by people, and will never have peace. We'll definitely find him... he has to die.”

“Yes, yes! I know what I’m required to do. The intelligence group will give young master a satisfactory answer very soon.” Flame Shadow quickly said as he retreated.

Long Tian Yun sat back down in his chair, his face steeled. He replayed the events that had happened that night. He once again saw that blood-stained face, and those hands clamping down on his throat like they were made of steel... Long Tian Yun’s body shook as his face became pale. That time was the closest he had ever been to death, and ever since that night, he had been plagued by nightmares. If Ling Tian didn’t die, he would be forever haunted by this nightmare.

“Ling Tian... must die.”

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV12, HP+20, MP+10, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

.....

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV13...”

.....

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV14...”

.....

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV20, HP+20, MP+10, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... your pet ‘Xiao Hui’ has levelled up to LV20...”

“Ding... your humanoid pet ‘Leng’Er’ has levelled up to LV20...”

Ling Chen stayed in the Grey Sheep Territory for a whole 6 days. During those 6 days, Ling Chen did not leave the Grey Sheep Territory at all, and spent ten or so hours farming the Grey Sheep again and again. Soon, he was back at LV20, and was able to re-equip the Great Ravager.

As soon as he reached LV20, Ling Chen rushed out of the Grey Sheep Territory and sat on the ground. During that week, he had lost count of how many sheep he had killed, and he was completely sick of seeing those fat sheep and hearing their bleats. By now, he could probably mimic their bleats perfectly.

“Whew, I can’t stay in this place anymore. It’s time for me to find a new place to train. At this rate, if I use all of my time to train, I should be able to reach LV30 in 10 days by killing LV30 monsters.” Ling Chen said to himself. He then took out his communication device and checked his voice messages.

An announcement sounded out, and he saw that he had received a voice message about 2 hours ago. Ling Chen looked at it, and

found that the sender... was actually Su'Er. Ling Chen immediately opened the message.

“Big brother Ling Chen, it's Su'Er. I can't contact you, so I decided to leave a voice message. I hope you can see this message soon. After separating with you for so many days, I really miss big brother Ling Tian. However, I can't do anything to help you. I knew how much pain big brother Ling Tian was going through, but I couldn't do anything about it. But... but, big brother Ling Tian is the strongest and the best, so I'm sure everything will go well for you. I will pray for big brother Ling Tian every day, and pray that I can meet you again soon.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Big brother Ling Tian, on the day you left, I met two grandpas. One of them said he was your master, and said that he was called Xiao Feng Chen. The other one is now my master. That day, they mentioned you, and said that you needed their help. And so, I left with my master, and went to a place called the “Heaven's Secrets Mountain”, and joined the “Heaven's Secrets Sect”. Master has been passing on to me the power of Heaven's Secrets. This power is very mysterious and unbelievable and I can't believe that it exists. Master didn't trick me at all. These days, I've finally been able to see a bit of Heaven's Secrets, and can see some simple things. I also saw the things that big brother Ling Tian are looking for... they're 15 orbs that can glow. Big brother Ling Tian has obtained 4 so far, and still has 11 to go...”

“Of these 11 orbs, one of them is at a place ‘past the eerie mountain ridge in the east, within a mysterious palace’.”

“Master said that I’m still in the Foundation Phase, so I shouldn’t recklessly reveal Heaven’s Secrets, otherwise I’ll receive divine punishment. If I have to use it, I can only use it very, very sparingly. I’ll definitely work hard, so that by the time I can see Heaven’s Secrets again, I’ll find the next orb for big brother Ling Tian. Make sure to send me voice messages, big brother Ling Tian.”

Ling Chen jumped to his feet and looked to the east.

Su’Er... Heaven’s Secrets Sect... the successor that Daoist Tian Qing was looking for was actually Su’Er, and she had actually gone with him.

This was an incredible coincidence.

Past the eerie mountain ridge in the east, within a mysterious palace... so that was the place where she saw one of the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs.

East... eerie mountain ridge...

Wait a second, the Lonely Spirit Ridge was in the east, and it was an incredibly eerie mountain ridge.

Past the eerie mountain ridge in the east... within a mysterious

palace... could it be that past the Lonely Spirit Ridge, there was another region?

Chapter 373 - Nameless Ridge (1)

Player: Ling Tian

Level: LV20

Profession: Ling Tian Battle Soul, Feng Chen Curse Zanni

Affiliation: None

Fame Points: 14,513; Money: 83,650,019; SP: 470.

Basic Stats: Strength: 260, Constitution: 44, Agility: 60, Spirit: 68

Innate Attributes: Luck: 15, Comprehension: 15

HP: 2343; MP: 2080

Physical Attack Power: 1208; Magical Attack Power: 136

Defence: 218

Hit: ????; Evasion: 91

Critical Chance: 31%; Pierce Chance: 100%

Attack Speed: 100; Movement Speed: 175

Elemental Resistances: Water: 0% ; Fire: 0%; Wind: 10% ; Lightning: 0% ; Earth: 0% ; Light: 0% ; Darkness: 18%.

These were Ling Chen's current stats. With the help of the Fairy Fountain Water, both Ling Chen's HP and MP were above 2,000, increasing his ability to survive. Ling Chen took out his map, and looked to the east of the Forgotten Continent. On the map, the Lonely Spirit Ridge was labelled as a dangerous region. After the War Demon Beast had been destroyed by Xi Ling's Nine Suns

Heavenly Wrath, that place was no longer dangerous anymore. The entire Lonely Spirit Ridge had been turned into ruins, and countless mountain ridges had been burned to the ground.

The region to the east of the Lonely Spirit Ridge was marked by a black “?”, and had a striking description: This is a barren area, and apart from a few mountain ridges, there is nothing else. It doesn't seem eerie, but there seems to be a powerful Nature spirit sleeping there. When I approached, its pressure warned me, causing me to turn back. It is best not to get close to here.

So there was another series of mountain ridges to the east of the Lonely Spirit Ridge?

The description said that a powerful Nature spirit was sleeping there. If even Qian Gun Gun, who had lived for countless years, felt afraid, it was most probably quite terrifying. However, since it concerned Shui Ruo's chances of revival, Ling Chen had to go, no matter what!

Ling Chen took out a teleport scroll to Peace Town, which was the closest town to the Ghastly Grounds. Ling Chen had been to quite a few places, and whenever he reached a town, he would buy many teleport scrolls. Although it took up quite a bit of space in his bag, but he would never throw them away. This habit had helped him on quite a few occasions. After all, if he didn't have this teleport scroll to Peace Town, he would have to set out from the Azure Dragon City again, wasting much time in the process.

15 kilometres to the North-East was the Ghastly Grounds. Because of the Ghastly Grounds, Peace Town had an eerie air to it as well,

and there was always a thin layer of black fog hovering above it. When looking around, almost every house was tightly closed, and there were not many people on the streets. Ling Chen didn't plan on staying in the Ghastly Grounds. He called out the Cloud Stepping Mare and shot towards the Lonely Spirit Ridge. Just as he rushed out of Peace Town's North-Eastern boundary, he saw a small figure. As soon as he saw her, his eyes widened, and he almost fell down from his horse.

“Tian Tian, what are you doing here?” Ling Chen yelled out. He never thought that he would meet Tian Tian here. Normally, players wouldn't be willing to get close to such an eerie place, and yet, here she was. Moreover, Mu Bing Yao was not around-she seemed to be by herself.

Hearing the voice, Tian Tian turned around. Upon seeing Ling Chen, her mouth opened wide, looking even more shocked than Ling Chen. She yelled out the same question as Ling Chen, “Ah! Big brother, what are you doing here?”

Ling Chen went over and looked around, and confirmed that Mu Bing Yao wasn't around, as he asked, “This place is very dangerous, and isn't suitable for training. Why did you come here? And where's your big sister Bing Yao?”

“Big sister Bing Yao took me here, because there aren't many people here and it's quite safe. There are also many quests to do in this town. Oh, right, big sister Bing Yao seemed to have an urgent matter, so she left first. She told me to wait here for her, and if she wasn't back within 30 minutes, I should go back to Azure Dragon City. I didn't end up waiting for big sister Bing Yao, but I found big

brother instead, hehe.” Tian Tian giggled as she looked up at him. Evidently, she was quite happy that she had coincidentally run into him.

Tian Tian was holding a jade-green staff and was wearing the robe with magic patterns that Ling Chen had given her. She was also wearing a pair of magical embroidered shoes, and adding on her cute little body, she looked like a little magician from an anime. Ling Chen thought for a few moments before asking, “Tian Tian, how long have you waited?”

Long Tian Yun was most likely also investigating Tian Tian, so Mu Bing Yao took her to a place where there were not many other players. Mu Bing Yao leaving on urgent business was also quite normal.

“Hmm... about... a really long time.” Tian Tian said in a small voice. She then asked, “Big brother why are you here? And where are you going?”

Ling Chen pointed to the East, “I’m going towards the East.”

“Then take me with you!” Tian Tian walked forwards to Ling Chen’s horse, her face filled with a hopeful look.

Ling Chen shook his head, “The place I’m going to is very dangerous, and isn’t suitable for you. Just be good and wait here for your big sister Bing Yao, or go back to Azure Dragon City. Don’t run around by yourself.”

“No way, no way, please take me with you, big brother. I really want to go as well. I’m really scared by myself. I promise that I’ll listen to big brother and won’t be a burden.” Tian Tian’s begged as her hands grabbed onto Ling Chen’s hand and shook it.

Ling Chen continued to shake his head, “Tian Tian, I really can’t take you. That place is far too dangerous and scary.”

“It’s fine! With big brother, I won’t feel scared. Big brother, please take me with you. You’ve never played with me in the game before.” Tian Tian grasped onto Ling Chen’s hand, unwilling to let go.

Tian Tian’s last sentence caused Ling Chen to pause, unable to reject her again.

Indeed, in the game, it was either that Shui Ruo was with him, or he did things by himself. Now that Shui Ruo had left, Xiao Qi had left, Su’Er left, it was just Mu Bing Yao who could be with Tian Tian. Mu Bing Yao’s personality was quite cold, and she rarely spoke much. It was hard for Tian Tian to feel happy around her... Seeing Tian Tian’s eyes filled with hope and expectation, Ling Chen could only nod, “Alright, alright, then I’ll take Tian Tian with me this time. However, you need to be good and listen to me, and you’re not allowed to run off by yourself. If I tell you to run, you have to run, okay?”

“Mhmm, I’ll definitely listen to big brother!” Tian Tian’s eyes sparkled like diamonds and she almost started to jump up and down in excitement. Seeing her like this, Ling Chen’s heart twinged, and he grabbed Tian Tian’s little hand and pulled her up.

He placed her in front of him as he said, “Alright, let’s go!”

“Yay, big brother’s the best!” Tian Tian leaned against Ling Chen, a happy look on her face. Her long eyelashes fluttered as she blinked in excitement.

Ling Chen returned to Peace Town and found the old grandpa to buy tens of bowls of Rice Porridge. He wouldn’t forget about the undead aura in the Ghastly Grounds that could reduce HP. Drinking a bowl of Rice Porridge would greatly reduce the HP loss there.

There probably won’t be any issues with bringing Tian Tian, right? Ling Chen thought to himself as he rode on. He was going to search for something, and not fight some super monster. He would avoid all monsters on the way, and with his Movement Speed and agility, he probably wouldn’t run into any danger. After thinking about it, he felt much more reassured, and continued to speed towards the Ghastly Grounds.

The whole way, Tian Tian was in high spirits, and would continuously talk to him and ask him questions. Ling Chen could feel that after Shui Ruo had passed away, Tian Tian had changed drastically. She was no longer stubborn and lazy, and wouldn’t make unreasonable demands. Instead, she was caring and obedient, and gradually learned to look after their home. He knew who it was that Tian Tian had made these changes for...

It was just as he had said on that night, to himself... Tian Tian, you’re stronger than me.

Half an hour later, they arrived at the Ghastly Grounds.

It was the same as when he had come last time. It was definitely daytime, but it was as if night had just fallen. The air was filled with thick grey smog, reducing visibility of the surrounding area. A gust of cold wind blew over, bringing with it a rotten smell, as well as sounds that sounded like crying and howling.

The undead monsters in the Ghastly Grounds were not very high level. The lowest were around LV5, and the highest were around LV25. It was completely possible for players of the current stage of the game to deal with the monsters here. However, not a single player was within sight. The atmosphere here was simply too terrifying, and most people wouldn't have the guts to enter such a place.

Chatter chatter chatter...

“Hehahahaha...”

All sorts of blood-chilling sounds came from around them, which could cause any grown man's teeth to chatter. Ling Chen could feel Tian Tian's body trembling, and he pulled her closer into his embrace. He stopped the Cloud Stepping Mare and lowered his head as he asked, “Tian Tian, are you scared?”

Tian Tian nodded, and shrank into his embrace, “It's really scary here, but it's so exciting! Big brother, let's hurry up and go further in!”

Ling Chen was speechless. He could feel that Tian Tian was scared, but the excitement that was coming from her was real... come to think of it, normally girls around Tian Tian's age would be frightened to the point of tears...

Since Tian Tian was alright, Ling Chen decided to continue. Ling Chen and Tian Tian both drank a bowl of Rice Porridge, and charged into the Ghastly Grounds. They soon disappeared into the thick, grey smog.

The further ahead they went, the thicker the smog became, and the worse the rotting smell became. Some hazy figures began to appear, and although Ling Chen knew what they were, he couldn't help but shudder inwardly. He couldn't be bothered to deal with these zombies, and didn't reduce his speed at all.

However, Tian Tian...

“Waaaah!! Zombies! Zombies!! Just like the ones on TV... Ahhhh, so scary! Little White, go and destroy them!”

Tian Tian was scared to the point of yelling out when she saw her first Zombie, causing Ling Chen's ears to ring. As she yelled, she gestured with her hands and four snow-white Summons appeared near the zombie... they had round bodies, four short limbs and short tails, as well as red eyes and long buck-teeth. They were all carrying carrots that were about half a metre long and as tall as themselves. That's right, they were one of Tian Tian's summons-Little White-four of them appeared simultaneously!

Currently, Tian Tian was LV22, 2 levels higher than Ling Chen, and could now conjure 4 of her Summons simultaneously.

The Little Whites all rushed over, smashing their big carrots onto the Zombie.

-890, -911, -904, -900!

The 4 Little Whites dealt almost 3,000 damage together. The LV5 Zombie, which only had around 600 HP, was instantly obliterated, and fell to the ground. The Little Whites also vanished.

“Eh? These Zombies are so weak! Heheh, my Little Whites are so strong!” Seeing how easily the Zombie had been defeated, Tian Tian put her hands on her hips, evidently incredibly proud of herself and her Summons. The fear from earlier was completely gone... Hmph, these Zombies are nothing special.

Behind her, Ling Chen was completely shocked... Tian Tian could simultaneously summon 4 Little Whites, and they could also focus their attacks. With that sort of Attack Power, forget about anyone else, even him with his 2,000 or so HP would be insta-killed!

Chapter 374 - Nameless Ridge (2)

As they travelled through the Ghastly Grounds, Tian Tian's sharp cries eventually became whoops of excitement. This was because although the undead monsters looked terrifying, not a single one of them could stand up to her Little Whites' attacks. Under the attacks from 4 big carrots, not even LV20 1 Star Elites or 2 Star Elites could avoid being insta-killed. As expected from the number 1 ranked profession... though, in fairness, the skills all looked completely silly.

Seeing how weak the Zombies were, Tian Tian was not afraid anymore, and started to make faces at them.

The Cloud Stepping Mare galloped onwards. Ling Chen did not stop at all, and avoided all of the monsters he saw. After half an hour, he came to the Underworld Entrance that Xiao Hui had found in the past, where he had first met Qian Gun Gun. Around 100 metres to the east of the Underworld Entrance was the Lonely Spirit Ridge.

Ling Chen glanced at the Underworld Entrance, but did not slow down or stop, and continued into the Lonely Spirit Ridge. There, he stopped the Cloud Stepping Mare. The first time he had come here, black fog had obscured the mountain ridges, and the air was deathly grey. It was a completely hellish scene. The dirt under his feet was soft and damp, and both light and fresh air seemed to avoid this place.

And now, in front of him was a blackened patch of land... no, it was a blackened crater! The deepest part of it went 3 metres down

into the ground. Under Xi Ling's Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns, the flames of the Nine Suns had annihilated the War Demon Beast and razed the entire Lonely Spirit Ridge to the ground. Countless mountain ridges had been destroyed, with not even a trace of them left.

To be able to destroy mountain ridges and the ground to such an extent-one could see the might of the Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns from that.

Although a long time had passed, the smell of burning still lingered in this place. There was still black fog in the sky, but there wouldn't be any danger here. Because of the War Demon Beast, no other creatures dared to live around here or even come near. And now, because the countless mountain ridges had been eradicated, Ling Chen would be able to travel much faster on the flat ground.

“This place used to have many mountain ridges, and was where I first met Xi Ling. Afterwards, there was a large fire, turning it like this.” Ling Chen said as he ordered the Cloud Stepping Mare into a trot.

“Whew... Big brother, I finally caught up to you.”

“My name is Xi Ling, big brother can call me Ling Ling!”

“Wherever big brother goes, that's where my home is.” “I want to follow big brother, wherever big brother goes, just take me as well! Ok?”

“Because I like big brother!”

“Big brother, you need to keep your promises! If I can bring back some Flaming Black Grass, you need to let me follow big brother. Wherever big brother goes, I’m going as well... no take backs!”

Ling Chen’s mind wound back to when he had first met Xi Ling. Back then, she had worn flame-red clothes, and looked like a young girl. At that time, he didn’t know that she was the crimson red bird he had saved. Because he saved her that time, she repaid him with everything she had... and sacrificed herself twice for him.

Now that Xiao Qi went to the Lava Purgatory, the Vermillion Bird would probably save Xi Ling... Ling Chen hoped that the day Xiao Qi returned, he would also see Xi Ling again.

“Was this Xi Ling’s home?” Tian Tian asked as she blinked and looked around, wondering why Xi Ling would live in such a place. Although she had never met Xi Ling, she had heard her big sisters mention her many times. She knew that Xi Ling was Ling Chen’s pet, and was incredibly beautiful and powerful.

“Not exactly. Back then, Xi Ling was imprisoned here, and I happened to find her and decided to release her. From then on, she decided to follow me. She’s left temporarily for now, but will be back soon. I’m sure Tian Tian will definitely like her.” Ling Chen said while smiling. Both Xi Ling’s true form and human form were gorgeous, and anyone would immediately like her at first sight.

They didn't face any obstacles the whole trip, and travelled smoothly. Back then, it took Ling Chen hours to find the Central District when he first came here, but this time it took an hour to reach the exit of the Lonely Spirit Ridge. Ling Chen took out his map and confirmed where he was, then looked at the region to Lonely Spirit Ridge's east... Because of the Lonely Spirit Ridge, no one had been able to reach those mountain ridges for thousands of years, and thus that place did not have a name. Qian Gun Gun didn't bother giving that place a name either, instead writing just 2 words: Nameless Ridge.

It was exactly as it had been described-a series of mountain ridges without a name.

They were already quite far from the Ghastly Grounds, and there was pretty much no black fog here, allowing them to see clearly. In front of them were many high and low mountain ridges.

The ground here was uneven, and the mountain ridges were more sparsely spaced than at the Lonely Spirit Ridge. However, the mountain ridges were generally taller, and some extended into the clouds. Moreover, there were plants here, unlike the barren Lonely Spirit Ridge.

Tian Tian tilted her head, curiously asking, "Big brother, where is this? Are you looking for something here?"

They were now 'past the eerie mountain ridge in the east'.

So what did Su'Er mean by a 'mysterious palace'? Could it be that

it was hidden in some obscure place? And one of the orbs was within that palace?

And why would there be a palace here? Who did it belong to? Humans? Beasts? Or another race?

“It should be here,” Ling Chen said uncertainly, “Let’s have a look around.”

It was quite difficult to ride on a horse here, so Ling Chen hugged Tian Tian and jumped down from the horse, then called out Xiao Hui. Xiao Hui was very sensitive towards treasures, and if there was an orb here, he would definitely be able to find it. What Ling Chen was going to do was search this entire region with Tian Tian. According to the map, the Nameless Ridge didn’t cover a very large area, and was slightly smaller than the Lonely Spirit Ridge. It would be possible to search the whole place in around 3 days.

“Wah, the air smells so nice here.” Tian Tian said as she deeply breathed in, with a satisfied look on her face. The Ghastly Grounds and Lonely Spirit Ridge smelled of death, and comparatively, the air here smelled like it was from heaven.

Ling Chen held Tian Tian’s hand as she skipped alongside him, looking around her in curiosity. She had never seen such a place in the real world, and was filled with wonder.

The air was refreshing and there were birds singing and insects chirping. This didn’t seem like a dangerous place. After walking for a few minutes, Ling Chen became slightly more relaxed. Xiao

Hui walked behind him, sniffing around, but not seeming to find anything.

Ling Chen searched very carefully, and went up and down every single mountain ridge. Just like that, a whole day had passed. He had walked through 10 or so small mountain ridges with Tian Tian, and Xiao Hui didn't show any signs of giving up. What was strange that they didn't see a single monster. Ling Chen didn't feel discouraged at all. He was sure that this was the place Su'Er was talking about. Since Su'Er knew so much about what he was searching for, he was confident that the Heaven's Secrets Sect was the real deal. Since she had said there was an orb here, it was unlikely that she would be wrong.

After going through another mountain ridge without any luck, Ling Chen looked at Tian Tian and asked, "Are you tired? We can rest if you want."

"I'm not tired at all! I don't feel tired when I'm with big brother." Tian Tian said as she smiled.

Ling Chen also smiled. This girl was quickly learning how to say sweet words. Before Shui Ruo had left them, after walking for just a short while, Tian Tian would demand to be piggybacked, and then refuse to get off.

"Awoo~"

Hearing Xiao Hui's warning call, Ling Chen turned around. The call was quite soft, indicating that the threat was not very

dangerous. Ling Chen saw a few stone balls around the size of a head rolling towards him. There seemed to be eyes on those stone balls.

Monsters! Monsters had finally appeared! Ling Chen took out his weapons and prepared for battle. Instantly, information from Xiao Hui appeared in his mind.

[Little Stone Golem]: Type: Demon, Level: LV1, HP: 30. Normal stones that mysteriously developed consciousness. Has the lowest level of intelligence.

Passive Abilities: 30% Resistance against Earth type damage.

Attack Skills: [Charge]: Uses its body to charge into enemies, causing very little damage.

Weaknesses: Wind element damage causes an additional 50% damage.

Ling Chen, who had been expecting a big fight, almost fell over.

After passing by the dangerous Ghastly Grounds and Lonely Spirit Ridge, he had finally arrived at this place. Ling Chen fully expected incredibly dangerous enemies, but he had never thought that they would only be LV1!

In the Forgotten Continent, only the Novice Village had LV1 monsters!

These incredibly weak little monsters evidently couldn't tell the difference in strength between themselves and Ling Chen. After seeing Ling Chen and Tian Tian approach, they had actually taken the initiative to come over and attack them. Ling Chen smirked, and casually swept out, turning them into rubble. Apart from broken rocks, they didn't drop anything else, not even any copper coins.

“Why are there LV1 monsters here? Didn't Qian Gun Gun's map say that there's a powerful Nature spirit here?” Ling Chen muttered to himself. Just as he was about to put away his weapons, his expression froze and he gripped Tian Tian's hand as he looked forwards.

Chapter 375 - Rock Devil King

Ling Chen's sudden movements caused Tian Tian to become incredibly tense, and she subconsciously shrunk back towards his body, “What happened?”

Ling Chen stared in direction of where the noise was coming from for quite some time, before shaking his head, “Looks like it was nothing, I’m probably being too sensitive.”

Just now when he beat the Rock Monster, he felt some kind of strong force directed at him. In that moment he felt suffocated but the feeling was fleeting and the memory of it felt more like a hallucination than reality.

Was it really a hallucination though?

“Let’s go, we’ll see what’s ahead.” Ling Chen continued forwards as he picked up Tian Tian’s hand. But he is now significantly slower, and his expression was grave. He’d been at Death’s door many times before so normally he would never question his intuition, but even Xiao Hui didn’t have a reaction to it.

After crossing two mountain ridges, he had still achieved nothing and it was already 7pm. As he was getting ready to go offline with Tian Tian, there were several howling noises that could be heard ahead. And suddenly, several dark figures jumped out behind rocks as high as two meters tall

Although they were one meter tall and completely made of rock,

they had a humanoid head, body and limbs. On the heads was only one eye, and below it, a big mouth. At a height of one meter, it was really fat and in one of its hands gripped a sturdy stone mallet... A group of humanoid Rock Devils had unexpectedly appeared!

“Ahh! It’s a rock person, with one eye!” Tian Tian called out in alarm.

There were five fat rock people, all of them making strange sounds. They looked so heavy but they were surprisingly agile, in an instant they appeared before their eyes.

[Rock Devil]: Category: Monster, Level: 30, Grade: 2 Star Elite, HP: 5100. Ordinary rocks that have been affected by Death’s Breath which turned them into Rock Devils. They have a tough body and high agility but low Intelligence, functioning only by instinct.

Talents: 50% immunity to earth attacks, high defence, high move speed, attacks have a low chance of stunning.

Attack Moves: [Rock Mallet]: Uses the Rock Mallet in hand to attack a target, 10% chance of a critical hit, high probability of knockback.

Weakness: Weak to wind attacks (wind resistance -50%)

What he fought before was a defenseless lowest ranking Rock Devil. After walking through two mountain ranges, he is suddenly faced with level 30 monsters that were 2 Star Elite! These kinds of 2 Star Elite monsters always appear in groups, Ling Chen had only seen something similar before in the Forgotten Cavern back in the Newbie village.

Not only does it not make him anxious, it actually made him excited... because this big wave of 2 Star Elites, were worth a lot of skill points!

“Tian Tian, make sure you protect yourself!”

Ling Chen warned Tian Tian before rushing out to meet the Rock Devils. Left hand holding the Zephyr Blade and in the other, the Great Ravager, Ling Chen overlapped them and mercilessly attacked through them.

Papapapapapa!

-2400, -2400, -4782, -2401...

Letting out a strange cry as the damage values appeared, all five Rock Devils were hit and fell to the ground as Ling Chen flew by. One of them had already been killed, leaving the rest behind lying on the floor unable to get up. These 2 Star Elites however were not by all means weak, if a player of the same level were to fight them they would need to be careful. A group like this was naturally a little bit threatening. But for Ling Chen, to not be killed by him would only be because they were lucky enough to have high HP.

“Go, Little White!”

With the clear command, four little white rabbits surrounded the Rock Devils that were still lying on the floor. Each one was targeting one Rock Devil, throwing a radish... no a carrot at them.

-881, -878, -865, -892

With four Little Whites, one for each was perfect. The lucky four Rock Devils each let out a weak howl before dispersing back into crushed stone.

“Ding... you have successfully killed 5 2 Star Elite ‘Rock Devil’, Prestige +260, Skill Points +260.”

If it was a party that defeated the 2 Star Elites, then the prestige value and skill points will be assigned based on contribution. The damage these Rock Devils sustained primarily came from Ling Chen, thus Ling Chen obtained most of the prestige and skill points. But, to Tian Tian, these skill points are useless, because all her skills were ‘not upgradable’. The strength of her summons increase as her level increases.

“Ha! How stingy, all five 2 Star Elites didn’t even drop a single item, not even a copper item.” Looking at the crumbled rocks, Tian Tian mumbled with discontent. Ling Chen was also grumbling internally... these Rock Devils were way too stingy! Not even a feather was dropped. If a level 1 didn’t drop anything, that is to be expected, but these were level 30 2 Star Elite!

This was a small group of 2 Star Elites, so that means there are stronger monsters ahead. Ling Chen looked at the time, and said, “Tian Tian, I’ll be going offline first, I’ll continue playing later. It’s time for dinner.”

“Okay, that’s fine, I started to feel hungry just then as well.”

After Tian Tian had finished speaking and they prepared to go offline, Xiao Hui started to cry out, and started running towards a small hole. After running for three meters, his horn lit up with a gray light.

Ling Chen was familiar with this light. Xiao Hui had sensed some kind of treasure and only when it went to the place of the treasure would his light shine. He was suddenly aware, and rushed over, “Xiao Hui, did you find something?”

“woo~~” Xiao Hui growled, rubbing its body against Ling Chen and then took a step forwards. Ling Chen stopped logging off and dragged Tian Tian with him to follow Xiao Hui. In his heart, he kept repeating... ‘Xiao Hi, you have to find it.’

According to the many experiences before, Xiao Hui’s detection range is pretty big, so when his horn glows it doesn’t mean that the item is close by. The closer he gets, the stronger the light on Xiao Hui’s horn glowed. After going forward for a few meters more, Xiao Hui stopped. But the light on the horn still wasn’t at its brightest, which meant there was still some travelling to do.

Ling Chen also stopped and looked ahead, in his line of sight there were two completely different mountains. The left one was quite steep, its ground almost vertical and reaching into the sky. If you looked around, there was nothing that compared to its height. But the one on the right was much lower in comparison, its attitude was probably about 50 meters. Its surface was especially smooth, which is strange given the region was surrounded by rugged rocks and mountain ranges.

“Xiao Hui, is it here?” Ling Chen said while looking at Xiao Hui

Xiao Hui shook its tail, looking at the tall mountain but also looking at the shorter mountain. The horn on its head continued to glow, its behavior made it look like it was hesitating. Only after quite some time, did it finally start moving forwards, heading towards the unusual smooth ground.

Whoooooshhh...

Just as Xiao Hui's claws touched the ground, six rays of earthen-yellow light arose ahead, and a wave of strange roars followed. The five Rock Devils that they had previously faced appeared in front of them, and behind them was a darker-coloured Rock Devil that was at least three times the size of those 2 Star rock Devils.

[Rock Devil King]: Category: Demon, Grade: Lord, Level: 30, HP: 50,000. The Rock Clan's strongest leader, with a strong body and a break ability, but still low intelligence. Will order various Rock Devils to defeat any invaders.

Talent: 50% resistance to Earth attacks, very high defense, each attack has a 15% chance of stunning the opponent for 2-3 seconds. Earth Type, Immune to stat drop effects.

Attack Skills: [Bombarding Mallet]: Raising a great rock mallet, it fiercely bombards all enemies within 3 meters in front of it. It deals high damage and the cast time is very short. There is a 20% chance that it explodes on impact, dealing 100% of the target's strength to itself.

[Demon King Roar]: When its HP is lower than 60%, it will let out a roar, raising its own and surrounding Rock Monster's physical attack strength by 20%.

[Rock Explosion]: It hits the ground with the great mallet, creating a series of explosion in the soil in an area. Damages all targets within a five-meter radius and also knocks them down. Medium cast time, the great mallet will be raised up high before this skill is cast.

[Greater Rock Explosion]: Cast upon death. When HP reaches 0, its body will explode. The energy released will have a powerful impact on the surrounding 10 meters. Deals extremely high damage. Cast immediately upon death, no pre-emptive actions.

Weakness: Weak to wind attacks (Wind resistance -50%)

The five Rock Devils looked exactly like the one they had encountered before, but there was also a Rock Devil King. Ling Chen noted that the Rock Devils and the Rock Devil King dropped down from the sky. They clearly didn't originate from this place, it actually looked like... they had been summoned.

A level 30 Lord and five 2 Star Elites, this was hardly a formidable lineup as Ling Chen had already killed 3 Celestial Bosses in this world. He pushed Tian Tian behind him and immediately started charging towards them, shouting: "Strong Gale!"

Upon the Great Ravager and the Zephyr Blade was a weak green tinge. One skill of Zephyr Blade was, 'Strong Gale', which could transform all attacks into wind which was what these Rock Devils were weak to! They had a -50% resistance will wind attacks, which mean wind attacks would deal 150% damage to them.

The Rock Devils made their strange cry in unison while lifting up their mallets. They turned to rush forwards, moving shoulder to shoulder in a tidy row, trying to ensure that Ling Chen's attack range couldn't reach them all at once. The Rock Demon King was behind them, unmoving, it seemed like it didn't fight unless it had to. The corner of Ling Chen's mouth twitched, and his right hand swung left while his left hand swung right, creating two huge green semi-circle arcs. These hit all of the Rock Devils before they could even get into range to attack.

Papapapa...

-3600, -3598, -7200, -3600.....

Because of Strong Gale, Ling Chen's attacks dealt 50% more damage to these Rock Devils. With two overlapping Ling Tian Breaks, they should have been killed in a flash, there was no need for Tian Tian to clean them up. His lip curled as he kicked away the rubble, Ling Chen then took a moderate pace towards the Rock Devil King. The Lord that he was facing right now, any other player would still be unable to defeat it. But to Ling Chen, the monsters before him were just trash. With two of the strongest occupations, and two Celestial weapons, plus his ability to transcend human agility and battle consciousness, this Lord was no threat to him at all.

Chapter 376 - Rock Giant

The five Rock Devils that were before him were destroyed in under a second. This then scared the Rock Devil King leading him to immediately let out an angry roar. It held a giant stone mallet in both its hands and as it approached Ling Chen, it took a vicious swing directly at him. The giant mallet made the air howl as it swung to the side and if he was hit by it, he would have definitely been sent flying.

But Ling Chen paid no attention to it, advancing forwards. As soon as the mallet was about to reach him, a silver light glowed from his right hand and the Rock Devil King immediately stopped moving. But Ling Chen's attacks quickly followed, using both hands, he opened with Ling Tian Slash.

-6082, -6044 -6021, -12048 -12022, -6025

In a three second window, six Ling Tian Slashes were cast and two of them were critical hits. The Rock Devil King's 50,000 HP was reduced to less than 2,000. The high damage values caused even Tian Tian to cry out in shock. After three rounds of attacks, Ling Chen stopped attacking and immediately started running away, attempting to leave the 10 meter radius.

As the effect of Moon Shadow came to an end, the Rock Devil King's mallet missed, hitting the ground and raising dust into the air. But Ling Chen had already reached Tian Tian's side, which was 20 meters away from the Rock Devil King. The Zephyr Blade in his left-hand changes into Soaring Cloud and is fired towards it.

Pa!

-3680.

The Soaring Cloud's damage was weaker than the Zephyr Blade, especially now that the Zephyr effect was lost. Soaring Cloud's damage was weak but it was enough to completely deplete the Rock Devil King's HP. The Rock Devil King then let out a strange desperate roar before its body exploded...

Boom!!!

Crushed stones filled the air, there was dust everywhere and the fierce explosion made the ground shake. The Rock Devil King's death skill was truly formidable... if it weren't for Xiao Hui's ability to detect and give Ling Chen the information about the monster, he probably would have taken significant damage as he killed the monster. But now, this self-destruction didn't even leave a scratch on Ling Chen.

“Ding... you have successfully defeated a LV30 Lord ‘Rock Devil King’, Fame +300, Skill points +300.”

“Waaa! Big brother is so strong! You can deal with such a scary monster so quickly!” Tian Tian looked at him with adoration as if there were stars in her eyes. After being in this game for so long, she was very aware of the strength of these Lord monsters. But this Lord monster, in addition to the five 2 Star Elites were all cleared out so effortlessly.

“Hey, it’s just that you’re weak,” Ling Chen said jokingly. In order to ensure Tian Tian’s safety, he used the cleanest method he knew, which of course made it very easy. However, if he was seen by the previous owner of the Lunar Scourge, they would have definitely scolded him: Using the Lunar Scourge’s OP skill Moon Shadow against a Lord, how can you feel satisfied and happy about this kind of bullying. Have you no shame!

The place where the Rock Devil King exploded left a crater, which was surrounded by rubble. In the pit, a faint gold light could be seen.

Could it be gold equipment?

Ling Chen immediately walked over and squatted by the hole. There were two pieces of equipment inside, one was glittering gold and the other silver. One of them was a Gold grade equipment while the other was a Silver grade equipment. The Silver equipment was an exquisite ring. Additionally, there was also a stone fragment that was glittering yellow through the soil.

The Rock Devils were so stingy, but their leader on the other hand was quite generous.

[Rock Devil Robe]: Category: Coat, Grade: Gold. Equipment Requirement: LV30 and above in a Magic occupation (Elementalist, Priest or Summoner). It seems like a regular Magic occupation robe and has a slight smell of soil. It will occasionally release a strange yellow light. Defense +63, Spirit +15, Constitution +12, Resistance to earth attacks +7%, grants

invulnerability to petrification.

[White Jade Ring]: Category: Ring, Grade: Silver. Equipment Requirement: LV15 and above in a Magic occupation. A perfectly formed white jade ring, it had been lost for a very long time before being picked up by the Rock Devil King. MP +150, MP consumption -15%.

Two equipment, one Gold robe and one Silver ring which both suited a magic occupation. Ling Chen couldn't help but wonder how this close combat physical attack Lord managed to drop two Magic occupation equipment. He handed over the robe and the White Jade ring to Tian Tian, "It's your lucky day, both of the equipment are suitable for you to use. You can put this ring on right away, but as for the robe you'll have to wait until you're LV30. They may not be the best looking, but their stats are pretty good."

A Gold equipment's stats were not just 'pretty good'. Even though players were, on average, around LV30, Gold equipment was still very rare; to have them would have made many players boil with envy.

"It's a ring! And a Gold equipment!" Tian Tian's best equipment all came from Ling Chen, but she still hadn't gotten a ring. Seeing the White Jade Ring, she cried out in excitement and took it from Ling Chen hands, immediately putting it onto her right hand's middle finger. She then opened her hand for Ling Chen to see, "Big brother, have a look, does it look good?"

The wonderful workmanship of the White Jade Ring was evident, it seemed like the ring was made of the purest ice and snow. The white ring wrapped around her finger, unexpectedly complemented by the gloomy surroundings. Ling Chen looked for a while and nodded, “It looks good.”

Her hand was small and nothing in the world was as beautiful, it looked even better than real jade. The hands were a woman’s second face and Tian Tian’s face and hands were both perfect. Once she grew up, she might have the same kind of insane beauty as Yun Meng Xin.

“Hehe, I think it looks nice as well. I guess I’ll just put it on. As for this robe, I’ll work hard to get to LV30 and then I’ll put it on.” Tian Tian nodded happily, retracting her palm and looked at the ring for a bit longer before putting her hand down while putting away the robe.

Other than those two equipment, the Rock Devil King also dropped a stone fragment.

[Intermediate Defense Crystal]: Category: Energy Crystal, Grade: Intermediate. Attributes: Earth, Effect: Defense +9%

This piece could only be found in the heart of the Royal City; it couldn’t be bought in the market. Ling Chen also gave this to Tian Tian. He didn’t need any defense as those who couldn’t defeat him were no real threat to him and for those who could, they were so

strong that the additional defense points would be pointless. It would be more useful to just give it to Tian Tian to strengthen her defense.

Because he dealt with a Rock Devil King and 5 Rock Devils, the surroundings were peaceful once again. But Xiao Hui was still standing there, his tail unmoving, looking left and right. His behavior concerned Ling Chen, who walked over and asked, “Xiao Hui, what’s happening? Do you want to go left or right?”

This question was kind of stupid as the left mountain was almost vertical and pretty much reached into the clouds so if he wanted to climb it he would have needed to fly. The only way forwards was really to continue walking on the right mountain.

The light on Xiao Hui’s horn was still shining, so judging by where they came from, the item they were looking for was still ahead. If they continued forward, they would get closer and closer. But after quite some time, Xiao Hui still didn’t move. Only after Ling Chen had asked multiple times did he finally show some kind of resolution and moved forwards. After slowly moving five meters, he stopped firmly once again, unmoving.

Ling Chen was getting doubtful; he took large strides until he stood right in front of Xiao Hui.

Shudder...

The moment he finished walking, the earth started shaking beneath him, as if there was an earthquake starting out of

nowhere. The quiet Xiao Hui let out a long howl, all the roots of his hair stood on end and lowered his body till it almost touched the ground... It was only when they were in a situation of grave danger that Xiao Hui would have let out this warning sound.

“Ah!!” The shaking ground made Tian Tian call out in alarm. She jogged to Ling Chen in fear, and grasped his arm with both her hands.

Ling Chen took two steps and stopped walking, because an extremely strong aura was pressing against his body. This aura was strong and dangerous, much more so than even the Zephyr Bird he had previously fought. He didn't even know how many times stronger this thing was.

Following the source of this aura, Ling Chen quickly turned and looked to the right.

The shaking on the ground was getting stronger, it felt as if the entire ranges were shaking. The source of this formidable aura, was at the bottom of that low hill. Ling Chen stared directly at the hill, and his pupil unexpectedly flashed repeatedly.

With the mountain shaking, it was stretching out the rocks bit by bit. Soon enough there were rocks tumbling down and even trees that were uprooted. The middle of the mountain stretched out higher and higher and both Ling Chen and Tian Tian became dumbfounded, saying nothing as an indescribable body slowly rose up.

“Gi... Giant!!”

That’s right! To their surprise it was a giant! A giant that came out from the mountain range... no, a better description would be that the mountain ranges were formed because it was asleep.

Its whole body was made up of rocks, every part including the forehead, limbs, body and every muscle was made from rock. There was only one exception, the big eye that was on his forehead... exactly like the Rock Devils.

Before the mountain ranges had an altitude of approximately 50 meters, but when this giant stood up, it was at least 100 meters. Although this distance didn’t look long on a horizontal scale, but when measured in height, it was an extraordinary value. Ling Chen pulled his head back as far as he could and still couldn’t see a complete picture of the giant.

Supporting its body below was its two column-like legs that looked like pillars from the sky and the length and width of the arms were by no means less than the legs themselves. For comparison, if Tian Tian and his bodies were added together, they couldn’t even compare to the giant’s smallest finger.

Ling Chen’s mouth was left wide open; it hadn’t been closed for a while. This was definitely the biggest living thing he had ever seen, it was so big that it had surpassed everything he had imagined. In facing this rock giant, without even talking about its strong aura, its mere size commanded such authority that any human would have been completely paralyzed, unwilling to even lay a single finger on it.

Chapter 377 - Mountain Giant!

Ling Chen now understood why Xiao Hui was reluctant to continue forwards. The first time it was because of the 5 Rock Devils and Rock Devil King. But the second time was because he could sense an even greater danger – which was the awakening of this Rock Giant.

Obviously, the Rock Devil King was the protector of the area which Ling Chen had just destroyed. The step he just took, crossed into the domain of this Rock Giant and made it regain consciousness. Now, its incomparable size towered before Ling Chen.

“B...b...b... its so big, wh... what is this...” Tian Tian was so scared she was trembling, unable to speak. This Giant even made Ling Chen scared, let alone Tian Tian.

“Lets... get... out... of... here...”

There was a loud sound of a thunderclap that could be heard from the sky, which sounded like a loud bell by their ears. Ling Chen’s whole body felt really uncomfortable and Tian Tian’s face went pale.

That sound, it came from the Rock Giant! To their surprise it could make human sounds.

At the same time the Giant also started moving, slowly lifting its right foot and moved it towards Ling Chen and Tian Tian’s

location, stepping with immense force. “Waaaaaaa!” The sky suddenly went dark as the Rock Giant’s head covered the rays of light as it drew closer. Tian Tian called out in alarm and tightly held onto Ling Chen’s body. Ling Chen clenched his teeth, he didn’t spend any time thinking, grabbing Xiao Hui with one hand and holding onto Tian Tian’s waist with the other, loudly exclaiming, “Hold onto me!”

“Broken Shadow!”

Ling Chen wildly dashed away like lightning while grabbing onto Tian Tian and Xiao Hui, travelling tens of meters in an instant.

Boom!!!!

The ground shook, making Ling Chen nearly lose balance as he continued dashing. Hearing the earsplitting sound, Ling Chen turned his head to find a cloud of dust in the air and the Giant’s foot on the ground which split the earth around it. He couldn’t help but gasp in a breath of cold air.

Could it be that this what Qian Gun Gun labelled on the map as “A formidable natural soul”?

This motherf was way too crazy!!

This kind of overpowered... how could players even deal with this? With one casual step, you’d be crushed to death!!

“Xiao Hui, give me its information!!” Ling Chen frantically continued to dash around while yelling loudly. Behind him, the Giant hadn’t stopped moving and continued forwards. Its footsteps were very slow, but just one step covered tens of meters of distance. If Ling Chen didn’t have Broken Shadow, it would have been impossible to get away from it.

Judging from Xiao Hui’s response, the item that he sensed... was definitely an orb that he had to obtain. That Rock Giant was clearly the protector of that region, preventing anyone from entering the area... which also meant, ‘if you cannot defeat or trap this Giant, then you shouldn’t even think about progressing forwards.’

Xiao Hui’s eyes glittered lightly, and all the information about the Rock Giant immediately appeared in Ling Chens’s mind.

[Mountain Giant]: Category: Soul, Grade: Heaven’s End, LV33, HP: (Forehead and Body: 5,000,000 HP, Right arm: 1,500,000 HP, Left arm: 1,500,000 HP, Right leg: 2,000,000 HP, Left leg: 2,000,000 HP). At first it was just an ordinary mountain range in the nameless range. Trillions of years ago, an Earth God Titan died here, releasing its weak soul into the mountain range. After countless years this mountain range then transformed into the Mountain Rock Giant. With an unparalleled body size and incomparable strength, it could throw mountains and demolish the Earth. It slumbers in the centre of the nameless ranges, protecting what the Titan left behind. It will not permit anything from entering, and will ruthlessly destroy anyone who tries.

Talents: Completely immune to Earth attacks, immune to any status effects, immune to any stat drop effects and extremely high defense. 40% immunity to the wind element and all other attacks. Immune to knockback, knockdown and knockups. Cannot be stunned when attacked and its skills cannot be cancelled once cast.

Attack Skills:

Head and Body: 5,000,000 HP

[Light of Extermination]: A scary skill which involves the release of the old Titan spirit. It is cast every time the HP of the Head and Body drop by 1%, the soul of the Titan spirit will cover everything in a 100m radius. Any targets within the radius of any grade or level will have its HP and MP set to 1.

[Titan Ray]: The eye on its forehead fires a high density rock beam, which can turn a single target to ashes. The Rock beam's damage is 48,000 and it costs the Forehead and body 1% HP to cast it. There is no cast warning. Once it is locked onto a target, it is guaranteed to hit.

[Titan's Shield]: Whenever the Head and Body's HP drops 10%, the surface of the body will form a magic shield that will protect it from all physical and magical damage. This shield will disappear after 30 seconds.

[Titan's Anger]: When the Head and Body's HP drops below 30%, each part of the body will summon a Rock Devil and will

also increase in magic attack by 30% [Rock Devil Summon]: At a verbal command, a LV 30 2 Star Elite Rock Devil can be summoned anywhere within a 50 meter radius of its body. When the Head and Body HP drops below 95% it will summon two, when it drops below 90% it will summon four, when it drops to 85% it will spawn six and so on... By 5%, it will summon 38. There isn't a limit to how many Rock Devils can be alive at once. Left arm: 1,500,000 HP

[Titan's Hammer]: Hits the ground with the strength of the Titan, causing the ground to collapse. All targets in a 50 meter radius will be crushed by the debris. The initial damage is 32,000 with a 15% chance to stun for 2-3 seconds. It is obvious when this spell is about to be cast, but it is very fast and the range is huge. There is almost no chance of avoiding this skill. Cast Frequency: High

[Earth Prison]: Opens its massive hand, and fires 3 to 5 Earth Rays, if the Earth Rays hit, the target is locked in place for at least 10 seconds. The rays also deal 18,000 damage. It is obvious when this spell is about to be cast, but the rays move extremely quickly and thus is extremely difficult to avoid. Cast Frequency: High.

Right arm: 1,500,000 HP

[Petrifying Aura]: Release a large amount of thick earth smog, covering a 30m radius. The smog persists for 3 seconds and anything that touches the smog will reduce their physical defence to 0 and Earth resistance to 0 for 30 seconds. There is also a 30% chance that the target will be petrified for 3-5

seconds. No damage. Cast Frequency: High.

[Rock Spirit's Aura]: Absorbs the dust in the surrounding area, restoring its own health. Every 5 seconds it will regenerate 50,000 HP.

Left Leg: 2,000,000 HP

[Destructive Stomp]: The strength of the Titan gathers in the Leg and it stomps on the ground below ruthlessly. This causes a wide range of the ground to crack and shake in a 30 meter radius. This deals 15,000 physical damage and 15,000 earth damage. Cast Frequency: High

[Hatred Shield: 30% of all physical and magic damage is reflected back to the source.

Right Leg: 2,000,000 HP

[Sand and Stone Hurricane]: Dust and sand is raised everywhere in a 100 meter radius from itself, dealing 2000 damage per second. This severely impairs sight and movement and lasts for 10 seconds. During battle this will be cast every 20 seconds.

[Destructive Trample]: ... (same as the Left Leg)

Hidden Skill: [Earth God's Sigh]: Effect unknown, cast condition unknown.

Weakness: Very slow moving, weak against wind attacks (resistance against Wind element attacks -50%). You only need to destroy the Forehead and Body to kill it.

Ling Chen took a long time going through all the information about the Rock Giant. During that time, the fear in his heart increased more than a dozen times over.

LV33 Heaven End... Compared to the Heaven End that he faced in Forest of Bones, this one is so much stronger. If the Heaven End that he faced in the Forest of Bones was a low level Heaven End, then this Rock Giant was without a doubt a high level Heaven End... Because it harbors the spirit of a true God of Earth.

Compared to other living things, this Mountain Giant had a special attribute: Its legs, arms, body and head were all separate with their own HP values. But amongst these, the strongest was the Head and Body. The skill named 'Light Destroyer' could make everything within the skill range have 1 HP and MP. It was truly terrifying... Although the Head and Body's characteristics were remarkable, all its skills require the Head and Body to be damaged to activate them. In other words, if the Head and Body were not attacked, then it would not attack back.

If the Head and Body were killed, then the Mountain Giant would be killed as well. But once the Head is attacked then the feared Light Destroyer would be released and the Titan Shot would also start and summon more and more Rock Devils. All of this would be in addition to the attacks of the Arms and Legs. The conditions

were almost similar to hell.

But, even if you wanted to attack the Head and Body first, it would be impossible. The Leg of the Mountain Giant was tens of meters high, which means that the lowest part of the Body would be at least dozens of meters high and the Head at least hundreds of meters high. Even if a long-ranged attacker were here, they would still be unable to directly attack it.

But it wasn't only the Body, the Arms and Legs still had power that was terrifying. With such large attack range and damage, even if he was hit by just a random attack, he would be dead... in fact the damage would have been enough to kill him several times or even dozens of times over.

Chapter 378 - Desperate Struggle (1)

Because there were many players, they often used large numbers to crush Bosses. This worked for Lord Bosses and Celestial Bosses, but Heaven's End Grade Bosses were on a completely different level. No matter how many players: tens, hundreds, thousands, tens of thousands... even if an entire guild tried to take down a Heaven's End Grade Boss, it would be suicide. Any attack from the Mountain Giant would have resulted in waves of people dying. With this level of Attack Power, players would have been instantly blown to smithereens without a chance to retaliate.

With Ling Chen's current strength, it was possible for him to escape using the Lunar Scourge and Broken Shadow. However, resisting it, or even killing it, was simply a wild dream.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Mountain Giant continued to chase him. Every step it took caused an earthquake, and an indescribable pressure locked onto Ling Chen's body. The Mountain Giant was gigantic, and its aggro range was also quite far. It was even possible that its aggro range spanned across the entire Nameless Ridge.

Ling Chen guessed that this Mountain Giant was truly furious, and was determined to chase them out of the Nameless Ridge or destroy them. Back when he had killed that wave of Little Stone Golems, he had felt that there was something off about the atmosphere... now that he thought about it, it was as if the Mountain Giant was giving him a warning. Next were the Rock Devils and the Rock Devil King, which it summoned to stop him

and Tian Tian. However, he had destroyed all of them, and they had entered the region it was protecting. As such, it erupted into fury. The mountain ridge was filled with stones and countless trees, showing just how long it had been protecting this place for. When it awoke, its fury was no small matter...

“Ahhhh... it’s coming, it’s coming to get us, ahhhhh!!”

Although Ling Chen was able to increase the distance between them and the Mountain Giant using Broken Shadow, its body was simply too big. Looking back, he saw that it was already right behind them again, with its single eye staring at him. Tian Tian screamed the entire time while Ling Chen ran, and stuck to him while tightly closing her eyes. Ling Chen frowned, and continued to run. All he could do was run away at full speed. The Mountain Giant moved slowly, but each step spanned tens of metres. Even with Broken Shadow, it was difficult for Ling Chen to shake it off.

After the effects of Broken Shadow ended, Ling Chen had run through a mountain ridge. After using Broken Shadow again, he ran through a second mountain ridge. He once again turned around, and found that he still couldn’t see the Mountain Giant’s entire body-it was still right behind him. If he stopped, its next step would crush him and Tian Tian to bits.

Looking at Tian Tian, who had her eyes closed, Ling Chen could feel cold sweat running down his forehead and back... crap! He could only use Broken Shadow one more time. If the Mountain Giant’s aggro extended to all of the Nameless Ridge, being able to use Broken Shadow 10 times still wouldn’t be enough.

Being locked on to by the Mountain Giant's aggro prevented him from using teleport scrolls or other teleporting items, and neither did it allow him to safely log off. As soon as he couldn't use Broken Shadow anymore, the Mountain Giant would catch up to them, and both he and Tian Tian would have to face death.

Moreover...

Ling Chen did not use Broken Shadow anymore, but instead continued to run while looking back at the Mountain Giant's gigantic body. He frowned deeply, and gripped his fists.

If the Mountain Giant is really guarding a region that contains a Lunar Scourge Orb, then for Ruo Ruo, I must obtain it. No matter what obstacles there are, I'll overcome them all!

This Mountain Giant is too strong, though. In front of it, I'm just an ant. Can I only run away though? I've finally found where an orb is, but all I can do is run. How am I going to save Ruo Ruo?

Ling Chen slowly stopped running... in fact, running away was simply a fantasy now.

Using Broken Shadow twice had put about one kilometre in between them, but the pressure from the Mountain Giant hadn't reduced at all. It seemed that unless he exited the Nameless Ridge, or even went a further 10 kilometres away from it, the Mountain Giant wouldn't let him go. However, it had taken him and Tian Tian an entire day to walk from the Nameless Ridge's boundary to here. It would be impossible for them to escape in time.

Seeing how scared Tian Tian was, Ling Chen could only sigh inwardly... Tian Tian, if I knew that there would be a monster that even we couldn't outrun, I wouldn't have brought you out here from Peace Town. All I can do is give you a bit of time and hope. I hope that you can get far away while I block it.

Ling Chen didn't use his last Broken Shadow. Instead, he stopped in his tracks. Behind him, the Mountain Giant rapidly came closer, making the ground shake with each step. Ling Chen's expression became abnormally calm, without even a hint of nervousness or anxiousness. He called back Xiao Hui, put Tian Tian on the ground and then placed his hands onto her shoulders.

Feeling herself on the ground, Tian Tian opened her eyes, and looked at Ling Chen with trembling eyes, "Big brother, why did you stop? Ahhh it's right there!!"

Tian Tian immediately saw the massive Mountain Giant approaching, causing her to scream and jump onto Ling Chen's body as she trembled. Ling Chen looked into her eyes and said calmly and sincerely, "Tian Tian, listen carefully. Run in the direction from which we came here, and don't stop. When you feel the pressure that has been locked on to you disappear, stop running and use a teleport scroll to go back to Azure Dragon City. Got it?"

If he went to attack the Mountain Giant and drew all of its aggro onto himself, its aggro towards Tian Tian might be cancelled out. When, or if, that happened, she could teleport back to the Azure Dragon City and log off. This was the only thing he could do to

prevent both of them from dying.

No matter what, he had to at least protect Tian Tian!

“Then... Then what about big brother?” Tian Tian hesitantly asked, her face still full of fear.

“I’m going to run in a different direction.” Ling Chen said as he smiled, “If we run together, it’ll always be able to catch us. If we split up, it’ll only be able to catch one of us. This is the only thing we can do.”

“But... But...” Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Tian Tian felt that something was off.

“There’s no time to hesitate! If you don’t run, that rock giant is going to catch us, and we’ll both be crushed by it!” Ling Chen’s voice became slightly louder, “Before we came here, you promised that you would listen to me, and that you would run if I told you to run. If you don’t listen to me, I won’t bring you out next time. And also... you don’t need to worry about me. You know how fast I can run, so it definitely won’t be able to catch me. What are you still waiting for? Hurry and run!”

“I... I got it,” hearing Ling Chen’s voice grow louder, Tian Tian could only nod her head in fear, and took a few steps back, “Big brother, you need to run fast... don’t let it catch you.”

After speaking, Tian Tian started to run as fast as she could

towards where they had originally come from. Ling Chen stood still, silently watching as she ran away. When he finally couldn't see her anymore, he turned around, and looked at the Mountain Giant which was now just 300 metres away.

300 metres was just a few steps to the Mountain Giant.

Ling Chen's eyes narrowed. However, there wasn't even a hint of fear in them-instead, his gaze was sharp and piercing. A light flashed, and his 2 Celestial grade weapons appeared in his hands. The Evil God's Mask also covered his face.

“Zephyr!”

The soft whisper of wind sounded out, and a light green glow appeared on the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade. This Mountain Giant only had a single weakness, which was Wind elemental damage. The Zephyr Blade carried an additional skill, Zephyr, which was the best skill Ling Chen had against the Mountain Giant.

“Little master, you're really going to... fight it?” Ling Chen's stance caused Qi Yue to ask in shock. Ling Chen was an incredibly powerful player, and could easily kill Lord Bosses that were around his level, as well as defeat Celestial Bosses that were around his level... however, at LV20, challenging a LV33 Heaven's End Boss was like a frog trying to stop a car.

“I have no choice.” Ling Chen said in frustration, “Running is useless, so I might as well hit it a few times. At least this way, Tian

Tian will survive.”

Qi Yue could only sigh, “True... unless some sort of miracle happens, such as this rock giant getting struck to death by lightning, or it buries itself, there’s no chance of you guys getting away. Looks like this really is the only option. Little master, after you reach LV60, and your stats and skills have all developed, you might just have a chance at defeating it. However, right now, it’s simply impossible. Just don’t forget about the penalties for dying, little master.”

With the Heaven’s Jealousy debuff from the Lunar Scourge, if he died, his level would immediately return to LVo.

Ling Chen’s face twitched, and he gritted his teeth as he said, “The situation’s already like this; if you’re not going to say some encouraging words, can you at least not say such irritating words?! How do you know I’m definitely going to die... I might just kill it, for all you know!!

“Back then, at the Novice Village, I killed a LV10 Celestial Boss with normal equipment, new skills and LV5 stats. Now, I have 2 professions, 2 Celestial grade equipment and 4 of the Lunar Scourge Orbs. I refuse to believe that I have no chance at all at defeating this Heaven’s Grade Boss! It’s not over until it’s over!”

After saying that last sentence, Ling Chen’s expression became dark and savage, and tightly gripped the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade in his hands.

Boom!

The Mountain Giant came within 100 metres of him, and the shaking it caused on the ground caused Ling Chen's blood to boil. He took a deep breath, yelled out, and rushed towards the Mountain Giant... a monster that was thousands of times bigger than him.

Chapter 379 - Desperate Struggle (2)

“You think you’re invincible because you’re big? I’ll smash your legs, then cut off your hands, and then smash your head!!”

The Mountain Giant continuously forced Ling Chen into a corner, causing the flames of rage to surge out of his heart. He roared as he charged at the Mountain Giant, but no matter how much bravado he had, their difference in size was simply too vast—Ling Chen wasn’t even as big as one of its toes. Ling Chen and the Mountain Giant ran towards each other, and the distance between them shrank rapidly.

The Mountain Giant didn’t seem to care at all about the tiny human charging at it. Its right foot flashed with yellow light, and stomped onto the ground.

Boom!!

Dust filled the air, and rocks flew everywhere. A sandstorm surrounded the area within 100 metres of the Mountain Giant, turning the area into a world of chaotic sand and stones.

-2,000...

Ling Chen’s body stiffened upon seeing the massive damage figure above his head. He acted with his lightning fast reflexes, and drank a drop of Dew of Dawn. His nearly emptied-out HP bar immediately became full again, and a split second later, his HP almost dropped to zero again.

-2000, +5000, -2000, +5000, -2000, +5000.....

The red and green numbers alternated in appearing above Ling Chen's head. His HP fell and rose by the same numbers every time, but he never worried about it falling to 0.

“Sand and Stone Hurricane” was the only skill that Ling Chen could resist without dying. He had 2,343HP, and the Sand and Stone Hurricane dealt 2,000 Earth element damage per tick. As such, he could resist it for one second before dying. However, this didn't mean that the Sand and Stone Hurricane was a weak skill- not only did it do continuous damage for 10 seconds, it also obscured vision.

Even if Ling Chen used the best potions that he could buy from the Azure Dragon City, he would still be killed by the Sand and Stone Hurricane. Only with the Fairy Clan's Dew of Dawn, which recovered 5,000HP per second for 10 seconds, could he resist this skill, as it completely negated the damage from the Sand and Stone Hurricane. Moreover, if it wasn't for the water from the Fairy Fountain, which doubled his HP, the Dew of Dawn wouldn't have been able to save him.

Countless small stones smashed onto his body, causing him to almost lose balance. Yellow sand filled his vision, reducing his vision to 10 metres around him and making it incredibly difficult for him to see. Although the Dew of Dawn kept him alive, he was still in a predicament.

In all the chaos, a sense of pressure came towards him from above. It was the Mountain Giant's Destruction Stomp!

The Destruction Stomp caused damage with an AOE of 30 metres. The centre of the attack was where Ling Chen was. If he wanted to escape the 30 metre radius before the attack landed, he would have to use Broken Shadow.

However, Ling Chen looked up at the shadow descending towards him and did not move at all. He held the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade in front of him and maintained the "Zephyr" effect, seeming intent on counterattacking.

BOOM!!!!

The Mountain Giant's foot heavily descended, and the effect of the attack was as if a massive bomb had exploded, rocking the nearby mountain ridges. At this moment, the Mountain Giant suddenly drew its foot back, and bellowed in a deep voice. A red damage figure appeared above the Mountain Giant's foot.

-15,000.

Within the sand and stones, Ling Chen darted over like a fish in water, his weapons glimmering with green light as they relentlessly struck the Mountain Giant's right foot.

Bang bang bang bang!

-6120, -6088, -6111, -6091。

Four ear-piercing metallic sounds rang out, and four damage figures rose from the Mountain Giant's foot. The Sand and Stone Hurricane continued. It seemed to not only affect Ling Chen, but also the Mountain Giant as well. It was as if the Mountain Giant couldn't see Ling Chen anymore, and furiously stomped down with another Destruction Stomp.

This time, Ling Chen ran away as fast as he could. By the time the Mountain Giant's right foot had been lifted up, Ling Chen had only moved by about 5 or 6 metres. His body blurred, and charged away like a gale.

BOOM!!!

The ground once again shook, and Ling Chen stumbled, falling to the ground. Luckily, using his last Broken Shadow, he was able to avoid the second Destruction Stomp.

He had tanked the first Destruction Stomp with his Evil God's Mask. The eyes of the mask had glowed red, and let out a roar, reflecting the damage back at the Mountain Giant... the Evil God's Mask's power came from an Evil God-a true God. In this world, there was no damage that it couldn't reflect... even if the Mountain Giant's power also came from a true God.

The Destruction stomp dealt 15,000 Physical Damage and 15,000 Earth element Damage. The Mountain Giant was immune to Earth element Damage, so it only received the 15,000 Physical Damage.

Taking advantage of that rare opportunity, Ling Chen had finally been able to attack the Mountain Giant a few times. The Mountain Giant was of the Earth element, and had incredibly high Defence. Luckily, Ling Chen did not fear enemies with high Defence at all. Even if its Defence was twice as high, it wouldn't have mattered to him. His four Ling Tian Slashes all connected and dealt a significant amount of damage.

The Evil God's Mask had a ten second cooldown. As such, he could only choose to dodge the second Destruction Stomp. With the Destruction Stomp's range, it would be impossible for him to dodge it with his Movement Speed. Thus, he had been forced to use his final Broken Shadow.

However, it was worth it-he had been able to reflect the Mountain Giant's damage to itself, as well as slash it four times. While Ling Chen thought that, he quickly got up and looked behind him. The instant he looked over, he saw a yellow light flash in the Mountain Giant's right hand. Immediately, green numbers appeared above its body, arms, and legs.

+50,000!

The damage it had taken to its right leg was instantly recovered.

“.....”

“ ! @# ¥ %.....”

“What the fricking heck?!”

Ling Chen nearly spat out blood, and started cursing at the Mountain Giant. He had used the Evil God’s Mask to damage it, then took the opportunity to deal some attacks with his own weapons, and used his last Broken Shadow to escape... this sort of combo couldn’t be repeated, and he had taken great risks to damage the Mountain Giant...

And yet it had instantly recovered!

The Mountain Giant’s right hand didn’t have any attack skills. It only had an AOE debuff, as well as a skill that healed it for 50,000HP every five seconds.

Such a large body, such high HP, such damaging attacks... and such ridiculous regenerative abilities!

Do you have any shame?!

Are you even going to give me a chance at living?!

Where is the justice in this world?!

Which goddamn bastard designed this Boss?!

Boom! Boom!

The Mountain Giant walked over. In just two steps, its large right foot was once again above Ling Chen's head. Ling Chen didn't even think, and rushed away while he still had the Broken Shadow effects. A massive explosion erupted from behind him, and without even looking, Ling Chen knew that a crater had been smashed where he had just been. This time, Ling Chen didn't turn around, and rushed in the opposite direction Tian Tian had left in.

20 seconds passed, and the effects of Broken Shadow ended. Ling Chen returned his normal state, and behind him, the booms grew closer and closer.

Ling Chen gritted his teeth, and turned around, his eyes filled with a vicious look. He definitely wasn't going to outrun it, so why the hell was he running?! He might as well do his best to take it down with him!

Just like the first time, Ling Chen once again raised his weapons and charged towards the Mountain Giant. Again, when he came within 100 metres of the Mountain Giant, the Sand and Stone Hurricane activated, and Ling Chen drank the Dew of Dawn he had been preparing. He braved the stones flying into him, and the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade glowed with a green light.

Boom!

The Mountain Giant used the Destruction Stomp yet again with its right foot. This was because Ling Chen had deliberately rushed towards its right foot. The reason for this was because its left foot had an extremely disgusting skill which reflected 30% of all damage! Even if Ling Chen used his normal attacks, the damage

from the Sand and Stone Hurricane and the reflected damage would be enough to kill him.

-15,000!

The Evil God's Mask let out a roar, and the eyes of the mask flashed with a red light. The Mountain Giant's right leg was forced back, and the 15,000 Physical Damage was reflected back at it. Ling Chen once again smashed his Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade onto its right foot... although he knew that he couldn't damage it more than it could recover, he had no other options in the current situation.

At another place...

Tian Tian ran as fast as she could, and didn't look back. After running for a while, she saw a fairly tall mountain ridge. She didn't think any further, and continued to run until she was at the top. When she arrived at the top, she felt the pressure on her body disappear.

Because Ling Chen had drawn all of the aggro of the Mountain Giant, its aggro towards Tian Tian had disappeared.

She had finally regained her freedom, and could now return to the Azure Dragon City or safely log off. Tian Tian patted her chest and let out a sigh of relief. Suddenly, she heard an explosion from behind her, which sounded quite close. She turned around, and

saw the Mountain Giant surrounded by a hurricane of sand and small stones... and it was heavily stomping down with its right foot.

Tian Tian's mouth widened, and stared in shock, then yelled out, "Big brother!"

She rushed down the mountain ridge and ran towards the Mountain Giant, forgetting all the fear she had inside of her.

Chapter 380 - Elegy Of The Gods, Fury Of The Gods

Bang bang bang bang!

Seizing the opportunity, Ling Chen once again sent out four Ling Tian Slashes, and then retreated as the Mountain Giant's Destruction Stomp descended... the Mountain Giant had a lot of attack skills, but since the beginning, it had only used its right foot. The damage from the Sand and Stone Hurricane was negated by the Dew of Dawn, but Ling Chen had used Broken Shadow to escape from the first Destruction Stomp. So this time...

“Moon Shadow!”

Silver light burst out, freezing the giant foot that was just five metres above Ling Chen in place. The rest of the Mountain Giant's body was also affected, giving Ling Chen the chance to put some distance between himself and the giant. Five seconds later, he turned around to see the damage he had just dealt completely recovered. Although he had expected this to happen, his face still twitched in anger.

How the hell was he meant to fight this thing?!

Even bullying should have limits!

Just two skills, Destruction Stomp and Sand and Stone Hurricane, already made Ling Chen quite helpless. What was even

worse was that there were still skills that the Mountain Giant hadn't even used yet. Perhaps it thought that Ling Chen didn't qualify for it to use its other skills; simply stomping on him like an ant would be enough.

Moon Shadow's effects ended, and the Mountain Giant's Destruction Stomp landed on the ground, causing it to once again tremble. It then raised its foot and took a step... which spanned 50 metres. It was once again above Ling Chen's head. The distance Ling Chen had gained using Moon Shadow was but a step to the Mountain Giant.

This time, Ling Chen didn't have Broken Shadow, Moon Shadow was on cooldown, and the Evil God's Mask was nearly ready again. He was unable to escape from this Destruction Stomp, but he looked up and yelled, "It won't be that easy to kill me!"

Ling Chen raised his right hand, sending out a blinding light from the Lunar Scourge. Although Moon Flare couldn't damage the Mountain Giant, the bright light pierced into its eyes, causing it to roar in pain. As it turned its head, its body also shifted, causing the Destruction Stomp to land elsewhere. This allowed Ling Chen to survive once again, and though he wasn't hurt, he was sent flying by the shockwave. He landed and stabilised himself, then wiped his mouth as he coldly harrumphed... this time, he had even used the Moon Flare. The next time, he could use the Evil God's Mask, again, but what then?

Whoosh!!

The Sand and Stone Hurricane was activated again, surrounding

the Mountain Giant. Ling Chen immediately drank a Dew of Dawn... although he knew that his struggles would all be in vain, he didn't want to go down without a fight. This was a desire all creatures had, and it was especially strong for Ling Chen.

The Mountain Giant once again stepped towards him, and a simple Destruction Stomp that was filled with the aura of death descended towards him. The Destruction Stomp was reflected by the Evil God's Mask for the third time. This time, Ling Chen didn't have any chance to attack; instead, he could only sigh as he tried to increase the distance between the Mountain Giant and himself. He knew that he definitely wouldn't be able to survive the next attack. Just as an ant could run all it wanted, it simply couldn't survive being attacked by a human.

“Forget it, this is all I can do. Luckily, all of its aggro should be on me, so Tian Tian should be safe.” Although he was facing despair, he was relieved that he had at least protected Tian Tian. As for himself, getting back to where he was from LVO wouldn't be too difficult.

At this moment, a worried and familiar voice sounded in his ears...

“Big brother!! Big brother!!”

This voice caused Ling Chen to sharply turn his head, unable to believe his ears. He saw Tian Tian rushing towards him... as well as the Mountain Giant. Ling Chen stared in shock for a few moments, and roared, “Why did you come back?! Hurry up and run!!”

Ling Chen yelled so loudly that his voice became slightly hoarse. However, it was as if Tian Tian didn't hear him and couldn't see the Mountain Giant, and she continued to run towards him. Ling Chen gritted his teeth and charged over to Tian Tian. Just as he started to move, a large shadow and a familiar pressure fell on him.

The Mountain Giant was once again using its Destruction Stomp.

Ling Chen didn't look back. He knew that no matter what he did, he wouldn't be able to survive. Through the sand and stones, he could see Tian Tian getting closer and closer, and was about to reach the Sand and Storm Hurricane. With Tian Tian's low HP and Defence, she would be instantly killed.

“Don't come over here!!” Ling Chen yelled. He had been peacefully waiting for his death, but seeing Tian Tian coming over sent his emotions out of control. He simply couldn't understand why Tian Tian would run over! She had been so afraid before, and should be far, far away!

Just as he yelled out, Tian Tian entered the Sand and Stone Hurricane, and Ling Chen's body stopped. Above him, the Mountain Giant's foot began to descend towards him.

-2,000.

Ling Chen clearly saw the red damage figure above Tian Tian's head. Tian Tian's HP bar was instantly cleared, and a worried and

caring voice entered his ears, “Big brother... do your best...”

“Ding... your party member ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’ has died.”

The system announcement notifying him of Tian Tian’s death sounded in his ears. The comfort in knowing that Tian Tian was safe instantly vanished. Ling Chen felt like both hugging her and smacking her bottom, and asking her why she had come back.

In his hazy vision, Tian Tian slowly stood up. A white light shot out from her body into his, surrounding his body with a pure light.

“Ding... your party member ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’ has used her dying skill on you. You will receive invincibility for 60 seconds, and your Physical Attack Power, Magic Attack Power, Attack Speed, Movement Speed, Hit, Critical Hit Rate and Pierce Hit Rate will all be raised by 100%.”

This was the skill that Tian Tian could only use when she died- Elegy of the Gods! It allowed him to take no damage for 60 seconds, and buffed almost all of his stats!

It seemed that this battle wasn’t over. Ling Chen looked up and roared. The foot that was stepping down on him was gone, and within the booming sounds, the Mountain Giant actually retreated. Above each part of its body, massive damage figures rose up.

-2,500,000, -750,000, -750,000, -1,000,000, -1,000,000。

In his shock, another system announcement sounded out.

“Ding... your party member Tian Tian Tian Tian’s dying skill, ‘Fury of the Gods’ has activated. The ‘Mountain Giant’, which killed Tian Tian Tian Tian, will have its HP and MP reduced by 50%, and its level will be lowered by 3 levels.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

That’s right, the Mountain Giant lost half of its HP and MP in an instant. Moreover, it wasn’t just a single region—every part of its body now only had half of its HP and MP.

Its level also decreased from LV33 to LV30, and all of its stats were accordingly reduced.

It was as if Ling Chen was now in heaven, and the Mountain Giant was now in hell. All of this had happened because of Tian Tian’s death.

“Little master! This is an incredible opportunity! Its HP has gone down, and you’ve become invincible. With your strength, attacking nonstop for 1 minute... even this Mountain Giant will go down! As long as you can destroy its arms and legs in this 1 minute, little master will have a chance at victory!” Qi Yue shouted.

Ling Chen’s Physical Attack Damage was now at 2,418, and his Movement Speed was now 360. His Attack Speed was at 200, and

his Critical Chance rose to 100%. His Pierce Rate was already at 100%, meaning that every hit would have a Critical and Pierce!

Adding on his Heaven Wind Technique and Soul Sacrifice and other Attack Skills... being able to attack without worrying for 60 seconds...

He had absolute confidence in destroying this Mountain Giant!

Tian Tian's body disappeared in a white light. Looking at the holy and pure light around him, Ling Chen silently closed his eyes. Just as Qi Yue had said, this was an incredible opportunity—a miracle, even. It was a miracle given to him by Tian Tian's death.

Even if it was just for Tian Tian, he was determined to kill this Mountain Giant!

Because the Mountain Giant's head and body lost 50% of their HP suddenly, [Light of Destruction], [Titan Ray], [Titan's Shield] and [Rock Devil Summon] all activated simultaneously. A yellow light erupted from the Mountain Giant's chest, shooting in all directions. It passed through Ling Chen's body, but didn't deal any damage to him. The incredibly powerful Titan Ray shot out from the Mountain Giant's single eye, and also passed through Ling Chen's body, then buried dozens of metres into the ground. However, Ling Chen didn't feel a single thing... the white light around him seemed to have separated him from the rest of the world, and there was nothing that could damage him.

20 Rock Devils were simultaneously summoned, and they rushed

towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen didn't even glance at them, and silently did some calculations in his head. He raised the Zephyr Blade and dragged the Great Ravager, his face completely calm, as he charged towards the Mountain Giant's right leg. Ling Chen raised his weapons, activated Soul Sacrifice, and heavily smashed them into the Mountain Giant's leg.

-122,312, -122,398!

Two deafening explosions sounded out, bringing with them two deep-purple-coloured damage figures... both of which were six digits.

Chapter 381 - Broken Arms And Broken Legs

The two strikes were incredibly powerful, and the resulting sounds were deafening. Even the powerful Mountain Giant found it difficult to endure those strikes. The Mountain Giant howled, and suddenly raised its right foot and smashed it down. This Destruction Stomp was much faster and more savage than any of the previous ones. Evidently, after losing so much HP and being suddenly attacked completely enraged it.

BOOM!!

The earth cracked, and countless stones flew into the air. Ling Chen's body was also pushed back, but he was able to stand straight without losing his balance, and didn't lose any HP. As soon his right foot touched down onto the ground, he once again shot forwards, slashing the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager onto the Mountain Giant's foot.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

-122,400, -122,400, -122,354, -122,402, -122,330, -122,348.....

With Tian Tian's Elegy of the Gods, Ling Chen's Attack Power rose to incredible heights. His Attack Speed was also doubled, allowing him to attack twice with each hand per second... with two weapons, that meant he could attack four times in a second!

In one second, Ling Chen had attacked four times, dealing nearly 500,000 damage! Even Ling Chen felt chills when he saw those

awe-inspiring damage figures. He almost couldn't believe that it was him causing those damage figures to rise up.

This was the result of combining the Heaven Wind Technique, War God Technique, Zephyr, Soul Sacrifice and Elegy of the Gods... this sort of power was easily capable of destroying even the Mountain Giant!

After losing half of its HP, the Mountain Giant's leg still had 1,000,000HP remaining. With its decrease in level, the maximum HP of its leg also fell to 1,700,000HP. After another four rounds of attacks in just two seconds, in addition to the initial attacks, the Mountain Giant's right leg's HP quickly fell to 0.

“ROARRRR~~~~~~”

A monstrous roar came from above. The Mountain Giant raised its right leg again, and a crumbling noise sounded out as many cracks and fissures began to spread along its right leg...

Crack!

A fist-sized rock fell from the Mountain Giant's leg, smashing the ground near Ling Chen's feet.

That rock was like the first raindrop of a downpour. The next instant, countless rocks started to rain down... the Mountain Giant's fissured right leg completely broke down, showering the ground beneath it with rocks, which piled up into a small

mountain.

Ling Chen stared for a second before running. With his increased Movement Speed, he was able to travel quite far away in a short period of time. Otherwise, he would have been buried alive by the rocks.

Ling Chen never expected that such a thing would happen when he reduced the leg's HP to 0. Not only did the Mountain Giant have separate health for each body part, but it seemed that each body part was completely separated from other body parts. They could all attack individually, and be destroyed individually.

The Mountain Giant was unable to maintain its balance with its remaining left leg, and fell to its right. From Ling Chen's perspective, it looked as if a massive mountain had fallen over, and his eyes moved with the Mountain Giant.

BOOM!!!!

The moment the Mountain Giant fell to the ground, the surrounding 100 metres shook violently, and the nearest mountain had split in half. The shaking of the ground sent Ling Chen high into the air, and he was sent flying. The head-splitting booms caused his vision to temporarily darken, and he almost coughed up blood. It was as if a massive bomb had exploded right next to his feet. If it wasn't for his invincibility status, he would have died at least 10 times just from the shockwaves.

The boundless sand obscured his vision, and made it difficult for

him to breathe. He shook his head, and once again rushed up as he yelled, “I’m going to smash that other leg into rubble as well!!”

Ling Chen focused, then once again charged towards the Mountain Giant. Tian Tian’s sacrifice had activated Elogy of the Gods, and every second mattered. His Soul Sacrifice lasted for 20 seconds, and half of it had passed already. He couldn’t waste even a single second!!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Ling Chen rushed to the Mountain Giant’s left leg, and started to furiously attack it. Each attack brought about a deafening explosion, which was comparable to the sounds of the Mountain Giant attacking before. The Mountain Giant’s left leg reflected 30% of all damage, which was simply ridiculous. However, with the Elogy of the Gods, Ling Chen could attack without worrying. The Mountain Giant’s [Hatred Shield] was activated after each attack, but it was useless against Ling Chen.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

It took him five seconds to run over, and two seconds to destroy the Mountain Giant’s left leg... six Ling Tian Slashes dealt over 700,000 Damage, causing its left leg to also fall to oHP. Under such ferocious attacks, the [Rock Spirit’s Aura] which recovered 5,000HP per tick and had caused Ling Chen to furiously curse, was simply useless. The rate of recovery simply couldn’t match Ling Chen’s damage.

Crack!!

Cracks covered the Mountain Giant's left leg and left foot, and they soon crumbled.

The Mountain Giant's right and left legs had both been destroyed!

Soul Sacrifice's effects ended, and there were still 30 seconds left on the Elegy of the Gods. In this overpowered state, Ling Chen could destroy a leg in just a few seconds. However, because of how far he had to run, as well as being flung away, much of his time had been wasted. As Soul Sacrifice's effects disappeared, Ling Chen's Physical Attack Power fell by 400%.

However, the Elegy of the Gods was still active-Ling Chen turned his gaze to the Mountain Giant's left hand, and rushed over.

After losing both of its legs, the Mountain Giant howled furiously, and swung its right and left hands simultaneously. It raised its left hand, smashing down with a Titan's Hammer, and its right hand let out yellow smoke that covered a large area. Ling Chen ignored all of its attacks, and stood where he was, waiting for the Titan's Hammer. 10 or so Rock Devils also came over and attacked him which he paid no attention to at all.

Boom!

The Titan's Hammer landed, blasting Ling Chen away. He then

charged up, and rapidly sent Ling Tian Slashes into the Mountain Giant's left hand.

-24,480, -24,396, -24,450, -24,478.....

After the effects of Soul Sacrifice ended, Ling Chen's Attack Power went down drastically. However, although his Attack Power was only a quarter of what it had been with Soul Sacrifice, the damage he was dealing was still terrifying. With an Attack Speed of 200, he could still attack 4 times per second, dealing nearly 100,000 damage per second. The Mountain Giant's left hand's HP rapidly decreased, with the Rock Spirit's Aura could barely slow it down.

Titan's Hammer... Earth Prison... Petrifying Aura...

The furious Mountain Giant propped itself up, and rained down attacks with its left and right hands towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen was buffeted by rocks, blown away, sent flying, but was otherwise unaffected. He would always come sprinting back, causing large amounts of damage. The Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade, still covered by the green glow, were like the fangs of demons that were slowly devouring the Mountain Giant's lifeforce.

“Four Corners Star Formation!”

The Mountain Giant's left arm only had a sliver of HP left, and Ling Chen's final attack completely obliterated it as well as the 20 or so Rock Devils that had been desperately attacking him.

Bang bang bang bang bang...

-49,866, -49,828, -49,920.....

The Mountain Giant once again furiously roared. Now, its left and right legs, as well as left arm, had all become a pile of rocks. The Rock Devils caught in the Four Corners Star Formation were all blasted to smithereens.

“Ding... you have killed 20 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 1,200 Fame and 1,200SP.”

Hearing the system announcement, and seeing the broken rocks around him, Ling Chen raised his eyebrows in surprise. Those cute little Rock Devils had gifted him more than 1,000SP in an instant—that was incredibly profitable for him.

The Elegy of the Gods was about to wear off, and the light around him began to grow dimmer. The surroundings began to become more peaceful... this was because the Mountain Giant could no longer attack, as all of the body parts that could use attack skills had been destroyed.

Only when its head and body were directly attacked could it use its most extreme and powerful skill.

Its right hand's skills were the healing skill, 'Rock Spirit's Aura', and the 'Petrifying Aura'. That meant that as long as Ling Chen didn't attack its head or body, this Mountain Giant could only

release some smoke!

Ling Chen smirked, and took his time to walk over to the Mountain Giant's right hand. He used the last few seconds of the Elogy of the Gods to attack the right hand, and its recovery of 50,000HP per 5 seconds simply couldn't stand up to his near 100,000 damage per second.

Finally, the white glow around Ling Chen's body dissipated. Tian Tian's miraculous Elogy of the Gods vanished, and the Mountain Giant's right arm crumbled... the Mountain Giant was left only with its head and body.

Chapter 382 - Earth God's Sigh

The 'crippled' Mountain Giant was only half as tall as it was before. Ling Chen returned to his original state, and huffed as he stared at the defeated Mountain Giant in front of it... the first time he had seen the Mountain Giant, all he could think of was running away. However, he soon found that running away was simply a fantasy, and that the only thing he could do was save Tian Tian. From the beginning, he had never expected or even dared to imagine that he could reduce the Mountain Giant to such a state. The Mountain Giant was simply too powerful, and no matter how strong he was, he just didn't have the right to fight with it.

Everything had changed because of Tian Tian's... miraculous power. That power allowed him to destroy the Mountain Giant's legs and arms, leaving it with just its body and head.

However, the Mountain Giant could still use its Light of Extermination, which would reduce his HP and MP to 1, as well as its "Titan Ray", which was guaranteed to hit, and dealt the most damage out of all of its skills. Moreover, it could still summon Rock Devils... all of which would be LV30 2 Star Elite Bosses.

And now, the Ling Chen had lost the effects of the Elegy of the Gods. As soon as the Mountain Giant activated its Titan Ray, it would be enough to kill him tens of times. After being affected by the Light of Extermination, even being touched by a Rock Devil would be enough to kill him.

Before the Mountain Giant's right arm had been destroyed, its main body had been healed by the Rock Spirit's Aura back up to

3,100,000HP. After having its level lowered, its body's maximum HP was reduced to 4,500,000HP. Currently, it had 69% of its maximum HP. That meant if Ling Chen kept attacking it, before its HP fell to 0, it would be able to use the Light of Extermination 68 times, the Titan Ray 68 times and the summoning skill 13 times... allowing it to summon 338 Rock Devils.

Ling Chen stared at the Mountain Giant's body, and the Mountain Giant's single eye stared back at him. Neither of them attacked... after remaining like this for 10 or so seconds, Ling Chen coldly laughed and rushed over, sending a wave of Ling Tian Slashes into the Mountain Giant.

Bang bang bang bang...

-6,120, -6,108, -12,244.....

After losing Soul Sacrifice and the Elegy of the Gods, Ling Chen's Attack Power greatly plummeted. However, the Mountain Giant could no longer recover its HP, and its HP quickly dropped down to 68%...

A low roar sounded from above, and a yellow light soundlessly exploded out of the Mountain Giant's chest, enveloping the surrounding 100 metres... the Light of Extermination was a skill that was cast instantly, giving its enemies no chance to retaliate or evade. At the same time, the Mountain Giant's single eye turned yellow, and a yellow ray pierced through the air, shooting towards Ling Chen's body.

The moment the yellow light covered him, Ling Chen felt his chest tighten, and his HP and MP were instantly lowered to 1. Almost immediately afterwards, the yellow ray shot straight towards him... the Titan Ray was the Mountain Giant's most overpowered skill. Once it was locked on to a target, it was guaranteed to hit. No matter how much evasion one had, or how fast they were, they wouldn't be able to avoid it. Furthermore, it was used right after the Light of Extermination was casted, meaning that it would result in a guaranteed kill!

This was unless there was something that could cancel out the damage from the Titan Ray.

Woosh!

Ling Chen heard something that sounded like the space being torn, and the Titan Ray smashed into his head. Even if he was at full health, he would have been unable to survive such an attack, let alone when he only had 1HP... however, he had the Evil God's Mask.

With this mask that contained the Evil God's spirit and power, he would never have to worry about being insta-killed while it wasn't on cooldown.

Woosh!

The same sound sounded out as the Evil God's Mask's eyes flashed with a red glow, and the Titan Ray was reflected back into the Mountain Giant's eye. The Mountain Giant's head swayed, but

because the Titan Ray dealt Earth element damage, it wasn't injured by it.

Ling Chen smirked. There was nothing he needed to worry about anymore. After drinking a blue potion to recover his MP, and waiting 8 seconds, he unleashed another round of attacks onto the Mountain Giant.

Bang bang bang bang bang...

The Mountain Giant's HP fell rapidly. After a few rounds of attacks, its HP fell from 68% to 67%. It once again activated the Light of Extermination and Titan Ray, and the Evil God's Mask refreshed just in time... again, Ling Chen was not injured at all. He replenished his MP, waited for the Evil God's Mask's cooldown to expire, then once again went to attack...

The Light of Extermination could never kill someone, and the Titan Ray was completely negated by the Evil God's Mask. Ling Chen alternated between attacking and waiting, and effortlessly cut down the Heaven's End grade Boss. Its HP fell from 67% to 66%, then 65%... When using the Light of Extermination and Titan Ray, the Mountain Giant also spawned 14 Rock Devils, which rushed towards Ling Chen.

This was quite a deadly combo. After being affected by the Light of Extermination, even if a player immediately used potions to recover, it would be difficult to deal with the crowd of 2 Star Elites that came charging over.

It was a pity that in front of Ling Chen, there was not much of a difference between these 2 Star Elite Bosses and the Bucktoothed Rabbits from the Novice Village. He drank a green potion and a purple potion, and ignored the Mountain Giant. He moved towards the Rock Devils, and started to attack them with the 'Zephyr' effect still activated on the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade. Every time he attacked, multiple Rock Devils would be insta-killed. They couldn't even get close, let alone attack. All of them were annihilated in just a few seconds.

“Ding... you have killed 14 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 840 Fame and 840 SP.”

Ling Chen grinned in joy. He ran towards the Mountain Giant as he smirked, saying, “Heh, thanks for the gift. Since you're being so generous, I won't refuse.”

After speaking, he went up and delivered another round of attacks.

Under Ling Chen's repeated assaults, the Mountain Giant's HP fell from 65%, to 64%, then eventually down to 60%. At that moment, 16 Rock Devils spawned, and were instantly destroyed by a casual sweep from Ling Chen. The system announcement caused him to laugh in happiness, and he became even more motivated.

“Ding... you have killed 16 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 960 Fame and 960 SP.”

1 minute later...

“Ding... you have killed 18 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 1080 Fame and 1080 SP.”

Yet another minute later...

“Ding... you have killed 20 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 1,200 Fame and 1,200 SP.”

Many minutes later...

“Ding... you have killed 30 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 1,800 Fame and 1,800 SP.”

“Ding... you have killed 38 LV30 2 Star Elite Rock Devils. You received 2,280 Fame and 2,280 SP.”

Every time the Mountain Giant's HP fell by 10%, a massive shield would form in front of it-Titan's Shield. The Titan's Shield was incredibly powerful, and negated all damage for 30 seconds. Tian Tian's Elogy of the Gods gave 60 seconds of invincibility, but the prerequisite was her dying. However, damage negation, in front of Ling Chen, was nothing. The Titan's Shield hovered in front of the Mountain Giant, but damage figures still continued to rise from the Mountain Giant.

10 minutes later, the Mountain Giant summoned its final wave of

Rock Devils, which had 38 of them. They were killed by Ling Chen with a single Four Corners Star Formation, and the Mountain Giant's HP fell below 5%. Over the course of the battle, it had summoned 13 waves of Rock Devils, with more and more spawning each time, for a total of 338 Rock Devils!

The number of Rock Devils wasn't the most significant point... the most significant point was that these 338 Rock Devils had given Ling Chen a whole 20,280SP! Adding on the wave that had been summoned when the Mountain Giant fell to 50% of its HP, he had received 21,480SP in total! This was more than he had ever obtained before! He also received 21,480 Fame, increasing his total fame to a whopping 35,993!

Every time the Mountain Giant summoned Rock Devils, Ling Chen felt overjoyed. He would spring upon them like a starved wolf, and although they were dangerous enemies summoned by the Mountain Giant, they were like delicious meals to him.

Where could he find such crowds of 2 Star Elites? It was incredibly difficult to find such a generous Boss!

Now that the Mountain Giant stopped spawning Rock Devils, it had lost all its worth in Ling Chen's eyes. Ling Chen steadied his emotions and said in a low voice, "It's time to send you off. I don't care what you are or where you came from. After hurting my Tian Tian... dying 100 times wouldn't be enough to make up for it!!"

Ling Chen's attacks landed furiously on the Mountain Giant, clearing out its remaining HP. Its HP fell from 5%, to 4%, to 3%, to 2%, to 1%...

The last attack was a ‘Thousand Kilogram Rend’, and Ling Chen smirked as he saw the Mountain Giant’s remaining HP fall to 0.

“Ding... you have killed the LV30 Heaven’s End grade Boss ‘Mountain Giant’. You received 30,000 Fame and 30,000SP.”

The system announcement telling him that he had killed the Mountain Giant sounded in Ling Chen’s ears. Killing a Heaven’s End grade Boss, and especially because it was the first kill, brought him monstrous rewards. Just the SP and Fame made it difficult for Ling Chen’s heart to remain calm. The Mountain Giant’s body started to crumble, and also turned into a large pile of rubble. A pile of glittering items and equipment also fell out from its head.

Even the worst item or equipment dropped by a Heaven’s End grade Boss was one of the best of the best items. No player in their right mind would not want it! Ling Chen took the risk of being crushed by falling rocks and rushed up... but just as he took a few steps, his body stiffened, and a massive sense of danger forced him to come to a stop.

“Sigh...” Whoosh...

A low sound that sounded like sighing rang out. At that moment, the fragmented Mountain Giant stopped crumbling, and like time had been turned back, the rocks on the ground began to fly back up. The countless cracks on its body also began to close... and this didn’t happen only for its body. Its broken arms and legs also began to be restored as the rocks flew towards their original

positions.

Ling Chen was flabbergasted, and quickly retreated. His eyes widened, and after staring for a few seconds, he quickly called out Xiao Hui. As Xiao Hui appeared, his eyes flashed, and information was sent into Ling Chen's mind.

[Earth God's Sigh]: Dying Skill. The dying Mountain Giant completely awakens the Titan's Remnant Spirit in its head, causing it to be reborn by the power of the Earth. Its grade remains the same, and its level increases to LV100. It gains incomparable power, as well as great intelligence. Can only be activated once.”

“.....”

“!!!!!!”

Chapter 383 - The True Mountain Giant

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV21, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV22...”

“Ding... you have levelled up to LV25...”

“Ding... your pet ‘Xiao Hui’ has levelled up to LV25, HP+200, MP+5, Defence+20.”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui’s Holy Spirit’s Aura has levelled up to LV6.”

“Ding.. your pet ‘Leng’Er’ has levelled up to LV25, MP+100, Magic Attack Power+20, Defence+10.”

After killing a Heaven’s End grade Boss that was 10 levels higher than him, Ling Chen received an astronomical amount of EXP, and his level jumped from LV20 to LV25. Xiao Hui and Leng’Er’s levels also rose with his to LV25. If it wasn’t for the Heaven’s Jealousy debuff, his level would have increased even more.

The continuous system announcements should have made him feel incredibly excited, however, he was currently filled with despair... As the rocks flew around in the air, the Mountain Giant

began to be restored and in just a few seconds, its arms and legs were almost whole again.

Once the Mountain Giant was completely restored, it stood up in front of Ling Chen, with not even a scratch on its body anymore. Moreover, the pressure that it emanated was hundreds, if not thousands, of times heavier than that of the original Mountain Giant.

The miracle that he had created with Tian Tian's power now vanished like smoke. The reborn Mountain Giant was not only restored to its peak condition, but was more powerful than before. A LV100 Heaven's End grade Boss... even if Tian Tian could give him another Elogy of the Gods, he would have no confidence in defeating it.

A pile of shining equipment and items were next to the reborn Mountain Giant's feet. Ling Chen however, dared not to move, and even forgot about their existences as a whole.

Ling Chen looked up, and stared at the colossal figure above him. The pressure that it radiated caused his forehead to be covered with cold sweat, and he gritted his teeth... Ling Chen wanted to throw the developer of this Boss and his or her family into a pig sty for them to be violated a thousand times! This 'Earth God's Sigh' had thrown him from heaven into hell.

Ling Chen felt himself being watched, and knew that this feeling came from the Mountain Giant. He deeply breathed in, and just as he was about to move, a deep voice sounded out.

“After sleeping for so many years, I’ve finally awoken. The sky and earth are still the same, but the demonic aura from the west has disappeared. Other than that, I can’t see any changes. Should I be happy, or sad?”

The voice sounded incredibly ancient, and it seemed that the Mountain Giant had experienced much over the years. Its tone contained no malice, only nostalgia. Ling Chen frowned, and looked up.

“I never thought that the one who would wake me up would be a human. I thought it would be that demon from the mountain ridges in the west. Human, young human, destroying my body was quite incredible. However, I have guarded this region for countless of years. Because of a very important reason, I cannot let any outsiders come in. As such, please leave. I don’t want to harm you.”

Before, the Mountain Giant had only told him to leave, and then started to mercilessly chase and attack him.

This reborn Mountain Giant not only didn’t attack him, but spoke eloquently like an elderly human. Ling Chen immediately understood something, and started to relax. He took a few steps back as he asked, “Mountain Giant... is this your true body?”

“Indeed,” The Mountain Giant replied, “My life contains the remnant power and spirit of the Earth God, Titan. In order to protect the remnant of the Earth God, I chose to put the core of my

life and power into a deep sleep. I used the excess energy I had absorbed over the years to create a separate body, which stood guard over this region in my place, and chased away outsiders. Now that that body has been destroyed, it means that a powerful intruder has appeared, so I awoke. Who knew that after so many years, it would be a human who woke me up.”

Ling Chen’s eyebrows shot up... the power of the original Mountain Giant was just some of the excess energy the true Mountain Giant had stored up over time. Its true power was simply terrifying!

“Then... what have you been guarding?” Ling Chen asked.

“I have been guarding a race. A proud, kind, pure and intelligent race. Their existence is a blessing to the Forgotten Continent, are even able to change the entire Forgotten Continent. However, they were treated unfairly and cruelly. This race can no longer be harmed, and must not disappear from the Forgotten Continent. As such, I must protect them. This is my answer. As for anything else, I cannot tell you, so please do not ask. Human, since you know the reason, please leave. I cannot sense any evil on you. Perhaps you entered here by accident, so I will not attack you. If you must continue on, I will be forced to take action.

Guarding... a race?

Wait! Could the palace that Su’Er mentioned belong to this race?

One of the Lunar Scourge’s orbs was within that palace!

Everything seemed to match up now. If Su'Er's information was correct, and if this Mountain Giant was guarding the race that owned the palace, then he definitely couldn't leave! For Shui Ruo, and for the Orb, he had to go in!

“Mountain Giant, I cannot leave. Although you're guarding this region, there's a reason why I must go in.” Ling Chen said while looking up.

“Oh?” The Mountain Giant's voice remained calm and amicable, “What is that reason?”

“I need to find something; something that is more important than my life. That thing is definitely in the region you're guarding,” Ling Chen did his best to speak as cordially as possible.

“Find something? Can you tell me what it is? Perhaps I can find it for you. I am connected with every grain of sand, every blade of grass and every tree here. If what you are looking for is in or on the ground, I can immediately find it.”

“It's an orb,” Ling Chen hesitated for a moment before continuing, “If I'm correct, that orb should be in the possession of the race you're guarding.”

The Mountain Giant fell silent, and replied after a few seconds, “If it's with them, then I cannot help you. I cannot allow you to go and find them, otherwise their existence may be exposed. Young human, please leave.”

Ling Chen frowned as he maintained his composure and said, “Mountain Giant, that thing is useless to anyone else, but it is incredibly important to me. I only want to obtain that thing, and I have no other motives. If I find the race you’re guarding, I swear that I won’t reveal any information about them! Moreover, you just said that you cannot sense any evil on me...”

“These reasons are not sufficient,” The Mountain Giant’s tone became a bit more serious, and it firmly rejected Ling Chen’s request, “Since a long time ago, they refused to interact with the outside world. If you go in, they will descend into panic and confusion, and a catastrophe may occur. As their guardian, I cannot allow such a thing to happen... oh?”

The Mountain Giant’s tone was incredibly resolute, cutting off any hope Ling Chen had. However, after speaking, it had made a curious and shocked sound. Ling Chen felt the pressure on his body decrease, and felt the Mountain Giant’s gaze shift. Ling Chen followed its gaze to the right... apart from the cracked ground, there was only Xiao Hui.

“Hoho, hohohoho...” The Mountain Giant suddenly laughed. This laugh sounded calm, and yet quite strange. It was as if the Mountain Giant had seen something that was pleasing to it. It once again spoke, “I think that there is no longer any reason for me to stop you. Perhaps you going in there will not bring them catastrophe, but rather an ‘opportunity’. This place does not suit them. If they hadn’t hidden themselves away for the past 10,000 years, the Forgotten Continent would be much more beautiful. They need an opportunity; a reason that can convince them to rejoin the world.”

The Mountain Giant's attitude towards Ling Chen going in completely changed. Not only did it not stop him, but encouraged him to go in. Ling Chen's mind spun, and thought about what it had just said, then asked, "Then tell me, where is that race ridden?"

"Your companion will lead you in the correct direction-you just need to follow him. I am going to continue my slumber; maybe when I awaken again, that race will have returned to their former glory, and will no longer need my protection, hohohoho..."

As the Mountain Giant laughed, a yellow light covered its body, and it disappeared. At the same time, a place in the distance also flashed with the same yellow light. Within the light, a large mountain appeared, blending in with all of the other mountain ridges.

After everything had settled down, Ling Chen looked at Xiao Hui thoughtfully. He then rushed towards the spoils of war that the original Mountain Giant had dropped... when talking to the Mountain Giant, he had been itching to kick it away, so that he could finally get his hands on these exquisite items and equipment!

Chapter 384 - Twilight Spear

Challenging a Celestial grade Boss was already the limit for most players while Heaven's End grade Bosses were usually undefeatable existences to players. This was something that all players, over the 100 years of history of virtual games, knew to be common sense. However, if a player really was able to defeat a Heaven's End grade Boss, the rewards they received would be inconceivable.

This was much more so for a solo kill.

Ling Chen had achieved this. Although, by himself, it was impossible to take down the Mountain Giant, he had been able to defeat it with Tian Tian's support. The Elegy of the Gods, which buffed Ling Chen, and Fury of the Gods, which took away half of the Mountain Giant's HP and MP, as well as reduced its level by three, were given by Tian Tian, but she had died. As such, Ling Chen had been awarded a solo kill, and the corresponding rewards. In total, he had received over 50,000 Fame and SP from the Mountain Giant... this was a truly astronomical figure that could cause any player to stare in shock. For a normal player, it would be impossible for them to earn this much Fame and SP in years of playing.

Moreover, there was also a pile of exquisite items and equipment.

Ling Chen ran over to his spoils of war as fast as he could. There were about 3,000 gold coins glittering on the ground, which Ling Chen got Xiao Hui to pick up. Swallowing his saliva, he walked over to the equipment and items. The first piece of equipment was a spear shining with golden light. This golden light carried an air

of nobility and dignity, making the golden light from the gold coins seem dull in comparison. The aura it emanated was like that of a king, which made it natural that Ling Chen would notice it first.

Ling Chen picked it up. The spear was 2 metres long, and was far taller than Ling Chen when placed upright. It was icy cold in his hands, and incredibly heavy. But the moment after he touched it, the golden light disappeared, and the heaviness of the spear decreased by half, becoming quite light... as if it was submitting to Ling Chen. After all, the Mountain Giant had been defeated by Ling Chen, which resulted in its appearance. When weapons reached a certain grade, they would start to develop a bit of sentience. As such, if anyone apart from Ling Chen tried to use it, even if they were a higher level than Ling Chen, it would not necessarily submit to them.

The light and heaviness disappeared, but the coldness and aura of nobility remained. The aura this spear emanated was far more powerful and sharp than that of the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager. Ling Chen gripped it with both hands, and held it across him, his eyes trembling. Could this spear be... be...

“Ding... you have obtained the Heaven’s End grade weapon [Twilight]. This equipment ranks second in the China Region Equipment Rankings, do you wish to hide your personal information?”

Heaven’s End grade... although Ling Chen somewhat expected it, he simply couldn’t calm down after hearing the system announcement. That’s right, this was a Heaven’s End grade

weapon!

Ling Chen hurriedly replied to the system announcement. On the Equipment Rankings, the Twilight Spear was ranked above all other equipment, second only to the Evil God's Mask. He then hastily went to look at its stats.

[Twilight]: Type: Spear, Grade: Heaven's End, Equipment Requirements: Melee professions above LV30, Fame above 2,000 and approved of by Twilight. It was originally a normal spear that was abandoned in the Nameless Ridge. After absorbing Titan's spirit's power, as well as Earth element energy, it gained some sentience. It has incredible piercing abilities, and can even tear space.

Stats: Physical Attack Power+360, Strength+30, Constitution+20, Agility+25, Pierce Rate+15%, adds a 7% chance of attacks adding 3 seconds of 'Petrify' debuff.

Special effects: Parry Level: 14, when parrying, or if your attack is parried, your next attack will be guaranteed to Pierce.

Bonus Skills:

[Wild Sand]: Releases the Earth element energy in the Twilight Spear, turning all damage dealt into Earth element damage. Can be activated or cancelled at will.

[Moment of Elegance]: Releases a cold wave of energy that instantly carries the user to pierce towards any direction, heavily injuring all those it hits. The piercing energy activates and attacks instantly, leaving only a ray of light. Unless destroyed, it cannot pierce through physical obstacles. The distance can be controlled to be within 5 to 15 metres, and deals 300% damage, as well as has a 100% chance of adding 3 seconds of Blindness. Costs 120MP, Cooldown Time: 10 seconds.

What an awesome Heaven's End grade weapon! Ling Chen held the Twilight Spear in his hands as his heart beat rapidly. The Evil God's Mask was given to him by Xiao Feng Chen, and the Twilight Spear was the first Heaven's End grade equipment that he had earned! It was more powerful than even the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager combined! Just the 75 stat points that it gave could make any player's eyeballs pop out of their sockets.

Moreover, it gave two bonus skills, the strongest of which was definitely the 'Moment of Elegance' skill. In Ling Chen's eyes, it was simply overpowered! Although it was not as powerful as the Thousand Kilogram Rend that dealt 500% damage, it dealt damage in a straight line and instantly teleported both the spear and himself in any direction! And it even had a 100% chance of causing Blindness, which could cause an enemy to immediately fall into confusion. What was even more broken was that its cooldown time was just 10 seconds!

Ling Chen marvelled at the spear in his hands... as expected from a Heaven's End grade weapon!

Ling Chen was currently LV25. His Item Manipulation Technique

was only LV4, so he still could not equip this Twilight Spear. As such, Ling Chen did not even hesitate as he spent 3,600SP on levelling up the Item Manipulation Technique.

“Ding... your skill [Item Manipulation Technique] has risen to LV5.”

[Item Manipulation Technique]: Current Level: LV5, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV6: 5000. Ancient battle technique, after practice equipment that surpasses your current level can be equipped. Effect: Ignores any piece of equipment's level requirement by 5 levels.

And thus, Ling Chen could equip LV30 equipment at LV25. Ling Chen smirked, and equipped the Twilight Spear, then looked at his stats.

The appearance of the Twilight Spear meant the replacement of the Zephyr Blade. However, Ling Chen didn't want to give the Zephyr Blade to anyone else-the 'Zephyr' effect that the Zephyr Blade gave was much too useful. It had been instrumental in Ling Chen's killing of the Mountain Giant.

As Ling Chen swung the Twilight Spear around, it let out a golden glow. Ling Chen eyes grew serious, and he pointed the Twilight Spear in front of him. Without any casting time, a 'swish' sounded out, and Ling Chen appeared 10 metres high in the air. In his original position was an afterimage that was still disappearing.

Ling Chen landed on the ground and laughed joyously. This sort of skill that allowed him to teleport in any direction and distance, as well as dealt a large amount of damage and caused Blindness was incredibly versatile. It could be used to insta-kill Magic professions, or to save his life. It could be used to evade, engage, escape, ambush, incredibly effectively.

The pleasant surprises the Mountain Giant brought to Ling Chen weren't just limited to the Twilight Spear however. After playing around with it for a while, he put it away, and grinned as he looked at the other equipment.

[Titan's Embrace]: Type: Full Body Armour, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: Melee professions above LV30, Fame above 2,000. A mysterious Armour that contains a very small portion of Titan's spirit. Gives the wearer powerful Defensive abilities.

Stats: Defense+210, Strength+30, Constitution+42, Earth element Resistance+15%, Immunity to Petrification and Defense Reduction.

Bonus Skill:

[Sands of Fury]: 2% chance of activating when being attacked. Causes 2,000-3,000 Earth element damage to the attacker.

That's right! A Celestial grade piece of equipment! And it was Full

Body Armour, which replaced both Upper and Lower Armour. It was a type of Armour he had never even seen before.

Ling Chen immediately unequipped the Dark Chest Plate and Purple Crystal Armour, and equipped the Titan's Embrace. Immediately, his stats once again rose. His HP was now 2,953, just short of 3,000.

The only piece of equipment that had emitted the Heaven's End grade light was the Twilight Spear. However, it was not just the Titan's Embrace that radiated the Celestial grade light.

[Twilight Bracelet]: Type: Lunar Chain, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: None. A high quality Lunar Chain that contains dense Earth element energy. It releases a glow similar to the light at twilight. Can equip energy crystals of any level, and energy orbs below Heaven's End grade. Maximum number of crystals or orbs that can be socketed: 5.

The Twilight Bracelet was covered by a warm glow, and was quite small. It was quite suitable for females to wear. Ling Chen didn't forget how the Gold Lunar Chain had caused such a sensation and uproar at the auction, and the astronomical amount of money it had sold for. If this Celestial grade Lunar Chain was shown to the public, it would create even more of a scene.

However, no matter how powerful a Lunar Chain was, it wouldn't be able to compare to the Lunar Scourge. What he needed least right now was a Lunar Chain.

The rest of the equipment were Gold and Silver grade, none of which were suitable for Ling Chen. But Ling Chen didn't feel annoyed or disappointed; to be able to receive a Heaven's End grade weapon and 2 Celestial grade equipment already made him feel ecstatic. In fact, even if he only received the Twilight Spear, he would have been satisfied.

Chapter 385 - Gold Token

There were seven Gold grade equipment and 12 Silver grade equipment in total. The lowest grade of equipment that the Mountain Giant dropped was Silver. Ling Chen picked each of the equipment up, and soon he came to an orb radiating a golden light.

[Wild Sand Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Heaven's End, Attribute: Earth. Effects: Earth element Resistance+55%.

Ling Chen couldn't hide the surprise on his face... this was a Heaven's End grade energy orb! The Mountain Giant had not only given him a Heaven's End grade weapon, but a Heaven's End grade energy orb as well!

This was a defensive energy orb, which gave him 55% Resistance against Earth element damage. Ling Chen didn't even think as he socketed it onto the Lunar Scourge, instantly boosting his Earth element Resistance to 70%! This was a terrifying number-if any player or monster attacked him with Earth element damage, more than two-thirds of it would be negated! This Wild Sand Orb was a nightmare for Earth element users. An Earth Magician would probably cry when they saw the damage they dealt to Ling Chen.

After socketing the Wild Sand Orb, there was only an earthen-yellow scroll left on the ground, which Ling Chen quickly picked up.

[Skill Scroll-Titan's Shield]: Use the skill 'Titan's Shield', which creates a thick shield in front of you, negating all damage for 30 seconds. Can only be used once, and will disappear after use.

It wasn't a Hidden Profession Scroll or a Skill Learning Scroll, but a single use scroll that allowed him to use one of the Mountain Giant's skills. Ling Chen was overjoyed to find that it was the Titan's Shield-the skill that gave 30 seconds of invincibility!

What did 30 seconds of invincibility mean? The reason Ling Chen was able to defeat the Mountain Giant was because the Elegy of the Gods gave him 60 seconds of invincibility. In key moments, the Titan's Shield could save his life, and create miracles like what had just happened.

Ling Chen carefully put it away. Suddenly a golden glow caught his eye... right under where the scroll was, there was a gold token. It had been completely covered by the scroll before, which was why he didn't notice it until now.

Ling Chen picked up the gold token. It seemed to be made out of solid gold, and was just small enough to be comfortably held in his hand. On the front was engraved the word "command."

Command?

This shape, and the word "command"... could it be a Guild Creation Token?

No... Ling Chen frowned. Ling Chen had obtained more than one Guild Creation Token, and although the shape was similar, Guild Creation Tokens were made of wood and were black.

Wait... could this be...?

Ling Chen suddenly thought of something, and immediately looked at its information...

When Ling Chen saw the name of this gold token, his eyes widened, and he stared at the token for a while. He simply couldn't believe what it was!

Ling Chen had only heard of this token before, but had never seen or obtained one. Within the virtual world, as the average level of players increased, Guild Creation Tokens became a commodity. In some games, there would be hundreds of thousands of guilds, both large and small. However, the gold token that Ling Chen was holding was something that would only spawn once in a Region! That's right, even if there were billions of players, there would only be one of this token. It was countless times more valuable than a Guild Creation Token!

Only incredibly powerful Bosses, Celestial grade and above, had a low chance of dropping this token. As soon as this token appeared, the entire Region would be sent into an uproar. This uproar would be incomparable to the one the first Guild Creation Token had created.

It was far more valuable than all the other equipment and items the Mountain Giant had dropped, even the Twilight Spear.

And now, this token was in Ling Chen's hands.

"Is this the heavens' will?" Ling Chen muttered to himself as he gripped the gold token. This sort of item, which usually only appeared in the late stages of the game, had actually been obtained by him so early on. He was holding it in his hand, but he simply couldn't believe it.

But then again, the Mountain Giant was indeed Heaven's End grade, and was qualified to drop it.

It's a bit too early though... or is my luck really that great?

However... Ling Chen looked down at the token in his hand... Since I've obtained it, perhaps it really is heavens' will. I won't let it fall into anyone else's hands. Although I've decided to put all of my efforts into reviving Shui Ruo, I haven't given up on Heart's Dream.

Long Tian Yun, just you wait. The pain you caused to me 12 years ago; the suffering I went through in 'heaven' and 'hell' for 6 years, the pain of separating from Dia Wu and Shui Ruo... I haven't forgotten about any of that for even a second! After Ruo Ruo wakes up again, I will return all of that to you with interest! I will make you lose your riches, power and dignity... everything. But don't you worry, I won't take away your life. I'll continue to let you live in agony every day!

Ling Chen subconsciously clenched his fists. This gold token made him think of many possibilities, and also caused the boundless hatred in him to awaken. It took him some time to calm himself down, and he put the gold token away. Ling Chen put away his spoils of war from the Mountain Giant, and a system announcement sounded in his ears.

“Ding... you are the first player in Mystic Moon to kill a Heaven’s End grade Boss. You received the rewards: Fame+10,000, gold coins+10,000, SP+10,000, unique item ‘Heaven Slayer Insignia’.

Heaven Slayer Insignia: Type: Insignia, Grade: None, Equipment Requirements: cannot be transferred. A mysterious insignia with an unknown history. Awarded to the first player who kills a Heaven’s End grade Boss by themselves. Does not give any bonus stats. Legends say that it can open an ancient ruins that has been sealed.

A small, golden insignia floated down from the sky and landed into Ling Chen’s hand. It was about as big as a ping pong ball, and emitted a golden light. Ling Chen felt that it looked familiar, and suddenly remembered something. He took out a similarly-sized silver insignia... the [Celestial Slayer Insignia](#).

[TLN: The original translator translated it as ‘Consonance Insignia’].

The Celestial Slayer Insignia was awarded to him when he killed the Greedy Giant Toad, for being the first player to kill a Celestial

grade Boss. This Heaven Slayer Insignia had been awarded to him for being the first to kill a Heaven's End grade Boss. They were about the same size and had almost the same description. Although neither of them gave any bonus stats, they could be used to open a sealed ancient ruins.

“Could it be that they open the same ancient ruins? Maybe it requires 2 Insignias to open. But where are these ‘ancient ruins’?”

The Insignias mentioned an ‘ancient ruins’, but never said where they were, which made Ling Chen feel slightly annoyed. He put the 2 Insignias together, and hoped that his luck would be good enough to find those ancient ruins someday.

Ling Chen's harvest was especially abundant, and there was nothing blocking him anymore. The Mountain Giant had said some ambiguous things, then left. It seemed that it was encouraging him to go and find that mysterious race.

Although Ling Chen was incredibly curious as to what the race was, he didn't go in, and instead logged off.

After returning to the real world, Ling Chen opened his eyes, and smelled food being cooked. These days, Tian Tian had been adamant to cook breakfast, lunch and dinner for them. With her hard work, and Ling Chen's masterful guidance, Tian Tian's food now not only looked good, but also tasted good... especially the ones she liked to eat.

Dinner was already ready, and Ling Chen saw Tian Tian sitting at

the table, cupping her face with her hands as she waited for him. Ling Chen couldn't help but smile, and rushed over, picking Tian Tian up. He kissed her on the cheek as he yelled, "Tian Tian! I won! I beat that Mountain Giant! And I levelled up 5 times in a row!"

"Really?" Tian Tian's mouth widened. Defeating that terrifying monster was simply inconceivable. She immediately started to happily laugh as she touched the place Ling Chen had kissed, "Wow wow wow! Big brother's so strong! I can't believe you beat such a big and powerful monster! Big brother's awesome!"

Tian Tian didn't know the full story, and so Ling Chen shook his head as he smiled, "No, it's not me who's strong, but Tian Tian. If it wasn't for Tian Tian, I definitely wouldn't have been able to defeat it. It was all because of you."

"Ahahaha, no way, it was obviously big brother who defeated it," Tian Tian said as she giggled.

Ling Chen put Tian Tian down and tapped her nose as he became more serious, "However... although you helped me quite a bit, you broke our promise! I told you to run, so why did you come back?! And you even died, how am I..."

"Ahhhh I got it, I got it. I know what I did was wrong, I won't do it again... big brother, hurry and eat, otherwise your food will get cold," Tian Tian knew that Ling Chen would say all of this, so she quickly cut him off as she placed a pair of chopsticks into his hand.

Ling Chen stopped speaking, and holding the chopsticks, he looked at Tian Tian who was filling his bowl for him. Seeing this scene, a warm feeling spread throughout his heart. Back then, Tian Tian had only been a burden to him. He had wanted to send Tian Tian off so he and Ruo Ruo could enjoy their two-person world. However, she had become part of his world, becoming more and more important to him. After Shui Ruo left, he didn't feel too lonely because of Tian Tian, even the pain in his heart began to fade day by day. And now, he almost couldn't imagine what it would be like if he had never met Tian Tian, or if Tian Tian had left as well.

Chapter 386 - The Mysterious Race

After putting Tian Tian to bed, Ling Chen once again returned to the Mystic Moon world. Very soon, he arrived at where he had first met the Mountain Giant.

To his left was the incredibly steep and tall mountain, and to his right was the mountain the Mountain Giant had transformed into. However, this time, the Mountain Giant would no longer stop him—it wasn't even releasing any of its pressure, and seemed to be in a very deep sleep.

Ling Chen looked around him. There were only these two mountains in the Nameless Ridge's Central District. Everywhere else was flat ground, without even much grass. There were no traces of this 'mysterious race'. Ling Chen called out Xiao Hui, saying, "Xiao Hui, have a look around for a hidden entrance."

As soon as Xiao Hui appeared, his horn glowed with a grey light. There was not any danger here, so Xiao Hui casually ran forwards, with Ling Chen following behind him. Ling Chen had complete faith in Xiao Hui.

Xiao Hui ran in front of the extremely tall mountain, and stopped in front of it, wagging his tail. He looked up towards the ridiculously sloped mountain face, and his horn glowed a bit brighter. Ling Chen stopped beside him asking, "Is there a hidden entrance on this mountain?"

"Awoo..." Xiao Hui replied. He walked around in front of the

mountain, continuously sniffing. Ling Chen also stepped closer and knocked on the mountain, seeing if there was anything hidden.

After sniffing around for a long time, Xiao Hui stopped at a place facing south. After looking up and staring at the mountain for a few moments, he took a few steps back, then ran forwards and jumped, using his horn to ram into a certain rock.

Xiao Hui's horn crashed into the rock with a 'bang', and the horn glowed... Xiao Hui was sent flying back, and landed on his back. He got back up with great difficulty, and used his right paw to rub his horn as he cried out with a "wuu wuu" sound.

"Are you alright, Xiao Hui? Is there something hidden here?" Ling Chen reached out to the place that Xiao Hui had hit. Suddenly, clacking sounds, like those of gears turning, sounded out. The mountain face in front of them suddenly started to move. A portion of the mountain face that was five meters in height and length started to move upwards, then to the side.

A tunnel started to appear in front of Ling Chen.

After half a minute, the mountain face stopped moving, and a five meter wide tunnel appeared.

This was... a hidden mechanism?

Ling Chen was blown away. The noise from just then was

probably the sound of metal gears grinding together, which meant that a mechanism controlled the opening of this tunnel. A five meter high, five meter wide and half a meter thick stone slab would be incredibly heavy, and yet this mechanism could move it. Moreover, the entrance was perfectly camouflaged; before it moved, it was impossible to tell that this stone slab was actually a large door. This sort of thing was definitely not something created by nature; to be able to create such a thing in this world was astonishing.

Ling Chen did not immediately enter the tunnel. Perhaps there was danger inside, so he had to make sufficient preparations.

After killing hundreds of Rock Devils and the Mountain Giant, as well as receiving the reward from the first kill of a Heaven's End grade Boss, Ling Chen had 58,350SP. This was enough to level up many of his skills. Before entering this mysterious tunnel, he decided to level up his skills, so as to increase his survivability.

Although 50,000 was quite a lot of SP, Ling Chen's skills were all extremely powerful, and all required much SP to level up. Lucky Hand required 300,000SP to level up and Soul Demise required 100,000SP. The 50,000SP he had was simply not enough to level them up. After thinking for a while, Ling Chen levelled up Ling Tian Slash and Ling Tian Burst, the 2 skills he used the most, to their max level.

[Ling Tian Slash]: LV7 – 1,600→ LV8 – 2,200→ LV9 – 3,000→ LV10。

[Ling Tian Burst]: LV6 – 1,000→ LV7 – 1,600→ LV8 – 2,200→ LV9 - 3000→ LV10。

[Ling Tian Slash]: Current level: LV10, max level. Automatically upgrades after upgrading profession. Using the weapon in the hand to attack a single enemy, suddenly releasing the strength of the battle soul the instant you hit the enemy dealing devastating damage towards the opponent. Effect: Single target attack, damage is equal to 300% of regular attacks, critical hit chance+18%, 7% chance of stunning for 3-5 seconds, very big chance of pushing back the target, MP Consumption: 25, Cooldown Time: 0.

[Ling Tian Burst]: Current Level: LV10, max level. Automatically upgrades after upgrading profession. Pouring the battle soul power into the weapon and instantly releasing it when slashing forward creates a power explosion in a small area, attacking all targets in a 7 meter area in front, damage is equal to 200% of regular attacks, MP Consumption: 35, Cooldown Time: 0.

After spending 14,600SP, and hearing continuous system announcements, both the Ling Tian Slash and Ling Tian Burst became max level. Their damage, range, and effects all reached their maximum. Soon after, the Four Corners Star Formation also rose to max level.

Four Corners Star Formation: LV6 – 2,200→ LV7 – 3,000→ LV8 – 4000→ LV9 – 5,200→ LV10。

Four Corners Star Formation: Current Level: LV10, max level. Automatically upgrades after upgrading profession. Using the power of the battle soul to sweep the surroundings, it instantly forms a formation of destruction in a 15 meter radius around yourself. The raging battle soul power will deal devastating damage towards all targets within the formation. Damage is equal to 800% of regular damage, Critical Hit Rate+20%, 100% chance to trigger knock back, MP Consumption: 160, Cooldown Time: 60 seconds.

The max levelled Four Corners Star Formation had a range of 15 metres, and dealt an astonishing 800% damage. As expected from one of the most powerful techniques of the War God. Levelling the Four Corners Star Formation to max level took 14,400SP, leaving Ling Chen with 29,350SP. Ling Chen spent the rest of it on some of his most powerful Passive Abilities.

[Heaven Wind Technique]: LV5 – 5,000→ LV6

[War God Technique]: LV4 – 5,000→ LV5 – 6,600→ LV6

[Feng Chen Technique]: LV3 – 2,600→ LV4 – 3,800→ LV5 - 5000→ LV6

[Heaven Wind Technique]: Current Level: LV6, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV7: 6,600SP. Ancient battle technique, after practice it can greatly increase the ability to control any weapon. Effect: When using any weapon, damage dealt is

increased by 30%. Effect does not stack with other weapon proficiency skills.

[War God Technique]: Current Level: LV6, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV7: 8,500SP. Powerful battle technique originating from War God's soul force, after practise can greatly increase personal attack strength permanently. Effect: Strength increases by $6 * X$ points, physical attack strength increased by $14 * X$ (X =Current level).

[Feng Chen Technique]: Current level: LV6, Highest level: LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV7: 6,600. A technique unique to the Feng Chen Sect. After cultivating, the user's body will become incredibly light and nimble, as if they are riding on a gentle breeze. It is said that when cultivated to the peak, the user can use the winds to walk in the sky and even falling from a cliff will not hurt them at all. Effects: Movement Speed+60, Evasion+60%, can decrease falling speed by up to 60% (can be controlled).

Apart from the Item Manipulation Technique, all of Ling Chen's techniques reached LV6. Now, he only had 1,350SP remaining. Currently, all of Ling Chen's attack skills were max level, and all of his Passive Abilities were nearing max level. All of this was because of the gifts from the Heaven's End grade Boss. After making sure he was completely prepared, Ling Chen stepped into the tunnel.

Tap. Tap. Tap.

Ling Chen's footsteps in the tunnel sounded incredibly clear. It was extremely quiet, and apart from himself, there were no other creatures. Ling Chen looked back towards the entrance. There were thick metal strips criss-crossing, and hundreds of metal gears. They were arranged in an incredibly complex manner, and Ling Chen felt his head spinning as he looked at them. Waves of shock crashed within his heart... these metal strips and gears opened that incredibly heavy stone door? That stone door was thousands of kilograms heavy. Who made such a mechanism...

After quietly walking forwards for a while, Ling Chen saw two lights hanging from the stone walls. The lights were spherical, and were about as large as fists. They emitted a warm light that felt comfortable to look at. Ling Chen stared at the lights for a while... the feeling they gave him was like the lights of the real world!

At least, he had never seen these types of lights in the Azure Dragon City, or at any other towns or cities. Under the illumination from the lights, Ling Chen found that the walls of the tunnel were incredibly smooth, as if every inch of them had been carefully polished. Evidently, this tunnel was created by the race that lived here. Normally, these sorts of constructions would be quite crude, with the walls uneven and left unadorned. However, this tunnel was extremely wide, and made with extremely high craftsmanship. Much time and effort had been spent in constructing it.

Who had built this tunnel? What sort of beings were the members of this mysterious race?

The tunnel was extremely long, and after walking for a hundred metres or so, the tunnel widened up and merged with a stone room. The stone room was round, and was 30 metres in diameter. Within the stone room were many rotating mechanisms... that's right, they were all mechanisms! They were all spinning and rotating while letting out calm whirring and buzzing sounds.

“So it's them. The only ones who can make mechanisms that other people can't even comprehend is that race.”

While Ling Chen stared in shock, Qi Yue spoke, her voice full of sympathy, “Back then, this race was forced into hiding, and has never appeared ever since. They've been more or less forgotten by the rest of the races, and some even believed that they went extinct. Who would have thought that little master would find them... over these past 10,000 years, if this race didn't go into hiding, with their talent, wisdom and skills, the technology in Mystic Moon would have been thousands of years more advanced.”

Chapter 387 - The Dwarf Clan

Hearing Qi Yue's words, Ling Chen did not reply. After looking around for a bit, he continued onwards. Combined with what the Mountain Giant had said previously, he could pretty much confirm what race this was. However, this sort of coincidence was a bit too shocking. Not too long ago, he had found the Fairy Clan, which had been sealed off from the rest of the world. And now, he had entered the place that this race had hidden themselves away in... it was simply too coincidental. They had been in hiding for more than 10,000 years, and no one had found them. And yet, he had discovered them in such a short period of time.

Ling Chen walked onwards, and after walking for a while, he saw another stone room. It was different to the previous one, as it was completely silent inside, and there were 10 or so stone tables, as well as stone chairs. As Ling Chen walked forwards, a figure rushed over to him.

This figure looked like a human, but he was incredibly short – only 1 metre tall. He was quite skinny, had messy hair, but had a large head. His skin was black, and was wearing incredibly tattered clothing. His body emanated a burnt smell.

Ling Chen nearly bumped into this small person. They stared at each other in surprise, and after a few seconds, the small person suddenly jumped back and yelled out, “Y-y-you!! Who are you? How did you get in? Save me! There are outsiders here!”

Although this person was quite short, but his voice was incredibly loud. This shout brought about effects like a wasp's nest

being poked, and the peaceful stone room erupted into chaos. 10 or so small people rushed in, standing at a distance from Ling Chen. They stared at him with shock and fright, as if he was some sort of monster... this race had hidden themselves away for over 10,000 years, so they had probably had never seen an outsider before. To them, Ling Chen was like an alien.

Seeing these 10 or so people, the tallest of whom was 1.2 metres tall, and had black skin and tough-looking bodies, Ling Chen's suspicions were confirmed.

“I knew it! It's the Dwarves! What a great surprise.” Qi Yue's words reinforced what Ling Chen was already thinking. However, she immediately muttered, “Weird, the Dwarves are short, but they shouldn't be so skinny and weak-looking. Rather, they should be muscular and well-built. Why do they look like this?”

From the legends Ling Chen heard, the Dwarves were an intelligent, proud, kind and hardworking race. They were talented blacksmiths and engineers, and were unparalleled in forging. However, it was because of their intelligence and talents that they had suffered catastrophes... in the ancient eras, when the Mystic Moon was in an age of war, equipment was often an important factor in determining victory. Large numbers of Dwarves were kidnapped and imprisoned, and forced to create weapons and equipment... and the humans had taken part in this as well. Because the Dwarves lacked any talent in fighting, they were powerless in front of humans. Human greed and wickedness was openly displayed to the Dwarves...

In the end, the Dwarf Clan decided to hide themselves away in a

place that no one else could find. The wickedness of the humans was a key factor in making this decision. Because they seemingly disappeared from the world, all these years, no Mysterious God grade equipment, or even Heaven's End grade equipment appeared in the world.

“Hello, Dwarf friends.” Naturally, Ling Chen was the one to greet them first. He greeted them as if he was casually saying hello to an acquaintance.

Ling Chen had been shocked when discovering the Dwarves, but the Dwarves were absolutely terrified upon seeing Ling Chen. After all these years, no outsiders had set foot in this place before.

“He's... a human!!” One of the Dwarves yelled as he pointed at Ling Chen.

The rest of the Dwarves all gaped. The person in front of them looked exactly like the records of humans they had. Their records said that humans were incredibly greedy and evil creatures, and had wanted to enslave the entire Dwarf Clan. And now, a human had entered their safe haven, meaning that their peaceful days were over! They were all doomed! The Dwarf Clan was going to be sent into chaos once again.

“Humans... humans have found us!” Another Dwarf yelled.

“Quick! Go and tell the Chief!” The Dwarves all picked up iron clubs, with fear and apprehension written all over their faces. Evidently, they weren't very confident in fighting, and didn't have

much experience either. Their actions were simply based on their natural instinct.

Ling Chen stood where he was, and did not get any closer. He had expected the Dwarves to react in this way-after living in peace for over 10,000 years, seeing an outsider was sure to send the entire clan into uproar. Just as he was wondering what he should do to calm them down, a loud and strong voice sounded out, “Everyone, don’t panic. He’s a visitor sent here by our guardian god.”

As soon as the voice sounded out, the rest of the Dwarves fell silent. The crowd parted, and an old Dwarf with white hair and beard, wearing a black robe and holding a walking stick walked in. While walking forwards, he observed Ling Chen calmly, not revealing any of the shock the other Dwarves had. The Dwarves all respectfully stood to the side as he passed by.

The elderly Dwarf stopped about 5 metres away from Ling Chen, saying, ‘Greetings, visitor from the outside world. I am the Dwarf Clan’s current Chief, Dilo. Although you came in uninvited, we still welcome you here.’

Although the Dwarf Chief’s hair was white, his eyes were clear and focused, and full of intelligence. Ling Chen nodded and politely replied, “Hello, Dwarf Chief Dilo. My name is Ling Tian. I apologise for disturbing your peace.”

“You are the first visitor we’ve had in 10,000 years. Since our guardian god allowed you to come here, I’m sure you don’t have any ill intentions.” Dilo calmly said.

The guardian god he was referring to was the Mountain Giant. So it seemed that the Dwarf Clan knew about the Mountain Giant, and the Mountain Giant had somehow told the Dwarf Chief about him. Thinking to here, Ling Chen said, “Dwarf friends, please don’t worry. I don’t have any ill intentions, and unless you all agree, I won’t tell anyone about you.”

Hearing that Ling Chen was a visitor sent by their “guardian god”, the worried Dwarves were able to relax a bit. Their trust in and reliance on the Mountain Giant was evident.

“Well then, human friend, why have you come here?” Dilo asked.

“I’m here to look for something.” Ling Chen truthfully replied.

“Look for something?” Dwarf Chief Dilo frowned, “What are you looking for?”

Ling Chen thought for a moment before replying, “An orb. I don’t know its name, but it’s within a palace here. If you can let me go there, I should be able to find it immediately.”

“I am sorry, visitor from the outside world, but I cannot fulfil your request.” Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Dwarf Chief Dilo immediately shook his head, “The palace is our Dwarf Clan’s holiest place. Our ancestors said that unless they are a close friend of our race, we cannot let any outsiders in. Moreover, all of the items in the palace are incredibly precious; even members of our race cannot casually take them away.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Just as Ling Chen was about to speak, Qi Yue suddenly spoke, “Hehe, little master, don’t worry. Let me tell you a secret about the Dwarf Clan.”

“What secret?”

“Does little master know... the two things the Dwarves love?”

“.....”

“One is forging. Every single Dwarf is obsessed with creating high level and high grade items. They have exceptional talent, but often lack high quality materials. If they had high quality materials, they would become delirious with joy, and forget about all their rules and morals. As long as they can obtain high quality materials and use them in their forging, the pleasure they receive is similar to what you humans receive from climaxing.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

After hearing Qi Yue’s words, Ling Chen knew what he should do. High quality materials... he had found quite a few materials because of Xiao Hui, but he wasn’t sure if they were high quality.

“Ahem,” Ling Chen cleared his throat as he sincerely said, “Chief

Dilo, don't worry, I won't force you to do anything. I came in full earnestness to become your Dwarf Clan's close friend."

As he spoke, Ling Chen reached into his bag and took out two stones.

The two stones were extremely beautiful, and let out rainbow coloured light. The instant Ling Chen took them out, all of the Dwarves stared at them, unable to shift their eyes away.

"This light... this feeling... this is... this is the Rainbow Agate! The Rainbow Agate that only appears in 1 of 300,000 normal Agate! This Agate can be used to make the world's most beautiful decorations and jewellery!" One of the Dwarves madly eyed the Rainbow Agate as he yelled with a voice full of passion.

This voice seemed to awaken something within all of the Dwarves, and they all rushed in front of Ling Chen, staring at the stones in his hands. Some Dwarves were even drooling, and even Dwarf Chief Dilo's eyes lit up.

Just a Rainbow Agate made them react like this? Ling Chen grinned. Out of all of the things Xiao Hui had found, the Rainbow Agate was probably of the least value. Ling Chen put away the Rainbow Agate, and took out the Spatial Stone that he had used to escape out of the Lunar Sky Hell with.

Woosh!

The moment Ling Chen took out the Spatial Stone, the Dwarves reacted as if they had been struck by lightning. These Dwarves who were geniuses at forging and recognised almost every material in the world instantly recognised what it was.

“Oh my god! A Spatial Stone! That’s a Spatial Stone!”

“That mysterious Spatial power, that delicious smell... that’s it! That’s the Spatial Stone I’ve been dreaming of! I actually got to see a real Spatial Stone!”

Seeing the Spatial Stone, all of the Dwarves became like little children, fighting to squeeze closer to it.

Ling Chen put away the Spatial Stone after a few seconds, then took out the Mysterious Red Sun Gold. The faint golden light shone into every Dwarf’s eyes.

It seemed as if time stopped. Every Dwarf’s eyes widened to comical proportions, and their eyeballs almost popped out of their sockets. Their gazes were filled with disbelief and shock, as well as madness.

“Mysterious... Mysterious Red Sun Gold!!”

The trembling voice came from Dwarf Chief Dilo. His entire body was shaking, and the trembling in his voice was obvious.

Hearing his voice, the Dwarves all went out of control.

One Dwarf charged over to Ling Chen with an incredible speed, and knelt in front of him. He hugged Ling Chen's legs as he cried out, "Mysterious Red Sun Gold! Mysterious Red Sun Gold!! If you give it to me to forge... I'll do anything for you. I'll serve you as my master!!"

"No! Human friend, give it to me, give it to me! My forging abilities are the best here... if you're willing to give that Mysterious Red Sun Gold to me, I'll use it to create any equipment for you for free. I'll even provide all of the other materials required... trust me!! You have to choose me..."

"If you're willing to let me forge it, I'll become your personal Blacksmith in future. I'll do anything you want..."

"Get out of the way, get out of the way... Ahhhh!! Human friend, my respect and awe towards you know no limits. If you're willing to let me forge that Mysterious Red Sun Gold, you'll be my father~~~"

Ling Chen: "!@#\$%....."

The Dwarves lost all of their self-control upon seeing the Mysterious Run Sun Gold. All of them were staring at him with delirious eyes. The Dwarves' obsession with high quality materials was far greater than he had expected.

"Shut up! All of you shut up! Do you have no shame? Stop embarrassing yourselves!" Dwarf Chief Dilo roared. After yelling

out FIVE times, the Dwarves finally calmed down, but they continued to stare fixatedly at the Mysterious Red Sun Gold in Ling Chen's hands.

After everyone settled down, Dwarf Chief Dilo walked up to Ling Chen, and looked at him intently, causing goosebumps to rise up on Ling Chen's skin. After a while, he finally spoke, "Friend! Human friend! You are indeed our Dwarf Clan's closest friend. If you want, you can enter the palace at any time... ahhh no, no, I'll take you right now."

Ling Chen, "....."

Chapter 388 - The Dwarves' Home

Integrity? What integrity? Did they feed it to the dogs or something?

Seeing the Dwarves trembling and drooling, Ling Chen wanted to yell at them... Where the hell was your integrity?!

Even the Dwarf Chief, who was originally the calmest, and looked hundreds of years old, was trembling as he came in front of Ling Chen. His small body leaned forwards by 30 degrees, and the burning look in his eyes was like a 30 year old virgin looking at a naked goddess.

Just a few minutes ago, these Dwarves were so scared that they probably had wanted to kick him out. Now, even if Ling Chen wanted to leave, they would probably beg him not to.

Seeing the Dwarves' reaction, Ling Chen couldn't find any words to say. It was just a piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold! Why were they overreacting so much?! You're Dwarves! The incredibly intelligent, talented and proud Dwarves!

“Visitor from the outside world... no, most esteemed visitor, ah, no, no, no, our closest friend, let me once again welcome you here. Your appearance has caused this dark place to become filled with light. Please excuse my rudeness from before. Please come with me; I'll immediately bring you to our holiest palace.”

As Dwarf Chief Dilo spoke, he turned and gestured with his arms,

inviting Ling Chen in. All of the Dwarves hurriedly made way for Ling Chen, and stared at him intently. It was as if they were worried that if they blinked, Ling Chen would disappear.

“Well... thank you, Dwarf Chief Dilo,” Ling Chen was finally able to say something as he started walking. He had come here to find an orb... on the bright side, the Dwarves throwing away their integrity for a few rocks was beneficial to him.

“You are our Dwarf Clan’s closest friend; please don’t be so courteous with us,” Dilo said with a smile.

Ling Chen’s body stiffened. He simply couldn’t feel comfortable with Dilo acting so shamelessly.

Dilo lead the way, and a large crowd of Dwarves followed behind them. As they walked, more and more Dwarves joined the throng... at first, they had been scared upon hearing that a human had entered. However, once they heard that he had brought Rainbow Agate, a Spatial Stone and Mysterious Red Sun Gold, all of them nearly went crazy, and immediately went to follow him.

After passing through a long tunnel, they reached a large set of stone doors.

Every 10 metres or so, there would be two lights on the walls, so they were never walking in darkness. There were two large stone doors that were a green-white colour, and were tightly closed. Ling Chen and Dilo walked to the front, and when they were three meters away, the stone doors automatically opened.

Holy crap, automatic doors?!

“Friend, please enter!”

After Ling Chen walked in, the doors closed, and the room they were in started to rise. Ling Chen suddenly realised...

What the fudge? It's an elevator!!

That's right, an elevator!

Of course, this world probably didn't use electricity, so the elevator probably wasn't powered by electricity. Although the elevator rose quite slowly initially, he didn't feel uncomfortable. As it continued to rise, it began to accelerate, and soon, Ling Chen couldn't even tell that they were rising. Even the noise from the machinery was barely audible... it was pretty much the same as the best elevators he had taken in the real world.

Moreover, this elevator was incredibly large. Apart from himself and Dwarf Chief Dilo, there were 40 other Dwarves. From the looks of it, having another 40 to 50 Dwarves in here would be no problem at all. Ling Chen couldn't help but wonder just what was powering such a massive elevator. And how did such small Dwarves create such a thing? It was simply incredible.

And furthermore, they had done it in such a hidden place.

After rising for a while, the ‘elevator’ stopped. Ling Chen roughly estimated how high up they were, and found that... they had risen by at least 300 metres!

Even in the real world, building an elevator that could rise by 300 metres was an incredible feat. Not only was it incredibly difficult to build, but designing it was difficult as well. Ling Chen simply couldn’t help but marvel at the Dwarves’ talents.

“Was this elevator created by your clan?” Ling Chen asked. As soon as he spoke, he felt like smacking himself... because to the Dwarves, it could seem like he was doubting their prowess in forging and engineering.

“Indeed,” Dilo did not seem offended at all, and instead smiled, “Our talents in forging and engineering are our treasure. Our capabilities far exceed what you have seen. If we weren’t stuck here... ai, let’s not talk about that. Welcome to our home.”

The doors of the elevator slowly opened... from Dilo’s sigh, Ling Chen could tell that the Dwarves didn’t seem to want to stay here. After all, although they were protected here, they were limited in what they could do.

After the stone doors opened, the scene that greeted Ling Chen’s eyes left him in a daze.

There was no need for lights, as it was incredibly bright outside. It was as if they had stepped into another world. A multitude of structures greeted Ling Chen’s eyes, and the scene continued as far

as the eye could see... it was an incredibly large place, and was almost equivalent to a small city!

The Dwarf houses were a bit smaller than human houses, and the styles were completely different too. Ling Chen looked around, and couldn't find any buildings or structures that were identical. Not only were they all beautiful, they were all meticulously constructed. Every single door and window had an air of elegance and beauty. Very soon, Ling Chen found that all of the structures here were made of stone... and only stone.

“This is our home. We're at the top of the tallest mountain. Back then, our ancestors painstakingly spent a long time in making the top of the mountain flat, so we could live here. As such, the materials we use are limited, and we can only make crude houses like these ones. I'm sure they're much inferior to what you humans have,” Dilo said embarrassedly.

So this was the top of the mountain next to the sleeping Mountain Giant! The Dwarves had been hiding here all along! They had the Mountain Giant guarding this region and the entrance was so well-concealed. No wonder they had never been found before.

Ling Chen shook his head, sincerely saying, “No, your houses are definitely much more beautiful than human houses. To be able to create such beautiful houses with only stone... only the Dwarf Clan could do such a thing.”

Hearing Ling Chen's heartfelt praises, the Dwarves all revealed expressions of pride and satisfaction, and their impression of Ling

Chen improved even more. Dwarves were quite proud, and liked to be praised. They liked to receive acknowledgement and validation from people who saw their works. Dilo chuckled and replied, “Friend, let’s go to the palace. However, keep in mind that there are many treasures left behind by our seniors. Those things are things that we worship. As such, unless we permit it, please do not touch anything. Apart from the things left behind by the ancestors, you can request to take away anything.”

“Alright, I definitely won’t touch anything,” Ling Chen nodded.

“Well then, welcome to our home.”

Ling Chen’s arrival caused a huge stir in the Dwarf Clan. The first Dwarves who had lived here had died long ago, but had left the command to never leave this place. As such, the Dwarves currently living there had never met any outsiders, so their shock was to be expected... however, when they heard that Ling Chen possessed a legendary Spatial Stone and Mysterious Red Sun Gold, they became 10 times more excited.

It could be said that the entire clan exploded into excitement.

While walking on the streets, crowds of Dwarves rushed over, following behind them, hoping that they would get to see the legendary Mysterious Red Sun Gold. Ling Chen could only sigh... the Dwarves’ obsession with high quality materials was simply incomprehensible.

In the end... there was a massive crowd of Dwarves, both male

and female, following Ling Chen around. There were toddlers, there were elderly Dwarves with walking sticks... as well as pregnant women.

This could be said to be the most momentous day for the Dwarves in thousands of years. Even Dwarf Chief Dilo couldn't gather this many Dwarves so quickly.

More and more Dwarves arrived, and countless burning gazes fell on Ling Chen's body. Ling Chen started to feel quite awkward... and even considered throwing out the Mysterious Red Sun Gold. If he did so, it was possible that the heavens and earth would be shaken, and rivers of blood would flow...

“Chief Dilo, how many Dwarves are there in total?” Ling Chen asked in a soft voice.

This question caused Dwarf Chief Dilo to look a bit dejected, “Right now, there are less than 30,000 Dwarves. Over the past few hundred years, our numbers have been on the decline. Every year, many Dwarves starve to death... ai, they all starved to death.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Ling Chen turned around and looked at the crowd behind him. The Dwarves were not only short, but were incredibly skinny. Most of them were only skin and bones; only their heads were quite large. From a distance, they looked like a wave of dolls with big heads. While he silently thought, he remembered what Qi Yue had said previously, ‘Weird, the Dwarves are short, but they

shouldn't be so skinny and weak-looking. Rather, they should be muscular and well-built. Why do they look like this?'

Chapter 389 - Sorrowful Palace

“We’re here. This is our palace, the holiest place to our clan.”

Dwarf Chief Dilo stopped in front of a pair of tightly closed stone doors.

The Dwarf Clan’s palace was not too large, and didn’t seem very magnificent. Upon arriving, Ling Chen noticed that the raucous crowd of Dwarves behind him became incredibly silent, and did not make any noise. Every Dwarf’s expression became quite heavy. It seemed that this really was the most holy place to the Dwarves.

Ling Chen did not call out Xiao Hui... Su’Er’s information, that there was a mysterious palace past the eerie mountain ridge in the east, had already been proven to be true. This meant that he could fully trust what Su’Er had said. As such, there was definitely an orb within this palace.

“Please enter.”

The palace’s stone doors were opened, and an incredibly old Dwarf, older than Dilo, walked out. He looked at Dilo, and calmly said, “Chief Dilo, you’ve come.” Just as he spoke, he saw Ling Chen, and he lost his composure as he yelled, “He... He is?!”

“Elder Dita, please don’t worry, he is a human, but he is a visitor sent here by our guardian god,” Dilo immediately explained. Although he was the Chief of the Dwarf Clan, he was incredibly respectful towards this Elder called Dita.

“What? H-Human? We’ve been discovered by humans... since the guardian god allowed him to come in, he probably can be trusted. However, even so, why did you bring him here?! This is our holiest place; we can’t let any outsiders enter,” Elder Dita said loudly.

“But...” Dwarf Chief Dido looked at Ling Chen, then walked up to Dita and said in a small voice, “He brought a legendary Spatial Stone... as well as the Mysterious Red Sun Gold that our ancestors spent their entire lives searching for.”

“What?!” Elder Dita, who was hunched over at a 60 degree angle, jumped up like a monkey, his old eyes staring at Ling Chen. His white beard and eyebrows trembled, and the look of suspicion in his eyes was instead replaced with one of fervour. He quickly walked forwards, and stood to the right of Ling Chen, as he smiled widely, “Esteemed visitor, please excuse my rudeness! This is our Dwarf Clan’s palace, and my job is to guard this palace. For you to come here is our honour. Please come in. If you need anything, please tell me. Oh, and also, although I guard this place, my forging abilities have never declined. Within the entire Dwarf Clan, there are less than three Dwarves whose skills are superior to mine. No matter what material it is, I can...”

“Ahem, ahem!” Dwarf Chief Dido coughed loudly, and cut Dita off as he took a step forward, “Wasting our visitor’s time is quite disrespectful. Friend, please follow me.”

Only Dwarf Chief Dido and Elder Dita went into the palace with Ling Chen. All of the other Dwarves could only wait outside.

Normally, Dwarves could not enter the palace without permission.

This palace was in the centre of the Dwarves' home, and looked like it had been there for a very long time. Although it looked quite ancient, it was not decrepit or dusty in the slightest. Within the palace, there were many display stands. On top of the display stands were weapons, equipment, and items. Knives, swords, spears, staffs, bows, daggers, heavy armour, light armour, decorations, jewellery... there was every type of equipment and item, some of which Ling Chen didn't even recognise.

“Within this palace are the most excellent works of our clan from the ancient times until now. Most of them are equipment. After all, forging is our life. For every Dwarf, having their works placed in here is the greatest honour they can receive,” Elder Dita explained, “These are the greatest works in the entire world.”

“Can I have a closer look?” Ling Chen asked. The Dwarves were the most talented beings at forging and engineering, and these were their best works over the ages... even the worst piece of equipment or item was bound to be amazing.

“Of course.” Dwarf Chief Dilo replied.

Ling Chen walked towards the right, and looked at the Machete that was closest to him:

[Ancient Moon Seven Star Machete]: Type: Double Handed Sword, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Warriors above

LV50. Forged by the Dwarf Dilulu 2,300 years ago. The Machete is made from fine iron that has been refined hundreds of times, combined with cold iron. It is shaped like a crescent moon, and has seven stars carved upon it. It is incredibly heavy and incredibly sharp, and can easily destroy wood and stone.

Stats: Physical Attack Power+410, Constitution+20, Agility-10, attacks have a chance of knocking back the enemy.

Ling Chen: “.....”

Ancient Moon Seven Star Machete... a LV50 weapon! This was the highest levelled weapon Ling Chen had seen in Mystic Moon. Its stats were quite high, as it was a LV50 Gold grade weapon.

But why was it a Gold grade weapon?!

The Dwarves were the most talented beings at forging, and were described to be gods of forging. If it wasn't for other beings wanting to exploit them for their heaven-defying talents, they wouldn't have had to hide away. The Dwarves had hidden away for over 10,000 years, and only the best works were kept in this palace...

So why were there Gold grade equipment in here?! What was going on? Gold grade equipment were valuable, but they shouldn't be in such a place!

No way! Someone must have put it here by accident. Ling Chen looked at the other equipment around it.

[Moon Fang Axe]: Type: Double Handed Axe, Grade: Gold...

[Clear Wind Splitting Water Sword]: Type: Single Handed Sword, Grade: Gold...

[Cloud Covering Hexagonal Whip]: Type: Whip, Grade: Gold...

[Dragon Abyss Battle Armour]: Type: Upper Armour, Grade: Gold...

.....

Ling Chen looked from left to right, top to bottom, and his face became more and more distraught. He looked through 70-80 pieces of equipment, but they were all Gold grade!

All of them were Gold grade! There was not a single Celestial grade equipment, much less Heaven's End grade.

Having so many Gold grade equipment in one place looked quite impressive. Any normal player would drool upon seeing such a sight. However, this was where all of the best works of the Dwarves were kept!

There was definitely something wrong! Ling Chen had initially

believed that with the Dwarves' prowess in forging, the worst equipment in here would be at least Celestial grade... and top tier Celestial grade equipment at that. Even if there weren't any Mysterious God grade equipment, there should be at least some Heaven's End grade equipment, right?! Ling Chen had thought that Celestial grade equipment could only barely make it in, and Gold grade equipment weren't even qualified to be in here... how could there be so many Gold grade equipment in here?

“These are... the best equipment here? Gold grade equipment?” Ling Chen knew that asking something like this could offend the Dwarves, but he simply couldn't help but ask.

Dwarf Chief Dido and Elder Dita looked at each other and bitterly laughed. Elder Dita nodded and sighed before saying, “Indeed. These are the best works of our Dwarf Clan in recent times. I know what you're feeling confused about. Although we've been hidden away for so long, there are still many legends about us in the Forgotten Continent. After all, our forging skills are not something that can be easily forgotten.

“Our ancestors have created many Heaven's End grade weapons before, as well as Mysterious God grade Weapons. The Mysterious God grade Weapons became many cities' Guardian Weapons... moreover, back then, our clan even created indestructible Saint Destroyer weapons. You know, most of the Saint Destroyer weapons in the Forgotten Continent were left behind by the True Gods in the ancient area. After the gods all died, no other creatures could create Saint Destroyer weapons... except our Dwarf Clan.”

Speaking to here, Dwarf Chief Dilo and Elder Dita smiled with

expressions of pride, and Elder Dita raised his head as his voice became more emotional, “Not only that, our ancestors even created a Forbidden Weapon that surpassed even the Saint Destroyer Weapons. This Forbidden Weapon became a powerful clan’s Guardian Weapon, and with it, even the Moon God Clan didn’t dare to attack them.

“Although much time has passed, our intelligence and pride haven’t decreased at all, and I’m sure we’re still remembered in the outside world. However, all of what I just talked about has become the past. Ai,” Elder Dita sighed dejectedly.

“Indeed, all of that has become the past, and will remain in the past,” Dwarf Chief Dilo also sighed. He looked around at the things in the palace as he said, “Our pride has become but a legend. Now, creating a Silver grade piece of equipment is something to be proud of. Creating a Gold grade piece of equipment can shake the entire clan.”

“But with your talent and intelligence, even if creating Gold grade equipment is difficult for normal Blacksmiths, surely it should be incredibly easy for Dwarves,” Ling Chen said, confused.

“Haha,” Dwarf Chief Dilo laughed grudgingly, “You’re right. Creating Gold grade equipment is something incredibly simple for us. However, we need materials. Even a world-class chef, if he only had grass and dirt, can’t create a dish that is fit for a world-class restaurant. This principle applies to us as well. In order to comply with our ancestors’ wishes, we have lived in this sealed world. However, this place only has stones, sand and dirt, as well as some trees and grass. How can we possibly create high grade

equipment?”

Ling Chen, “.....”

Dwarf Chief Dilo walked forwards and picked up a thin single handed sword as he disappointedly said, “This Coiling Dragon Shadow Sword was forged by me, and is my best work and my pride. I was overjoyed that it was placed in the palace. Do you know how long it took me to forge this Gold grade sword? Ai, 300 years, a whole 300 years. True forging takes very little time, but in order to create adequate materials, I had to refine countless stones... over the course of 300 years, I can't even remember how many I've refined. This Gold grade sword took up nearly half my life.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

At this moment, Ling Chen suddenly realised why the Dwarves had reacted in such a way when they saw the Rainbow Agate, Spatial Stone and Mysterious Red Sun Gold. That was why they had discarded all of their dignity and integrity.

To them, these things were things that they could normally only dream of.

After hiding themselves away, the Dwarves were safe, but their talents and bodies were locked in this small space. They could only use the materials that they could find on this mountain. As time passed, materials became harder and harder to find... in the end, this race that had once created Heaven's End grade, Mysterious

God grade, and even Saint Destroyer grade equipment had fallen so low that they took pride in Gold grade equipment.

Chapter 390 - The Dwarves' Mysterious God Grade Equipment

“Then why don't you leave this place? I'm sure your clan isn't happy to have to fall to such a state,” Ling Chen said.

“No! We definitely can't leave here!” Dilo and Dita yelled out simultaneously. Their reactions were much more intense than what Ling Chen had anticipated. Dwarf Chief Dilo seriously and earnestly said, “This was a command left behind by our ancestors. We can not disobey it no matter what.”

The seriousness and decisiveness of Dilo and Dita left Ling Chen shocked. He replied, “Chief Dilo, Elder Dita, I feel quite worried for the Dwarf Clan. You aren't able to fully develop your talents here, and nor can you obtain what you desire. I'm sure none of you like this feeling. Furthermore, there seems to be a lack of food here, which has caused many Dwarves to die of starvation. If you rejoin the outside world, you will be able to obtain many high quality materials, allowing you to create high quality equipment again, and food will never be a problem... why are you so adamant in staying here?”

“No! We can't leave this place,” Dwarf Chief Dilo continued to shake his head, “I understand everything that you're saying. Indeed, we want to leave, but if not for all of the hardships and suffering our ancestors went through, which forced them into despair, why would they have hidden themselves away in a place like this?”

“Our Dwarf Clan is talented in forging and engineering, but we

have no battle power. As such, our talents have become a curse to us. Back then, countless ancestors were captured and made into slaves. They were taken to a terrifying place and those ugly and evil demons forced them to forge equipment day and night. They had no freedom or dignity, and were not given any time to rest. If they rested or worked slowly, they would be harshly punished. The ancestors had no way of fighting back, because their families were often being held captive as well... countless ancestors were tortured and worked to death...

“In the end, even the humans, who we thought were our friends, wanted to make us their slaves to make them equipment... our ancestors completely lost faith in the other races, and decided to hide away... forever. Although we are severely limited in this place, and are lacking in food, but at least we have freedom. We don't need to worry about being forced to forge day and night. At least this way, we won't have to live in pain and despair. You humans... are unable to understand these things.”

Ling Chen fell silent... he wanted to tell them that the Demon Beast Clan had already been exterminated, and the Forgotten Continent was in an age of peace. He wanted to tell them that the things from back then definitely couldn't happen again, and that if the Dwarves appeared, they would be revered by all other races... however, seeing the determination and anger in Dilo and Dita, he simply couldn't say those words. After all, the Dwarf Clan had hidden themselves away for 10,000 years! 10,000 years was enough for them to ground the idea of them living here permanently deeply into their minds. Continuing to try to convince them would only anger them even further.

“However, although we can't leave here, that doesn't mean we

don't have any high quality equipment in our clan. Our ancestors left behind many priceless treasures.”

After speaking, Dita's face lit up with a strange smile. He pointed towards the centre of the palace, where there was a display stand with 3 levels. There was a piece of equipment on the top, middle and bottom levels. Although there was only one piece of equipment on each level of the display stand, they were all especially eye-catching and surrounded by a thick, glass-like material.

They were placed facing the doors of the palace, and were at the exact center of the palace. Ling Chen walked over, and looked at the things placed there. The lowest level had a small ring, which released a faint purple glow. The middle level contained a scroll, which looked like a normal teleport scroll. The top level had a Magic Staff. It was a Short Staff, and was no longer than a human adult's arm. It was pure white, as if it was sculpted from pure white jade. It looked quite like a jade flute, and white motes of light floated around it, making it seem especially beautiful and holy.

Their grades...

The ring on the bottom level: Celestial grade!

[Tulip Ring]: Type: Ring, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: Luck greater than 10. A small ring made from unknown materials. It lets out a purple glow, as well as the fragrance of tulips. It is said that its fragrance can continuously

keep a person in high spirits.

Effects: Increases duration of buffs by 30%, and decreases duration of debuffs by 30%.

This Celestial grade Ring truly deserved its Celestial grade status! Ling Chen almost started drooling when looking at it. Celestial grade jewellery was much more valuable than other Celestial grade equipment. This Tulip Ring could be used by any profession; however, its Luck requirement was quite difficult to satisfy... there would be practically no players who could equip it, except Ling Chen.

The scroll on the middle level: Heaven's End grade!

[World Boundary Scroll]: A Heaven's End grade Scroll that has been infused with the Spatial power from a Spatial Stone. It allows the user to ignore World Boundaries, allowing them to teleport to any City in any Region. Can be used twice.

Although it was not a piece of equipment, this scroll was simply incredible. This scroll, which ignored World Boundaries, was probably the most powerful teleportation item in the entire game. It had to be known that the barrier that sealed the Fairy Clan was like a soap bubble compared to World Boundaries.

The Magic Staff on the top level: Mysterious God grade!

[The Kindest Staff of Blessing-Forgiveness]: Type: Short Staff, Grade: Mysterious God. Equipment Requirements: Magicians above LV80 (Elementalists, Priests, Summoners). A Staff created by integrating 19 Light Stones into a Staff of Blessing forged from a Pegasus' Soul Heart. It contains boundless Holy energy, and causes light to flourish, the kind to be protected, darkness to be dispelled, and evil to be vanquished.

Stats: Magic Attack Power+5,050, Spirit+220, Constitution+90, HP+1,000, MP+2,000, Light element Resistance+25%, MP Consumption-30%.

Bonus Skills:

[Blessing of Light]: Passive Ability, all healing skills' effects and range increased by 100%, Cooldown Time shortened by 30%.

[Barrier of Light]: Uses the Blessing Light to create a barrier of light around the caster. Nullifies all Magic Damage, and reduces Physical Damage by 50%. Darkness element creatures within 30 metres of the Barrier of Light will receive heavy damage. Effects last for 30 minutes, costs 1,800MP, Cooldown Time: 30 minutes.

[Song of Forgiveness]: Restores all targets within 500 metres to full HP and MP, and cancels out all debuffs, as well as resets all Cooldown Times. Targets also recover 50% of their HP and

MP per second for the next 3 minutes, and become immune to all debuffs. Costs 12,000MP, Cooldown Time: 24 hours.

This was the first Mysterious God grade equipment Ling Chen had seen in the Mystic Moon world... the stats and skills it gave were so overpowered that they were suffocating. Compared to this Mysterious God grade weapon, all of Ling Chen's equipment combined seemed incredibly weak and insignificant.

Elder Dita went up, and said emotively as he stared at the white Magic Staff, "This Staff of Forgiveness was left for us by our ancestors. Back then, our ancestors created this Magic Staff for the Moon God Representative that oversaw the Forgotten Continent... the Forgotten Continent Goddess. However, even when we were facing catastrophe, the Moon God Clan did not help at all. As such, our ancestors, in their disappointment, decided against giving it to the Moon God Clan, and brought our clan to this place. However, the only things that still serve to evidence our clan's talents in forging are these 3 items. We once had countless great creations, but most of them were stolen by the wicked demons. And now, only this Staff of Forgiveness serves as proof of our golden times. To us, it is almost something to be worshipped."

There were many Gold grade equipment here, but even if they were added together, they simply couldn't compare to the Mysterious God grade Staff. This Staff was powerful enough to break the game.

This Staff, which boosted healing skills, and had strong protection skills greatly suited... Ruo Ruo.

Evidently, this Mysterious God grade Staff was already like a god to the Dwarves. They definitely wouldn't allow anyone touch it, let alone take it away. Those powerful stats caused Ling Chen's blood to boil, but he dispelled all thoughts of trying to take it away, at least for now. He couldn't help but exclaim, "No less than expected from the Dwarf Clan-this Mysterious God grade weapon is simply incomparable and exquisite!"

"That's right! We're the only clan that can create Saint Destroyer weapons. If our ancestors could do it, so can we!" Dwarf Chief Dilo walked up in front of Ling Chen, as his eyes started to burn with desire, "What we lack isn't the ability... but the materials! For example... the Mysterious Red Sun Gold you have!"

The words "Mysterious Red Sun Gold" caused Elder Dita's body to tremble. He shot over to Ling Chen's other side at an astonishing speed as he excitedly said, "The Mysterious Red Sun Gold is a holy metal! Even a piece as big as a grain has enough energy to destroy the heavens and the earth. The Mysterious Red Sun Gold can only bring danger to you humans; there aren't any humans who are able to forge it. Only we... only we can turn it into a core for a powerful weapon! With some other materials, we'll be able to create a Heaven's End or Mysterious God grade weapon! So, esteemed visitor, if you really have Mysterious Red Sun Gold on you, please give it to us... don't worry, we won't keep any of it-we will use it, as well as all of our strength and knowledge, to create an incredibly strong piece of equipment for you! Anything of your choosing!"

Elder Dita and Dwarf Chief Dilo flanked him on either side, staring at him with fire burning in their eyes. Their voices were

incredibly sincere, afraid that he wouldn't agree.

Chapter 391 - Virgo Orb

Back when Ling Chen had obtained the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, Qi Yue had told him that it could be used to forge equipment, but only the Dwarves were capable of doing so. Even the best human Blacksmith would only be able to sigh at his incapability to forge it. As such, even if Dilo and Dita didn't request for it, he would have asked them to forge something out of it. After all, to him, the Mysterious Red Sun Gold was just a piece of scrap metal if it couldn't be used.

However, seeing their excitement, Ling Chen knew he couldn't give in so easily.

Ling Chen pretended that he was feeling quite conflicted, as if he was making an incredibly tough decision. Seeing him like this, Dilo and Dita both felt incredibly nervous, and didn't dare to make a sound. After a while, Ling Chen gave a heavy sigh and gritted his teeth as he said, "Alright, being able to find you guys like this means we were fated to meet. I know that you have spent your whole lives desiring for high quality materials, so I'll let you forge it."

"Awesome... awesome!!"

Hearing Ling Chen's reply, Dilo and Dita were so moved that their bodies trembled, and they almost burst into tears. When Ling Chen took out the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, whether it was Dwarf Chief Dilo, who had already seen it, or Elder Dita, their eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

“That’s right... this colour... this feeling.. this density of energy... that’s it! That’s it! This is the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, which our ancestors called a holy metal!” Elder Dita passionately yelled. He was staring so intensely that he didn’t even blink, as he said, “In the ancient times, the Golden Crow created Mysterious Red Sun Gold by refining the bodies of True Gods with its Sun Flames. It is something that gods and demons all desire for. In our records, our Progenitor left behind these words: “Being unable to touch Mysterious Red Sun Gold in my lifetime is one of my biggest regrets.” I never thought that we would be able to see this holy metal... and such a big piece!”

The piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold that Ling Chen had was about as big as a soccer ball. As he spoke, Elder Dita started to weep. Seeing the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, the floodgates to Dilo and Dita’s emotions opened. Just as they were about to touch it, Ling Chen took a step back, and put the Mysterious Red Sun Gold away as he calmly said, “However, before giving you the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, I hope you can agree to a request of mine.”

They had only been three centimetres away from touching the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, and seeing it suddenly disappear, Dilo and Dita nearly howled. They immediately nodded, “Sure... sure... we’ll agree to anything... as long as it doesn’t conflict with our morals or principles.”

Luckily, they still had some sense left in them, and didn’t rashly agree to absolutely anything.

Ling Chen nodded, and said, “I told Chief Dilo that I came here to

look for something. I hope that you won't prevent me from taking that thing away when I find it. It's that simple."

Dilo and Dita looked at each other, and simultaneously nodded. Dwarf Chief Dilo said, "Indeed, you said that the thing you're looking for is in the palace. Apart from the three things in the centre of the palace, especially the Staff, you can take anything you want."

"Alright. Don't worry, the thing I'm looking for isn't one of those three treasures. Here, I'll give this Mysterious Red Sun Gold to you to forge."

After speaking, Ling Chen immediately took out the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and gave it to Dwarf Chief Dilo.

Hearing that it wasn't one of the 3 treasures left behind by their ancestors, Dilo and Dita calmed down. Seeing Ling Chen directly hand over the Mysterious Red Sun Gold like this, they were both quite shocked. Dwarf Chief Dilo almost didn't dare to hold it, and he stuttered, "Are... are you really giving it to us now? You're not afraid that we'll steal it? Or go back on our word?"

"Haha!" Ling Chen laughed, "Chief Dilo must be joking. I know the Dwarf Clan is not only intelligent, but proud. I'm sure you wouldn't do such a thing. As such, I trust you, and I hope you trust me too."

Ling Chen's words deeply moved Dilo and Dita. As the saying went, "actions speak louder than words". Dilo and Dita furiously

wiped their hands on their clothes, then carefully received the Mysterious Red Sun Gold from Ling Chen. The instant their hands touched the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, they closed their eyes, revealing expressions of bliss and satisfaction.

“Mysterious Red Sun Gold... Mysterious Red Sun Gold... oh, Mysterious Red Sun Gold...”

Dilo and Dita muttered its name again and again as they stroked it, afraid that they were in a dream.

This piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold caused Dilo and Dita to become lost in their own world. Ling Chen ignored them, and started to search the palace. The palace Su’Er referred to was definitely this one. That meant as long as he searched every inch of this palace, he would definitely be able to find the orb.

Ling Chen started from the centre, and walked around, scanning every bit of the palace. Just as he walked a few paces away from the centre, he felt that he stepped on something poking out from the ground.

Ling Chen looked down, and saw that the part of the ground where he had stepped on looked slightly different to the ground around it. Upon carefully examining it, he found that it seemed that something had been buried in the ground, and only a small part of it was sticking out. Ling Chen’s eyes widened, and he immediately squatted down.

The thing stuck in the ground was flat on either side, and seemed

to be quite sharp. Its end seemed to be broken off from something else, which left its end jagged... it looked like a part of a broken sword. It was black, with a hint of red-the redness of dried blood.

Wait... could this be...

Ling Chen felt that this object's shape, colour and feeling were all quite familiar. He tried to take it out of the ground, but his hand could find no purchase on it. Finally, he gave up, and had a look at its information:

[Shura Emperor Sword Shard 3]: ...

He was right!

It was another shard of the Shura Emperor Sword that the Shura had used 10,000 years ago to kill countless creatures!

By now, Dilo and Dita had somewhat calmed down, and walked over. Ling Chen looked up and asked, "Chief Dilo, where did you find this thing?"

"Eh? This is... oh! This is something our Progenitors left behind. There's a record of it in our clan records. Our Progenitors found it near here, and said it's incredibly heavy. The records say that although it's a broken shard from a sword, the energy inside it has been sealed, so it cannot leak out. Moreover, the energy inside seems to be quite terrifying; the Progenitors tried to extract the energy from within it, but failed every time... during that period of

time, they would experience terrifying nightmares depicting rivers flowing with blood. From then on, our Progenitors never tried to do anything to it, and warned everyone else not to try anything. As such, it was put here and forgotten... oh! Could it be that this is what you're looking for?"

"No, it's not, but... if I find all of the shards of this sword, would you be able to reforge it into a whole sword again?" Ling Chen asked.

Dilo and Dita thought for a while, before shaking their heads, "It's probably not possible. For the energy within it to not disperse even after being broken, this isn't a normal sword. It's definitely at least Heaven's End grade. However, if we want to completely reforge it, we need to combine all of the energy within the shards. Our great Progenitors were not able to extract the energy of even 1 shard, so combining the energy of all of the shards would be impossible. The energy in the shards are either sealed by something, or is in a deep sleep. As such, even if you find all the shards, reforging them as a sword requires a method to open the seal, to allow the energy from the shards to once again combine."

"So it's like that." Ling Chen said. If even the Dwarves said they couldn't do it, it was probably impossible. However, even if he could find all the shards and reforge it into a sword, what then? The Shura Emperor Sword was the Shura's sword, and so could probably only be used by the Shura. No other creatures had the right to use it.

However, Ling Chen could feel a burning desire within him to make it whole again, which stemmed from his curiosity towards

the legend. He still remembered the words the War God had said at the War God Trial Ground:

“As you can see, this is a shard of a broken sword. The sword that it belongs to is called the ‘Shura Emperor Sword’; I’m sure you definitely have not heard of this name before. In this day and age, there shouldn’t be that many people who still remember this name. This sword was once the strongest sword, and shook the world. The amount of life that this sword has taken... is something you cannot imagine. The reason it was able to grow to become the strongest sword is because it drank too much, too much blood. That amount is enough to make even True Gods deeply tremble. And this strongest sword belonged to history’s strongest person. His strength was something unfathomable. Although at that time, he was not a human anymore, but he still had his human nature... His name was... Shura.”

The strongest sword... just how strong was it...?

“Although it’s not what I’m looking for, I’m quite interested in it. Can I take it away as well? Of course, I won’t take it for free. I’ll give you my Spatial Stone to forge as well.” Ling Chen said as he gave the Spatial Stone to Dilo and Dita.

A piece of useless metal that had nearly been forgotten by their clan had given them the opportunity to forge a Spatial Stone. This was the deal of a lifetime! Dilo and Dita smiled so widely that their mouths were about to split, and immediately nodded, “No problem! No problem at all! Dita and I will immediately dig it out for you.”

After speaking, Dilo and Dita personally started to dig out the Shura Emperor Sword Shard. Every shard was incredibly heavy, and this shard was buried deeply into the ground. It would take much effort to take it out, but the two old men were enthusiastically working at it.

Ling Chen continued to look around the palace; he was sure that the orb was in there.

After walking 10 steps or so, the four orbs in the Lunar Scourge started to glow.

“The God Orbs are reacting! There’s another God Orb within 3 metres!”

As soon as the Lunar Scourge reacted, Qi Yue yelled out, causing Ling Chen’s excitement to build. He stood there, trying to detect it. If he could find it, this would be the first time he had obtained an orb by himself... of course, Su’Er played a significant role as well. In future, he would have much more confidence in finding the other orbs with Su’Er’s help. This would also demonstrate that the Heaven’s Secrets Sect was the real deal... which was incredible! With Su’Er’s growing abilities, he would no longer have to run around aimlessly while looking for the orbs, and finding all of the orbs within a short period of time would no longer be a dream!

10 or so seconds later, Ling Chen opened his eyes, squatted down and stretched out his arm towards a small gap between two display stands. When he took his arm back, there was an orb in his hand, with a symbol that looked like an “m” combined with a “q”.

“The Virgo Orb! Great, you found another one!” Qi Yue yelled happily.

Virgo Orb? Ling Chen couldn't help but smile. Before, he had wanted to collect the orbs to become stronger. However, he now saw these orbs completely differently. Although everyone wants to become strong, it would not be a necessity. But now, to Ling Chen, these orbs were the things that he needed to obtain even if it was at any cost. Holding the Mysterious God grade orb that he had just obtained, Ling Chen felt that he had come a step closer to the day Ruo Ruo could be woken up again...

[Virgo Orb]: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God, Attributes: None. Equipment Requirements: Can only be slotted in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: HP+150%, MP+150%.

Chapter 392-New Skill-Moon Grief!

The fifth Mysterious God orb-Virgo Orb! It had given him a bonus of 150% HP and MP!

That's right, a bonus 150%! Ling Chen was once again blown away by the Mysterious God orbs.

Every time he obtained an orb, he became significantly stronger. This was true for the Gemini, Sagittarius, Cancer and Aquarius Orbs, as well as this new Virgo Orb. With this orb, Ling Chen's HP reached almost 7,000! 7,000HP at LV25 was simply ridiculous. It meant that Celestial grade Bosses around his level wouldn't be able to kill him without using their ultimate skills, which he could reflect back at them with his Evil God's Mask... it meant that with the Virgo Orb, he could easily kill Celestial grade Bosses.

"Esteemed visitor, we've taken out this shard for you. Oh? Could it be that what you're holding is what you're looking for?" Dwarf Chief Dilo asked as he saw Ling Chen staring at the orb in his hand. The Shura Emperor Sword Shard had finally been dug out, and was lying next to his feet. It was simply too heavy to hold, so they had left it on the ground.

"That's right, it's this orb... by the way, where did you find it?" Ling Chen asked as he turned around.

"Oh, it was also left behind by our Progenitors. Like that sword shard, it was also found around here. There's only one sentence about it in our clan records... 'Let it forever sleep in the palace; no

one is allowed to touch it. One day, if an outsider wants to take it, do not stop them.’ As such, this orb was always hidden away in that inconspicuous area. It’s likely that only the Chief and I know about it,” Elder Dita said. He was quite curious as to why Ling Chen was looking for this orb.

Ling Chen, “.....”

It seemed that the Dwarves’ Progenitor knew about the Virgo Orb. After all, at that time, almost every creature knew about the Lunar Scourge. When the Dwarves went into hiding, the Shura had not appeared yet, and the Lunar Scourge had not been destroyed yet. Perhaps finding this Virgo Orb came as a shock to the Dwarf Progenitor.

After all, they must have known that the Lunar Scourge was one of the vilest items in existence.

“It seems that this sword shard and orb belonged to you humans. No wonder our Progenitors left behind instructions not to do anything with them. Our Dwarf Clan hates to steal from others. We’re glad that these items have finally returned to their rightful owners,” Dwarf Chief Dilo said while chuckling. No matter if it was the sword shard or the orb, they had more or less been forgotten by the Dwarf Clan. In exchange for giving them away, the Dwarves were given the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and Spatial Stone to forge... they were simply ecstatic.

Ling Chen took the Intermediate HP Crystal out of the Lunar Scourge and replaced it with the Virgo Orb in the sixth slot. A faint light flashed, and the Virgo Orb was perfectly socketed into the

Lunar Scourge.

“Ding... the Virgo Orb has been successfully socketed into the Lunar Scourge. Your Maximum HP and MP have been increased by 150%.”

After the system announcement sounded out, Ling Chen's HP rocketed to 6,772... while he was only LV25!

“Ding... Lunar Scourge's exclusive lunar skill [Moon Grief] has been unlocked.”

After socketing the fifth orb, a new Lunar Scourge skill was unlocked. Moon Shadow and Moon Flare were both incredibly powerful skills that had saved him countless times. This new skill, Moon Grief, was sure to be powerful as well.

[Moon Grief]: Lunar Scourge's exclusive skill, when cast it will release moonlight that affects the minds of all targets in range, causing them to forget all of their skills. Effects: Forcefully seals all targets' magic and skills, range= (2 x player level) metres. Lasts for 10 seconds, no MP cost, Cooldown Time: 60 seconds.

Moon Shadow froze targets; Moon Flare blinded targets; and now, he had Moon Grief, which had a large range and locked the magic and skills of targets!

That's right! They were all Crowd Control skills that ignored level, grade and resistances. As soon as the moonlight flashed, anyone and everyone was affected. When using Moon Grief, all targets would be unable to use their magic and skills, meaning that they could only use basic attacks! This was especially devastating for professions that relied on their active skills! As soon as they were affected by Moon Grief, it was as if they had lost their hands and feet: they were unable to use their powerful skills, and their physical attacks were negligible. What was especially terrifying was that they also lost all escape skills for 10 seconds, making them like defenceless lambs!

Not only did this powerful skill last for 10 seconds, but its Cooldown Time was as short as Moon Shadow and Moon Flare's: 60 seconds.

If he used Moon Shadow, Moon Flare and Moon Grief in succession on a target, they would probably just beg him to kill them. Even if it was a Moon God, they would be toyed around with these skills!

This showed just how powerful the Lunar Scourge was! Only the Lunar Scourge had powerful Crowd Control skills like these ones. Right now, the Lunar Scourge only had 5 God Orbs. If he could gather all 12, as well as the 3 Saint Orbs... the complete Lunar Scourge would be absolutely heaven-defying.

Ling Chen looked at the Lunar Scourge in satisfaction. The first orb after Ruo Ruo had left had been obtained so easily... no! It wasn't easy at all-with his own power, it would have been impossible to defeat the Mountain Giant. This was a wonderful

beginning, and also showed just how much of a help Su'Er's "Heaven's Secrets" would be. Evidently, it was for him that Su'Er had resolutely left with a stranger and went to an unknown place. In the future, he would have to rely on her to find the other Lunar Scourge orbs. If, one day, he really could gather all of the Lunar Scourges' orbs, Su'Er would be the MVP... as well as his great benefactor.

The forthcoming journey was going to be difficult, but Ling Chen now felt much more confident. With Su'Er, Xiao Hui and Tian Tian, as well as Shui Ruo's blessings, and himself... there was definitely hope.

As for meeting the Dwarf Clan, that was a complete coincidence.

He had fulfilled his goal in coming here, so Ling Chen now completely put his attention onto the Dwarves. He was the first human who had met the Dwarves in thousands of the years, and had given them Mysterious Red Sun Gold and a Spatial Stone to forge. How could he just leave like this...

He thought of the gold token that the Mountain Giant had dropped, and an incredibly ambitious plan formed in his mind. It was a grand and impressive plan, but making it reality would be incredibly difficult.

"Esteemed visitor, now that you've achieved your goal, we are quite happy for you. Then..." Dwarf Chief Dilo swallowed a large mouthful of saliva as he held the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and said with a look of anticipation, "What would you like us to make for you with this holy metal? No matter what it is, we are confident

we can make it.”

“Hmm,” Ling Chen said as he thought, then shook his head, “I haven’t decided yet. Plus, having just a piece of Mysterious Red Sun Gold isn’t enough to forge a high quality piece of equipment. You’ll need many other high quality materials as well. How about this: I’ll leave the Mysterious Red Sun Gold with you here, and when I’ve thought of what equipment I want, I’ll tell you. Next time I come, I’ll bring more high quality materials. I just hope you’ll let me enter your home again.”

Ling Chen’s words nearly caused Dilo and Dita to kneel down in reverence... bring more high quality materials? Just the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and Spatial Stone were already incredibly high quality materials; the Mysterious Red Sun Gold was even called a holy metal.

My god, could this be the start of a new golden age for the Dwarves?!

“Sure! Sure! No problem! No problem at all! You are our Dwarf Clan’s most esteemed visitor and closest friend! Don’t worry, we’ll keep everything you have given us safe; we definitely won’t take any of it for ourselves! All we have is the right to forge it for you. Everything else is up to you. We welcome you back any time,” Dilo said emotionally.

“Now, with the Spatial Stone, it’ll be incredibly easy for you to get here,” Dita said, “If you draw out the Spatial energy from a Spatial Stone and put it into a spherical rock, you can create a “Spatial Orb”. Using a Spatial Orb, you can instantly teleport to

any place you've been in the past! With a Spatial Orb, even if you're thousands of kilometres away, you can instantly come here, and instantly go back."

"Instantly teleport to a place you've been in the past?" Ling Chen stared at them with wide eyes, "Does such a thing really exist? Can you make one?"

Elder Dita looked up as he proudly said, "It's extremely simple! With this Spatial Stone you have, we can make up to 1,000 of them! If we start now, we'll finish by tomorrow midday at the latest!"

Chapter 393 - Flatbread! The Flatbread Of The Legends!

“1000? Finished by tomorrow midday? And they can really teleport you to any place you’ve been in the past?” Ling Chen was flabbergasted. In the virtual game world, the most efficient method of transport was teleport scrolls. However, teleport scrolls could only take a player back to a set city or town. They would have to walk or ride to their destination if it was outside the city or town. Sometimes, players would have to teleport to a town, and then walk for up to a day to get somewhere. Most of the time, strong mobs and Bosses were found in remote locations. If one died while fighting, it would be almost impossible to immediately return to the place and continue fighting after they respawned. Currently, if Ling Chen wanted to go back to Peace Town and come back, it would take him over 10 hours of continuous riding on the Cloud Stepping Mare.

However, the “Spatial Orbs” could allow him to casually teleport to a place he had been to in the past... him having been there before was the only requirement! This was a godly item! Moreover, they could produce so many of them with just this 1 Spatial Stone.

“That’s right, that’s right!” Elder Dita enthusiastically replied, “Creating Spatial Orbs are very simple; it’s just that Spatial Stones are much too rare. With such a large Spatial Stone, creating 1,000 or so Spatial Orbs will be a piece of cake. However, Spatial Orbs have their restrictions. For example, like teleport scrolls, they cannot be used while in battle or while bound. Moreover, you can’t use it to teleport through World Boundaries... that includes those places called ‘Novice Villages’. Even if you are able to go over there, you won’t be able to use the Spatial Orb to return.”

“Spatial Stones are legendary stones. They take many years to form, and never stay in the same place. They usually move around to avoid living creatures. Our clan records say that only those with extremely high luck can obtain Spatial Stones. Spatial Stones are incredibly powerful, and the Spatial energy they contain not only can be used to create Spatial Orbs, but also Spatial Equipment, as well as Teleportation Channels... all of these can be easily created by using Spatial Stones.” Elder Dita emotively said, his face red.

Spatial Equipment... Teleportation Channels...

Ling Chen wasn't too surprised about the Spatial Equipment, but Teleportation Channels came as a surprise.

“How big of a Spatial Stone do you need to construct a Teleportation Channel?” Ling Chen asked.

“That depends on how big you want the Teleportation Channel to be, as well as its range,” Elder Dita immediately replied, “A 10 metres square Teleportation Channel that goes both ways would require about $\frac{1}{3}$ of the Spatial energy in this Spatial Stone.”

“Hmm,” Ling Chen thought for a moment, before saying, “Elder Dita, can you please make 500 Spatial Orbs and keep the remainder of the Spatial energy?”

“Sure! We'll definitely have them finished within 12 hours!” Hearing that Ling Chen was immediately getting them to forge the Spatial Stone, Dita was so excited that his hands shook and he beat

his chest. He cradled the Spatial Stone as he rushed out.

Dwarf Chief Dilo looked at Elder Dita in admiration and envy, and after he left, Dilo rushed in front of Ling Chen with a big smile plastered on his face, “Err, little brother, since you’ve given the Spatial Stone to the old man, do you want to give the Mysterious Red Sun Gold to me...”

Before Dwarf Chief Dilo could finish his sentence, a loud yell came from the distance, “Dilo!! You bastard!! We just said that we’d share everything! You want to forge it by yourself? Where’s your integrity?! You’re so shameless!”

Dilo’s face turned red, and he immediately yelled back, “You’re the bastard!! You wanted to take the Spatial Stone away by yourself!”

“Screw you! The little brother said I could! You’re just jealous!!”

“So what if I’m jealous? Bite me!”

“Screw off! If you dare forge the Mysterious Red Sun Gold by yourself, I’ll take all of your 13 wives!!”

“Well I’ll go take all of your mothers!!” Elder Dita, who had rushed off with the Spatial Stone, came charging back in, and started exchanging curses with Dwarf Chief Dilo. Evidently, Elder Dita was worried that Ling Chen would really give Dilo the rights to forge the Mysterious Red Sun Gold by himself.

After all, the Mysterious Red Sun Gold belonged to Ling Chen. Ling Chen frowned, and tried to calm them down, “Please don’t argue anymore. I... I’ve found what I came here for, and since forging the Spatial Orbs need some time, can you show me around your home?”

To the Dwarves, Ling Chen was now a super VIP, and whatever he said, went. The two Dwarves with incredibly high status nodded their heads rapidly, and walked next to Ling Chen on either side as they left the palace, preparing to show him around.

Upon opening the doors of the palace, all they could see was a sea of Dwarves. Ling Chen wondered if the entire Dwarf Clan was gathered here. Seeing Ling Chen come out, the countless Dwarves’ gazes were filled with curiosity, nervousness... as well as fervour.

“Ahem! This little brother here is the esteemed visitor sent to us by our guardian god. Don’t worry, he won’t reveal anything about us, so we’ll still be safe here. Moreover, he’s brought many high quality materials for forging. From today onwards, he is our Dwarf Clans’ closest friend, and no one is to be disrespectful to him,” Dilo said in a loud voice as he stood next to Ling Chen. He turned around, and said to Ling Chen, “Little brother, please come with us. We will show you around our home. Although we’ve hidden ourselves away for a long time, we still have many things we’re proud of in this home.”

And thus, the massive crowd departed from the palace. Dilo and Dita led the way, but none of the other Dwarves were willing to leave... every single Dwarf, whether it was the elderly or toddlers, wanted to see the legendary Mysterious Red Sun Gold. At the same

time, they wanted to be closer to this human, in case he was willing to give them some high quality materials.

“This massive plate is what we call the ‘Light Accumulation Board.’ It can save large amounts of energy from the sun, which we can use during the winter.”

“Going down from here leads to our laboratories. Our best forging equipment is in there, and all of the great creations in the palace were forged in there.”

“That place is our graveyard. Countless ancestors are buried there, and we go to pay respects every year.”

As they walked around, Dilo and Dita introduced each place in detail. After two hours, they came to a place with many beautiful houses. Dwarf Chief Dilo started to introduce it, “This is our Residential District. After all these years, we haven’t expanded it at all, ai... this one is my home.”

As he spoke, the door was opened, and a small and skinny child, who looked about 10 years old, ran out.

“Dad!” He called out while running over.

“Oh! Dika, you haven’t been well lately; didn’t I tell you to rest properly at home?” Dilo said worriedly.

The boy called Dika looked at Ling Chen in curiosity, and directly asked him, “Are you the human everyone’s talking about? Apart from being taller than us Dwarves, you’re also a lot whiter, but we don’t look too different.”

“Dika, don’t be rude to our visitor,” Dilo immediately said.

Ling Chen smiled, “I’m a human, and you are Dwarves, but in the end we’re all ‘humanoids’. In fact, it wouldn’t be too weird even if someone said we were part of the same race. After all, we don’t look that different.”

“I heard that you have many high quality materials, so... so do you have any food? There must be a lot of food in the human world, right? I’m so hungry, so if you have any food, can you please give me some to eat?”

Dika looked at him with a look of eagerness, as he put his hand on his flat stomach.

Hearing the word ‘hungry’, the Dwarves all revealed pained expressions. They all desired for high quality materials, but even without them, at least they wouldn’t die. What they needed most was food!

Everything was scarce in this place, especially food. These years, in order to survive, they had often eaten bugs, grass, bark... even dirt, and small rocks... Dwarves used to have powerful and buff bodies, but now, all of them were only skin and bones. Every year,

many, many Dwarves would starve to death.

“Dika... ai,” Dwarf Chief Dilo wanted to reprimand his son, but could only sigh. The children of the Dwarf Clan would complain of hunger every day, because they were truly incredibly hungry. The adults could endure the pain of hunger, or distract themselves with other things, but it was simply too hard for children. What they wanted was just something – anything – that could fill their stomachs.

The Dwarf boy in front of him looked extremely pitiful, and Ling Chen’s heart broke. He immediately looked through his bag... however, he rarely put food in his bag. Most of his bag was taken up by potions. After searching for a long time, he found a large, round, flatbread. He remembered that he had received this for free from the Central Food Plaza the first time he had visited there. However, this flatbread was thick and hard, so he didn’t want to eat it. This was the only food he had.

Ling Chen took out the flatbread and held it out, “I don’t usually keep food on me. This is the only thing I have.”

The flatbread’s faint aroma wafted out, and immediately, all the Dwarves fell silent. It was so silent that Ling Chen became dumbfounded. He looked around at Dilo, Dita, and all of the other Dwarves. They were all staring at the flatbread in his hands, as if it was something they had been dreaming of... no, something that they didn’t even dare to dream of.

What... What was going on?

“C-Could this be... the... the... this...” Dwarf Chief Dilo stuttered as he tried to say something. As a large pool of saliva flowed out from his mouth, a loud roar sounded out, “This is... is... flatbread!! Flatbread! The flatbread of the legends!”

Chapter 394 - 30,000 Flatbread

Flatbread!

This word boomed out like thunder in the ears and hearts of all the Dwarves. Dilo and Dita trembled, and the countless Dwarves all stared, as if their eyes were glued to the flatbread in Ling Chen's hands. Fire ignited in their eyes, as if they were looking at a god. Ling Chen looked around, and saw the countless Dwarves all staring and drooling...

Ling Chen felt that he had suddenly stepped into a different world.

“Flatbread... flatbread... flatbread!!”

“This beautiful shape... this beautiful aroma... the flatbread of the legends!!”

“Flatbread... flatbread!! I never thought that I'd be able to see the legendary flatbread in my life! If I could have a bite, I'd be able to die happy!”

“Flatbread... flatbread!!”

After recovering from their stupor, the crowd started to clamour. Half of the Dwarves were drooling, and the other half were weeping. Some were biting their fists, staring at the flatbread, imagining that they were biting the flatbread instead.

Dika stood in shock, staring at the flatbread unblinkingly. He stretched out his hand, wanting to touch it, but the flatbread was suddenly taken away by another pair of hands.

The pair of hands naturally belonged to Dilo. He carefully cradled the flatbread in his hands, and swallowed his saliva as he smelled its aroma. He suppressed the urge to take a bite, and yelled, "Silence! Silence! Everyone calm down... that's right, this is the flatbread of the legends! A real flatbread! It has the aroma of heaven, an aroma that can make our souls go crazy..."

Ling Chen's mouth fell open, and he almost spat out blood.

"I never thought that I would be fortunate enough to see the legendary flatbread that our ancestors recorded in my lifetime. Although this flatbread was given by our human friend to my son, but I don't think my son should have it all to himself... only those who have made the greatest contributions to our clan can have some! As such, I want to split this flatbread into 200 portions! Only the 200 Dwarves who have made the greatest contributions to our clan can have some..."

A single flatbread... split into 200 portions... are you crazy?!

Ling Chen was astounded... he never thought that the Dwarves would be so desperate for food. That was just a flatbread! A completely normal, ordinary, plain, flatbread!

"Little master, your reaction is so funny," Qi Yue said as she

giggled, then said, “Little master, remember how I told you that there were 2 things that Dwarves love? One of them is forging... do you know what the other one is?”

“.....”

“It’s food. The Dwarves’ love of delicious food is just as strong as their love for high quality materials. Eating delicious food and creating high quality equipment are the greatest pleasures for Dwarves. However, in this place, they aren’t able to eat any delicious food; even plain human food would be a luxury. After seeing this flatbread, their reaction isn’t at all exaggerated.”

So the Dwarves loved high quality materials and delicious food. Forging high quality materials was something everyone knew about, but delicious food... this flatbread simply couldn’t be called ‘delicious food’.

After Dilo finished speaking, not a single Dwarf responded. All of the Dwarves were looking at that flatbread with a burning passion. That’s right, not a single Dwarf responded... because all of the Dwarves wanted to have a bite... even if it was a tiny bite... even if it was a tiny, tiny, crumb...

“Err... Chief Dilo, can I say something?” Ling Chen asked.

The Dwarves all looked at Ling Chen. After all, it was Ling Chen who had taken out this flatbread. Dilo suddenly remembered Ling Chen’s existence, and hurriedly held the flatbread in front of Ling Chen as he said, “I apologise, little brother. I was so excited that I

forgot this flatbread belongs to you. I have no right to distribute it... indeed, this legendary smell is definitely from the outside world. Without your permission, how can I distribute it as I please?”

Ling Chen furiously blinked... in the outside world, if someone threw a flatbread on the ground, no one would even bother to pick it up. He calmed himself down, but did not take the flatbread from Dilo's hands as he calmly said, “Chief Dilo, it seems that you all really like flatbread... hmm, I remember that you said that the Dwarf Clan has about 30,000 Dwarves, right?”

“Oh, right, currently, we have 29,632 Dwarves.” Dilo replied, wondering why Ling Chen had asked such a question.

“Very well,” Ling Chen nodded, “Since my Dwarf friends like flatbread so much... I'll return to the human world, and bring every single Dwarf here a flatbread, so you won't have to worry about having to split it. Everyone will have their own flatbread.”

Pa-da! The flatbread in Dilo's hands fell to the ground, and every Dwarf stared at Ling Chen in absolute silence. After a few seconds, Dilo picked up the flatbread with lightning-fast speed, and hurriedly dusted it off, before stammering, ‘W-W-W-What did you just say? Everyone... everyone... will have their own flatbread?!’

“That's right!” Ling Chen calmly said as he nodded. The Dwarves once again fell silent.

“T-T-This... but... but... we have nearly 30,000 Dwarves... 1

flatbread for every Dwarf.... This sort of legendary food, how could you possibly have so many... we... we... this...” Dwarf Chief Dilo simply didn’t know what to say. He couldn’t believe what Ling Chen was saying. This was flatbread! The flatbread of the legends! Even many of their ancestors had never seen one before. And now, this human was claiming he could bring 30,000... how was this possible?! How could every Dwarf have one for themselves?? Even a god wouldn’t have so much flatbread!

Ling Chen rubbed his nose as he said, “Don’t worry, I’m not lying. How about this, I’ll go and get them now. Remember, everyone will have their own one. It’s just that the human city is very far from here, so it’ll take about a day for me to get back,” Ling Chen looked at Dilo and Dita as he said, “Before, I already gave the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and Spatial Stone to Chief Dilo and Elder Dita. If I can’t bring back enough flatbread, and lied to you all, then you can keep those high quality materials. If I can bring back that many flatbread... that means I didn’t lie, and we’ll still be friends.”

“If... If you can really bring back that many flatbread, you’ll... you’ll be the greatest benefactor and saviour of the Dwarf Clan!” Dwarf Chief Dilo emotionally said. He started to believe what Ling Chen was saying was true.

The Dwarves all started to yell out and scream in joy as the flames in the eyes burned even brighter, and their saliva flowed even faster.

“Elder Dita, I hope that you’ll have the 500 Spatial Orbs ready for me when I return.” Ling Chen said.

“Of course, of course! I’m actually itching to start!” Elder Dita replied.

Very soon, Ling Chen exited from the Dwarf Clan’s territory, and returned to the Azure Dragon City. He put on some inconspicuous clothing, sold all of the things he didn’t need in his bag, and went to the Central Food Plaza.

“Hello, 30,000 flatbread please.” Ling Chen directly said when he saw the chubby chef.

Clang! The chubby chef’s ladle fell to the ground.

“H-H-H-How many?!”

“30,000, is that possible?” Ling Chen acted calmly, and took out 150,000 gold coins. The ‘flatbread’ he was buying was much bigger than normal ones. A single flatbread was enough for a human adult to eat for 2 meals, so they were more expensive than the normal ones, at 5 gold coins each.

“N-No problem...” After confirming that his ears were working, the chubby chef wiped the cold sweat off his forehead and went to get the flatbread... during the entire transaction, he looked at Ling Chen more than 10 times like he was a monster... buying 30,000 flatbread with 150,000 gold! Was he super rich, or just retarded? Or was he a super rich retard?

After completing the transaction, the 30,000 flatbread took up 150 bag spaces, filling up Ling Chen's bag.

There were many places to eat at the Central Food Plaza, and there was a lot of delicious food that couldn't be experienced in the real world. Of course, the flatbread couldn't be described to be delicious food at all. However, he only bought flatbread, and didn't have any plans to buy any real 'delicious food' for the Dwarves, at least for now.

Before leaving, he thought for a moment, before pointing at a large pot of seafood soup, "Can you do takeaway for the soup as well?"

"Oh... sure."

"One pot please."

"....."

Ling Chen returned to Peace Town with 30,000 flatbread and a large pot of seafood soup. From there, he once again rode towards the Nameless Ridge.

10 or so hours later, he once again returned to the home of the Dwarves.

Chapter 395 - Three Requirements (1)

This time, Ling Chen entered the Dwarf's territory with no obstruction from the Mountain Giant.

The first thing he saw was a large crowd of Dwarves waiting for him. Within minutes of him leaving, every Dwarf knew of his promise to bring everyone a flatbread. This was the biggest thing that had happened to the Dwarf Clan in the past 10,000 years, so many of them were waiting for him at the entrance.

The wild shouting from the Dwarves gave Ling Chen a fright, and they nearly went crazy when they saw him pulling out flatbread from his bag.

“Everyone calm down!! Don't push!! Don't fight!! No one will have more than others; no one will have less than others! Everyone will have their share!”

Dwarf Chief Dilo's voice became hoarse, but he didn't feel tired at all, and he continued to spiritedly yell out. Seeing the flatbread being handed to the Dwarves, and the ecstatic looks on their faces, he felt happier than he had ever been in his entire life.

After receiving the flatbread, every Dwarf hugged it against their chest, trembling with emotion. They simply couldn't believe that what was happening was real. They had actually obtained the legendary food that countless ancestors had hoped to see.

After receiving the flatbread, none of the Dwarves lost control

and devoured theirs. They either held it in the air, or held it against their chests, their faces filled with satisfaction. Some would bring it to their nose and deeply breathe in, savouring the smell of the flatbread. Some older Dwarves were weeping as they hugged their flatbread...

All of the Dwarves were drooling like crazy, but not a single one could bring themselves to eat their flatbread... in their hearts, this flatbread wasn't just 'food'- it became something holy, like the Mysterious Red Sun Gold.

As such, Ling Chen said, "My Dwarf friends, please don't hold yourselves back from eating the flatbread. This definitely won't be the last flatbread you eat. In future, I'll bring just as much flatbread when I come back... or even more. Everyone, please eat to your heart's content."

At this moment, the way the Dwarves looked at Ling Chen radically changed... they looked at him as if he was a saint or a god. He had brought the Dwarf Clan Mysterious Red Sun Gold, a Spatial Stone, as well as flatbread for every Dwarf... these were all things that even their ancestors longed for. To be able to personally see the Mysterious Red Sun Gold and taste flatbread, most Dwarves could now die happily. Their gratitude and respect towards Ling Chen had reached their peak. Now, hearing Ling Chen say this, they almost wanted to kneel down and bow to him. The Dwarves all started to devour their flatbread. After taking their first bite, every Dwarf's body shook, and they began to furiously eat their flatbread... it was much more delicious than the legends had said!!

Who would have thought that there were such delicious things in

the world?!

A grand banquet of eating flatbread unfolded before Ling Chen.

All of the Dwarves, including the honourable Dwarf Chief Dilo and Elder Dita tore into their flatbread like they were crazy. Before, they had been unwilling to eat it, but once they started eating, they simply couldn't stop. The hunger that they had suppressed within themselves awoke like a sleeping monster... this scene caused Ling Chen to feel truly shocked.

Goddamn! Had these Dwarves been starved their whole lives?

And... aren't you afraid of choking from eating those flatbreads so quickly?

As he watched the Dwarves frantically eat their flatbread, Ling Chen took out the large pot of seafood soup.

The seafood soup was incredibly fresh and aromatic, and soon, he once again had all of the Dwarves' attention.

“L-L-Little brother... Little brother... this soup... it...”

Dilo forgot all about the flatbread he was eating, and he furiously sniffed the air. The aroma from the seafood soup made it feel as if his entire body was floating. He had thought that the flatbread was the most delicious food in the world... but this smell made even his soul tremble in ecstasy... it was definitely more delicious than the

flatbread! Compared to this smell, the flatbread was nothing!

What was this smell?! How could such a smell exist in the world... this smell should only exist in heaven!!

The Dwarves all stopped eating the flatbread, and their saliva began to flow even faster. They stared at the large pot in front of Ling Chen, as if their souls had left their bodies.

“This is some seafood soup I brought back from the human world. Chief Dilo, please help me give out this soup.” Ling Chen said.

“Sure! Sure!” Dwarf Chief Dilo immediately nodded as he walked towards the large pot. As soon as he got close, his saliva began to gush out of his mouth.

This entire day had been like a dream to the Dwarves; it was the best day of their lives.

In fact, this was the first day they had experienced what it meant to be alive.

Ling Chen, who had given them all of this, rose to the highest position in all of the Dwarves' hearts. From now on, wherever he walked, he would always be gazed at with adoration and worship by the Dwarves.

“Here, little brother, these are the 500 Spatial Orbs I've made,”

Dita took out the completed 500 Spatial Orbs, and gave them to Ling Chen. He closed his eyes as he said, “The feeling of extracting and redirecting the Spatial energy from the Spatial Stones was simply too wonderful.”

The Spatial Orbs looked just like normal stones. Ling Chen looked at the small stone, which was as big as a fingernail, in disbelief. Could this really do all the things that Elder Dita had said?

[Spatial Orb]: A stone orb that has been infused with Spatial energy. Using it allows the user to return to any place they had been in the past. Single use. Cannot be used to cross World Boundaries.

Woohoo!

Ling Chen happily gripped the Spatial Orb in his hand. They did exactly what Elder Dita said. With these Spatial Orbs, he could instantly go anywhere he had been before... this would save him so, so much time.

What godly items!

And there were 500 of them!

“I also have these 2,” Seeing Ling Chen’s expression, Elder Dita

was very happy. He took out 2 stone shards that were about as big as the Spatial Orbs and gave them to Ling Chen, “These were 2 failed Spatial Orbs. However, although they’re failed Spatial Orbs, there is still Spatial energy inside them. They can’t be used like normal Spatial Orbs, since they’re locked on to here. However, these 2 failed Spatial Orbs can allow anyone to come here, even if they’ve never been here before.”

[Nameless Ridge Teleport Stone]: A stone orb that has been infused with Spatial energy. Allows a user who is not in combat to teleport to the Nameless Ridge’s Central District. Single use.

These 2 ‘failed’ works... were incredibly useful! Ling Chen immediately put them away and thanked Elder Dita.

Ling Chen stayed with the Dwarf Clan for a day, and did his best to understand their situation. When he left, the entire clan came to see him off. The Dwarves were people who remembered and repaid favours, and the sight of the entire clan sending him off was unforgettable.

“Little brother, you are our clan’s great benefactor, our most esteemed visitor and closest friend. We welcome you back any time,” Dwarf Chief Dilo said earnestly.

“Mm, I’ll come back often. After all, I’ll be leaving my Mysterious Red Sun Gold here,” Ling Chen said half-jokingly. As he spoke, he took a few steps back and took out a five to six meter tall Ancient Dragon Skeleton that he had found in the Forest of Bones.

“This... This is... heavens! Could this be a Dragon’s skeleton?!” Dilo and Dita both yelled out simultaneously. They had never seen a Dragon’s skeleton before, but their desire for high quality materials had led them to memorise almost every type of high quality material recorded in their clan records, “This shape and pressure... there’s no doubt about it! It’s definitely a Dragon’s skeleton.”

The two Dwarves emotionally went to touch the Dragon’s skeleton, “The legends say that Dragons’ skeletons are incredibly tough and hard; even a small piece can pierce through steel. It also contains a lot of energy and a remnant of the Dragon’s soul, and is a priceless material.”

While muttering, Dilo and Dita looked at Ling Chen with trembling eyes... Dragons were the most powerful race, and even an incredibly weak and young Dragon could easily destroy other beasts. And yet, this human had somehow obtained a Dragon’s skeleton.

“I’ll leave this Dragon’s skeleton with you, as well as this Rainbow Agate. In future, if I find any high quality materials, I’ll also bring them here. Only you can give them their true value,” Ling Chen said as he smiled and took out his Rainbow Agate.

Not only did he give the Dwarves high quality materials and food, he also gave them acknowledgement and praise. Dilo said in gratitude, “Little brother, you’ve given my clan so much, but we don’t know how to repay you... ai, our clan is quite poor, and there’s nothing of value that we can give you. The only valuable

things we have are our ancestor's works, but we cannot give those away. I feel quite ashamed.”

Ling Chen shook his head as he smiled, “Since we're friends, don't say such things,” He paused for a moment, before pretending to speak casually, “Chief Dilo, there's something I want to ask... since your clan loves forging and delicious food so much, why don't you choose to leave here? In the outside world, you'll be able to forge many high quality materials, as well as eat flatbread every day. There's also food that's more delicious than flatbread, so why do you keep yourselves locked up in here?”

Chapter 396 - Three Requirements (2)

“We can forge many high quality materials, and can eat flatbread every day... ai, that’s true,” Dwarf Chief Dilo repeated what Ling Chen had said, but shook his head, “Little brother, I’m sure you think that us living here is worse than dying, and that we have no pride. You must think that it must be painful and humiliating to live here, and that we’re not brave enough to take on the dangers of the outside world.”

Ling Chen did not say anything.

“Back then, if it wasn’t because our ancestors completely lost hope and faith in the outside world, they wouldn’t have led our clan here. Back then, they knew what would happen if our clan continued to stay here. They only had a single goal: which was to allow us to live on without being captured as slaves. Even if it would be difficult to survive, and we would lose our pride, at least we would be alive. Although pride and dignity are important, and high quality materials and delicious food are even more important... but if we lost our entire clan, what would be the point in gaining those things?” Dilo said as he sighed.

Ling Chen earnestly replied, “I heard a bit about what happened in the past. Back then, the Forgotten Continent was in an age of war-there were interspecies wars and intraspecies wars. However, the Forgotten Continent is completely different now. The Demon Beast Clan has been eradicated, and there are just a few demons left who live their lives in hiding. Every other race has their own territories... humans, beasts, those of the Underworld, devils, those of the sea... the Moon God Clan set rules that they weren’t to attack each other, and there has not been any large scale fighting

in over 100 years. I believe that if your Dwarf Clan rejoins the outside world, you won't be made into slaves, but rather, will be respected and protected.”

“Moreover...” Ling Chen looked around as he slowly said, “The Forgotten Continent is quite vast, and there are countless treasures within it. The things I brought were things that I casually found as I travelled around. Do you really not want to collect all sorts of high quality materials to create equipment that surpasses even that of your ancestors’?! You like delicious food? The flatbread that you ate was one of the most ordinary types of food; in the Forgotten Continent, there are multitudes of more delicious food than that of flatbread and seafood soup. Don't you want to eat that every day?”

Ling Chen's words sounded quite mesmerising to every Dwarf. Forging and eating delicious food were the two things they loved above everything else. Hearing Ling Chen's words, the Dwarves' eyes burned with desire, including Dilo and Dita... however, what was surprising was that not a single Dwarf voiced his or her agreement.

“Little brother, what you just spoke about is something we've always dreamed about. However... However, we cannot disregard our ancestors' instructions. If we ignore our ancestors' commands and leave here, our Dwarf Clan will suffer great calamity, and will completely disappear from this world. As such, we can't leave. If we impulsively left, and our ancestors were right, we would become the greatest sinners of our clan.” Ling Chen felt downcast. He asked, “Did your ancestors tell you to never leave this place?” Inwardly, he was cursing, these goddamn ancestors; will you not let your descendants live happily even after you're dead?!

“No, that’s not it.” Dilo shook his head, “The clan records state that back then, our ancestors went to the Heaven’s Secrets Sect, and asked the Sect Leader as to how our clan could survive.”

“Heaven’s Secrets Sect?” Ling Chen couldn’t help but repeat the name. That was where Su’Er was currently.

“Looks like little brother has also heard of the Heaven’s Secrets Sect. The clan records state that the Heaven’s Secrets Sect was the head of the three Sects of the Night Demon Clan, and that the Night Demon Clan was the only clan that could oppose the Moon God Clan. The Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s battle power was quite weak, but they had the ability to reveal heaven’s secrets. As such, no one dared to doubt the Sect Leader’s words. After hearing what the Sect Leader had to say, our ancestors decided to hide away, and passed on the Sect Leader’s words to each generation. Unless we fulfil three requirements, we can never leave here.”

“Three requirements? What are they?” Ling Chen asked. He had followed Su’Er’s instructions in coming here, and had successfully obtained an orb. Su’Er had only learned the basics, but could still accomplish such feats. Ling Chen no longer held any of the scepticism he had once felt towards the Heaven’s Secrets Sect. If the ancestors’ commands were really from the Heaven’s Secrets Sect, he could no longer oppose them.

“Ai...” Dilo let out a long sigh. Beside him, Dita’s face was also forlorn. It was evident to see that those 3 requirements were probably quite difficult to fulfil. “The first requirement is that we must be able to join up with the Fairy Clan.”

“Join up with the Fairy Clan? Why’s that?” Ling Chen asked, surprised.

“It’s because the Fairies are the kindest race in the Forgotten Continent, who love peace the most. Before we hid ourselves away, the Fairies did not try to enslave us, and instead protected us. As such, they are our trusted friends, and they can protect us. It’s just that...” Dilo shook his head, “We can’t leave from here, so how can we join up with the Fairies? It seems that just this first requirement can never be fulfilled.”

Ling Chen listened silently, then asked, “What’s the second requirement?”

“The second requirement is even worse. We must find the method to construct the ‘Underworld God Cannon.’”

Ling Chen: (◉◉) ! !

Hearing the name ‘Underworld God Cannon’, all of the Dwarves’ expressions became serious. Dilo continued to speak, “Little brother, I told you before that our clan once created a Forbidden Weapon that surpassed even Saint Destroyer weapons. That’s right, it was the Underworld God Cannon that I just mentioned. The Underworld God Cannon was created by 1,900 of our ancestors for the Underworld race, and it was called a ‘god-killing’ weapon. It is said that it can truly destroy a god. The reason our clan was treated as such was because we are too weak; if we can have a god-killing weapon like that, then no one would dare to do those things to us again.

“It’s just that the ancestors who created the Underworld God Cannon have all died... however, one of the ancestors who helped in forging the Underworld God Cannon said that they secretly created a blueprint for creating the Underworld God Cannon, which is in the Underworld. If... If we can obtain that blueprint, perhaps we can make our own Underworld God Cannon. However... ai...”

Dilo’s sigh was filled with frustration. He didn’t even know what the Underworld race was like, or where they were.

Ling Chen’s eyes became brighter as he calmly asked, “What’s the third requirement?”

“The third requirement...” Dilo’s face became slightly red, and his eyes lit up. He looked upwards as he exclaimed, “Is a pan! The legendary pan that can cook the most delicious food in the world! Our ancestors’ third requirement is to find that pan, so our clan can taste the most delicious food in the world!”

“A pan that can cook the most delicious food in the world? What is it called?” Ling Chen thought of something, but couldn’t fully recall what it was.

“Its name is... the Handsome Pan!!”

Ling Chen’s legs became weak, and he staggered, “T-The Handsome Pan? Are... are you sure??”

“What about it? It’s got quite the name, right?” Dilo looked at Ling Chen’s face in satisfaction, “The legends say that the pan can become big or small, and has mystical powers. If one can use it properly, they can cook delicious food with even the most simple ingredients. The only ones who know how to use the Handsome Pan are us, the Dwarves! Little brother, everyone knows that we’re talented in forging and engineering, but we’re actually talented in cooking as well! Our talent in cooking is not at all inferior to our talent in forging! It’s just that, ai... that Handsome Pan is just a legend. Even the ancestors had only heard of its name before, but never saw it in their lives.”

Ling Chen was completely speechless. His facial expression kept rapidly changing.

Those three requirements... Fairy Clan, Underworld God Cannon and Handsome Pan... this is way too coincidental!

Not too long ago, he had accidentally found the Fairy Clan, and destroyed their barrier.

He had then bought the Underworld God Cannon Blueprint from Qian Gun Gun while he was travelling to the Lava Purgatory.

Finally, he also had the Handsome Pan! He had stolen it from the Lucky Cat!

“Only when we’ve satisfied all three requirements can our clan leave this place. Otherwise, we will definitely suffer great

calamity-this was what the Heaven's Secrets Sect's Sect Leader told us. As such, we can't just ignore it. The ancestors said that if an outsider can help us fulfil these three requirements, our whole clan needs to follow him, because that person will lead us to a new age of glory. It's just that it has been so long, so long..." Dilo shook his head as he once again sighed.

"Don't be pessimistic, perhaps someone will come and fulfil those three requirements for you soon," Ling Chen said as he rubbed his nose.

"Haha, I surely hope so," Dwarf Chief Dilo chuckled.

"Well, I'll be leaving now."

Ling Chen didn't stay any longer. He said goodbye to the Dwarves, and left without turning back.

Chapter 397 - City Creation Token

“Little master, why did you leave like that?”

Qi Yue couldn't help but ask as Ling Chen walked out of the Dwarves' territory.

“Although the Dwarves cannot leave because of their ancestors' instructions, it's evident that they want to leave. No one would enjoy living in such conditions. Especially after eating the flatbread and drinking the seafood soup that little master brought. Moreover, although each of those three requirements are incredibly difficult to fulfil, hasn't little master fulfilled them already? Does little master know just how valuable it would be for the Dwarves to follow you? Back then, many races wanted to make them their slaves.”

“Mm, I know the value of the Dwarves. Although their clan has gone into decline, talent isn't something that can disappear so easily, and nor is it something other clans can simply gain. It's just that...” Ling Chen looked at the mountain behind him, then looked towards the Azure Dragon City as he slowly said, “It's just that there's someone more suitable than me to do this...”

He didn't explain himself to Qi Yue, but instead yelled towards the mountain that the Mountain Giant had transformed into, “Mountain Giant, in about half a month, one of my friends will come here. She will come to save the Dwarves you are protecting, so please don't stop her. I'm sure her aura will not be displeasing to you.”

There was no reaction from the Mountain Giant.

Two days later.

After Xiao Qi and Su'Er left, Yun Meng Xin, who didn't want to return to the Yun Family, could only live by herself. Until Mu Bing Yao recovered and returned, she would be living alone. But then again, she knew that Mu Bing Yao seemed to be there to protect her under Ling Chen's orders.

In the game world, the Li family financial group's skyscraper in the prime area had finally finished construction. Every day, Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue would discuss future plans together. The other thing Yun Meng Xin would do every day was to check the storehouse. This was because Ling Chen had told her to often check the storehouse, as he would often send things there. As such, she would check the storehouse at least three times every day. Every item she received from Ling Chen was quite valuable. The equipment spoke for themselves, and the water from the Fairy Fountain was simply game-breaking.

This morning, the first thing she did was to check the storehouse. This time, she had received more items than on any other day.

20 or so pieces of equipment, a few teleport scrolls, a hand-drawn blueprint, a gold token, 2 rocks, and a red metal that weighed tens of kilograms, as well as an ordinary-looking pan... there were many, many things. There was also a scroll with a long message from Ling Chen. These things were...

Yun Meng Xin picked up the gold token, as it was the most eye-catching out of all of the items. Seeing the name of the token, her hand trembled...

“This... This is...”

Yun Meng Xin’s peaceful heart was sent into turmoil, and it took her a while to confirm that she wasn’t hallucinating. She immediately put the gold token away, and examined each item carefully. Every item caused her to become more and more excited.

Finally, she picked up the scroll with Ling Chen’s message to her. It was incredibly long... Yun Meng Xin read every word, and took a long time to finish reading it, then spent some time digesting what she had just read. She put the scroll away, closed her eyes and tried to calm herself down.

“Such inconceivable things can actually happen in the world...”

“Ling Tian, I don’t know what you’re looking for, or where you are, but you haven’t given up Heart’s Dream or me... thank you...”

“This time, you’ve given me a miraculous opportunity. For myself, and for you, as well as Qi Qi, Su Su, Bing Yao, Shui Ruo and Tian Tian... I will definitely succeed!!”

Returning to the Li family financial group’s skyscraper, Yun Meng Xin told Li Xiao Xue that she was going on a holiday. She

didn't tell Li Xiao Xue why, and after asking once, Li Xiao Xue didn't ask anymore.

After leaving the Li family financial group's skyscraper, Yun Meng Xin went to the Azure Dragon City's Book Basilica.

The Azure Dragon City's Book Basilica was extremely big, and took up countless thousands of square metres. There were innumerable books within it about almost everything. However, it was almost empty with very few players inside it. There were countless books in the real world; even if someone spent their whole life reading, they would only be able to read perhaps 0.001% of all the books. Who would waste their time reading books in a virtual game?

Yun Meng Xin picked up a book that was 1 metre tall, half a metre wide and 30 centimetres thick. On the cover, 3 large words were carved: Forgotten Continent Chronicles.

Starting from the first page, Yun Meng Xin began to read in earnest. On the first day, she read from morning until night. She forgot the time, and even forgot to eat. At night, Mu Bing Yao called her to have dinner, after which she immediately returned to continue reading. Days passed...

For the next 10 days, Yun Meng Xin spent all of her time within the Book Basilica, reading the Forgotten Continent Chronicles.

10 days later.

After leaving the Book Basilica, Yun Meng Xin realised that 10 days had passed. 10 days and 10 nights was not enough to finish the entire Forgotten Continent Chronicles, but she had read from the demi-god era to the thousand years after the Fairy Clan had sealed themselves away. When closing her eyes, she could recall all of the information that she had read. She was not only a devastating beauty, but was incredibly intelligent and had a brilliant mind.

Upon returning to the Li family financial group's skyscraper, Yun Meng Xin met up with Li Xiao Xue. Seeing that Yun Meng Xin was finally back, Li Xiao Xue asked in curiosity, "Meng Xin, I heard that you spent the past 10 days in the Book Basilica. Can you tell me what you were doing there?"

She didn't believe that Yun Meng Xin would simply waste time like that. However, Yun Meng Xin did not answer, and instead directly said, "Xiao Xue, I want to borrow some money from you."

"Oh?" Li Xiao Xue raised her eyebrow.

"I need \$70 billion!" Yun Meng Xin said this astronomical figure calmly, "Only you can lend me this much money in such a short period of time. I'm sure you have the ability to do so."

"\$70 billion?" Li Xiao Xue frowned. Even for the Li family financial group, this wasn't a small sum of money. She looked at Yun Meng Xin and calmly said, "I am able to lend you \$70 billion – in fact, I can lend you many times more than that. However, I need a reason. You need to know that although my Li family financial group supports the Skyfall Dynasty, we only give them around \$20 billion every year. With the Skyfall Dynasty's power and fame,

they deserve that much money. Meng Xin, I really like you, but I, the Loulan Queen, am first and foremost a businessperson. I will not willingly take a loss, no matter what.”

Yun Meng Xin smiled, “Xiao Xue, don’t worry. If I didn’t have a good reason, how could I ask you for so much money? However... Xiao Xue, I can only tell this reason to you. No matter if you accept or reject my offer, please don’t tell this to anyone else... alright?”

“Alright,” Li Xiao Xue nodded, “Without Meng Xin’s permission, I won’t tell anyone else.”

“That’s good enough for me,” This sentence revealed how much Yun Meng Xin trusted Li Xiao Xue. She took out a gold token, and handed it to Li Xiao Xue, “Xiao Xue, have a look at this.”

Li Xiao Xue looked at the gold token, and her eyes widened as she exclaimed, “This! This is...”

“That’s right,” Yun Meng Xin nodded, “It’s a City Creation Token! There’s only 1 in every Region. The token that allows a player to create a city – a capital city, no less. No matter how strong a guild is, that’s all they’ll ever be – a guild. Whoever has the City Creation Token can become the Mayor of a city; a King or Queen, even! They’ll be a Royal among players!”

Li Xiao Xue was blown away. Indeed, this was a City Creation Token, but only one would appear in every Region. Furthermore, they were incredibly rare, and had ridiculously low drop rates. Only Heaven’s End grade and above monsters could drop them!

Heaven's End... even in the late stages of the game, it was almost impossible to take down Heaven's End grade monsters. City Creation Tokens had only appeared in the past when most players had reached max level.

And yet, in such a short period of time, Yun Meng Xin had obtained a City Creation Token! This was simply inconceivable.

“Your reason is a pretty big one,” Li Xiao Xue said slowly, “But this reason isn't quite enough. Meng Xin, you should know that a City Creation Token is a double-edged sword. It can bring a person immeasurable fame and fortune, but also disaster. Have you thought about what would happen if it was discovered that you were building a city? Countless people and powers would try to stop you from creating your city, and steal the City Creation Token from you. What can you do to stop them as a single person? It is possible that in the end, your City Creation Token, as well as the money you invest and your efforts will all disappear. Also, even if you end up building your city, without enough fame and something to attract players... you might just be left with a dead city.”

Li Xiao Xue's words were sharp and to the point. Yun Meng Xin listened to her quietly, then smiled. She took out a long scroll and handed it to Li Xiao Xue, “What Xiao Xue said is completely correct. However, what about this?”

Li Xiao Xue took the scroll, and quickly read through it. Her face completely changed, and she looked at Yun Meng Xin, then stared at the scroll as she read through it again. She exhaled, and immediately said in excitement, “If all of this can be fulfilled... on

top of the \$70 billion, I'll give you another \$80 billion! \$150 billion in total! If that's not enough, I can give you \$200 billion in total! However, the precondition is that the things in this scroll have to be fulfilled!"

"Sure, it's a deal then," Yun Meng Xin stretched out her hand to Li Xiao Xue, and the two jade-white hands came together, "I'll give you an answer within five days... I believe that you won't be disappointed."

Chapter 398 - I'm Called Yun Meng Xin

In all of China, only Li Xiao Xue could casually talk about hundreds of billions of dollars so casually.

“However, Meng Xin, there’s something we need to clear up first,” Li Xiao Xue said as she continued to hold onto Meng Xin’s hand, “If everything fails, and the city isn’t built, then you need to repay everything you borrowed from me, plus interest-not a cent less. However, if it really happens, you can keep the \$200 billion.”

“What does Xiao Xue want in return?” Yun Meng Xin wasn’t surprised at all.

“I want... a quarter of the land in your city.” Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled.

“The city won’t be very big; are you sure you only want one quarter?” Yun Meng Xin also smiled.

“Something I learned when I was young was to not go overboard. Sometimes, if you are too greedy, you’ll be consumed by your greed. A quarter of the city is already quite a lot. Do you know the best way to make money? The answer is by monopolising things. If you really have ‘Fairies’ and ‘Dwarves’ in your city, your city will have something that no other city will have. Because of that, you’ll be able to monopolise hundreds of millions, if not billions, of players! A monopoly of this scale is simply too breathtaking! What’s even better is that in this game world, there are no regulations against monopolies. Although I won’t be able to

control the monopoly, having one quarter of that city will be worth hundreds of billions of dollars.”

Li Xiao Xue talked calmly, and smiled elegantly. She had made this decision on the spot, and yet she had been so daring, but didn't seem rash.

“You won't be disappointed, because I've never allowed myself to fail before,” Yun Meng Xin replied.

After Yun Meng Xin left, Li Xiao Xue became lost in her own thoughts. After all, she softly said, “These things probably all came from Ling Tian... father told me that no matter how strong or hardworking a woman is, it'd be good to find a man who is stronger than her, whom she loves. Before, I didn't believe his words, because I didn't think there would be anyone more capable than me...”

“Ling Tian, you've successfully made me interested in a man for the first time...”

Fairy Forest.

Using the teleport scroll that Ling Chen gave her, Yun Meng Xin came to the town near the Fairy Forest, then rode to the forest. The closer she rode to the Fairy Forest, the less monsters there were, and the calmer the monsters were. There didn't seem to be any danger here, and nor were there any other players. Following

the map Ling Chen had given her, she came to the entrance of the Bewildering Formation. Yun Meng Xin had long since memorised the way to get through the Bewildering Formation as described by Ling Chen. She looked at the forest, and smiled, then strode towards the big tree in front of her...

After passing through the Bewildering Formation, she soon came to a world filled with countless flowers and grasses. The system announcement in her ear told her that she had come to a place called the “Fairy Realm”.

“This is the Fairy Realm... is this where Cai’Er lives? How can there be such a beautiful place in the world?” The beautiful view took Yun Meng Xin’s breath away, causing her to be mesmerised by her surroundings. However, she immediately regained her senses, and walked forwards. After walking 10 or so steps, the sound of a voice sweetly singing came from the distance, and soon, she could see a small figure flying around while collecting flower nectar.

“Cai’Er!” Yun Meng Xin recognised her immediately, and called out her name.

“Eh?” Cai’Er flew up, and instantly saw Yun Meng Xin. Her little mouth opened, and she excitedly yelled out as she quickly flew over, “Big sister Meng Xin! It’s really big sister Meng Xin... why did you come here? Are you here to play with Cai’Er? Or... did big brother tell you to come here to take Cai’Er out to play?”

Cai’Er was small and cute, and anyone would want to hug her like a little doll. Yun Meng Xin held Cai’Er’s small hands as she

smiled and said, “Mmm, your big brother told me to come here. Cai’Er wants to go out and play, right?”

“Yepyepyepyepyep!!” Cai’Er nodded rapidly, “A lot! I think about it every day! The outside world has so much yummy stuff and fun stuff, and such pretty houses... and... I miss big brother and all the big sisters!”

Yun Meng Xin smiled even more, “I came here to take Cai’Er and everyone else outside. Cai’Er, can you take me to your dad and granny?”

“Mm, sure, sure!” Cai’Er immediately agreed, and led Yun Meng Xin to where all the Fairies were living.

“Granny! Dad! Big sister... a human big sister came to visit you!!”

There were only 2,000 Fairies in the Fairy Realm, and they all lived close to each other. Adding on the fact that Cai’Er’s voice tended to travel quite far, over half of the Fairies heard her call.

After Ling Chen, yet another human had entered this place. This sent all of the Fairies into a frenzy. Many Fairies poured out of the houses, curious as to what sort of human had entered this time. Upon seeing Yun Meng Xin, all Fairies, whether they were male or female, stared in awe.

This was because before entering the Fairy Realm, Yun Meng Xin had taken her veil off. She had shaken all of Beijing with her

beauty 10 years ago, and now that she was an adult, she was even more gorgeous. She had taken off her veil to show her respect to the Fairy Clan.

At the same time, she had shaken the heart of every Fairy. Her beauty was truly at a catastrophic level. The Fairies were the purest creatures in the world, and both males and females were incredibly beautiful. Any one of them would qualify as extremely handsome or beautiful in the human world. Out of all of the female Fairies, Ying Xue was by far the best looking, and was like a goddess to all of the male Fairies. They had always believed that Ying Xue was the most stunning creature in the entire world... after all, Fairies were the most beautiful race.

However, the beauty of this woman from the human world was not at all inferior to Ying Xue's... no! She was even more beautiful than Ying Xue!

Describing her as a celestial goddess wasn't sufficient to fully capture just how beautiful she was. No matter who it was, anyone who looked at any part of her face would feel like their body was melting, and that their soul was going to leave their body. They had heard of beauty that could steal souls, but now they had finally experienced it. Her beautiful and enchanting curves were simply irresistible, and her skin looked more beautiful than even the best silk in the world. Under the dim lighting, all of the Fairies were captivated by her beauty, as well as the fragrance that came from her.

The Fairies all stared at Yun Meng Xin, especially the males, and their heartrate increased significantly.

Greenwood appeared, and the instant he saw Yun Meng Xin, even he paused slightly, unable to believe his eyes. Yun Meng Xin's beauty had reached an unbelievable level, and even the Fairy Chief had to fight to keep himself calm. As such, he didn't dare to directly look at her anymore.

Yun Meng Xin didn't feel weird after seeing the Fairies' reactions. She had long since been used to people staring at her like this. From this, she also confirmed something... that the Fairies' sense of beauty was the same as humans'. Seeing Greenwood, she took the initiative to greet him, "Hello, are you the Fairy Clan's Chief, Greenwood? I'm called Yun Meng Xin, and I'm a friend of Ling Tian's."

"Yup, yup!" Cai'Er immediately nodded, "Dad! Big sister Meng Xin is big brother Ling Tian's good friend! The yummy food and pretty toys and clothes that Cai'Er brought back last time were bought by big sister!"

Greenwood nodded, and calmly replied, "I'm called Greenwood. Welcome, friend from the outside world. Ling Tian is our clan's benefactor, and since you are his friend, you are also our friend. So, Ling Tian told you the way to enter here?"

"Indeed," Yun Meng Xin replied, "However, don't worry, Chief Greenwood, Ling Tian only told the method to get past the Bewildering Formation to me. Today, me coming here was also Ling Tian's idea."

Yun Meng Xin looked around, and saw that most of the Fairies were still staring blankly as she said, “I came here to discuss some matters with Chief Greenwood, Granny Witherwood, and the ten elders.”

Greenwood immediately understood what Yun Meng Xin was trying to say, and nodded, “Please come with me. Cai’Er, please call your grandmother and the ten elders.”

“Ah! Okay! I’ll go right now!” Cai’Er immediately flew off to find them. Because of Yun Meng Xin’s arrival, Cai’Er was extremely excited.

“Wait, Cai’Er,” Yun Meng Xin called out to stop Cai’Er. She walked over to Cai’Er and stretched out her hands which were full of lollies. She gently said, “Take these and share them with your friends.”

“Wow!!!” Cai’Er was incredibly delighted, and took the lollies from Yun Meng Xin. She flew in circles as she said, “Thank you, big sister, big sister is the best!”

Chapter 398.5 - Godchild Plan

At an unknown place.

The lighting was quite dim, and fog rolled about. Neither the ground nor the sky could be seen, and the void stretched out as far as the eye could see. The only light was from a massive blue crystal ball that let out a dreamy blue glow. The crystal ball was about one meter in diameter, and mist swirled around within it, making it impossible to see what it contained. The crystal let out blue motes of light, making it seem like there were blue fireflies flying around, making this place seem like a mystical world.

Apart from the crystal ball, there was nothing else in this dark place.

At this moment, a light flashed, and a humanoid shape appeared 30 metres away from the crystal ball. It was much taller than a normal human, and there were two horns on its head. This was simply a hologram, but as soon as it appeared, the surrounding space seemed to freeze, and even the blue motes of light stopped floating around.

“In the name of the Godchild, appear, messengers of the oracle.”

A heavy voice came from where the hologram was, filling the entire space, causing the blue motes of light to tremble.

Another light flashed, and another hologram appeared to the south of the crystal ball. It was facing the first hologram with the

crystal ball in the centre. This hologram wasn't very tall; however, it was incredibly well-built; it was as thick as three adult men.

“Boss, what have you summoned us for?”

Just as the well-built hologram spoke, it suddenly froze, as its voice became full of shock, “Wait! Could it be... the Godchild has already...”

“That's right!” The tall hologram's heavy voice sounded out, “The Galois Plan has already succeeded; having absorbed another three billion souls, the Godchild has somewhat matured. Currently, the Godchild is still a youth though, hahaha.”

“No less than expected from the boss! You actually completed the Earth Flame Plan and Galois Plan by yourself! We simply can't compare to the boss. However, since the Godchild has already become a youth, it should have enough power and sentience. Why hasn't it come out?”

“It's not that the Godchild doesn't want to come out, but that 'King' has personally sealed it away, sealing its power and sentience, and causing it to fall into a deep sleep. Because the Godchild's power and intelligence have not matured, giving it freedom will disrupt the Godchild Plan. King orders that the Earth in the east, Xiya in the south, Galois in the west and Pegasi in the north, the 'four great god sources' are to be converted into power for the Godchild, and that it is not to come out before then.”

“I see,” The well-built hologram seemed to understand.

“King told me to summon you to report on how the Burning Heavens Plan for the Xiya Star is going, as well as how the Mystic Moon Plan for Earth is going. King is becoming impatient! Wan Chong, how are things going on your side?” The tall hologram thundered.

“Although I’m not as fast as boss, but the Burning Heavens Plan has nearly been completed. The Xiya Star has completely fallen into our control, and the soul extraction process has reached its final stages. We will be able to give King a satisfactory answer within two years.” The well-built hologram slowly said, “However, the only problem was that the only being with a Demigod Godhood, the most suitable Xiya creature to become a sacrifice for the Godchild, escaped from the Xiya Star, and is now missing.”

“Demigod Godhood? The Xiya Star had such a being? Could they be a descendant of the ancient god clan? The soul of a being with a Demigod Godhood is more valuable than even the souls of 100,000,000 people. What a pity.”

“Heheheh! Demigod Godhood? How can it be as interesting as Artificial Godhood?”

A sharp, hoarse and incredibly ugly voice sounded out. At that moment, the third hologram appeared... this hologram looked small, skinny and weak. From afar, it looked like a hunchbacked skeleton was standing there. He raised his head, and looked towards the crystal ball, his voice filled with passion, “I felt the aura of the Godchild. Indeed, the Godchild has matured, and will become a True God in due time!”

“Mad Scientist, shut the hell up! Your laugh is so disgusting I want to cut you up into chunks!” The well-built hologram yelled.

“Heheh, talking to the great Mad Scientist like that will cause you to have an early and terrible death, heh...” The skinny hologram replied.

“Everyone shut up. This isn’t the place for you to bicker,” The tall hologram harrumphed, “Mad Scientist, how is the Mystic Moon Plan going? And what did you mean by the ‘Artificial Godhood’?”

The skinny hologram brought its finger to its nose... as if it was pushing up its glasses. Its shrill voice once again sounded out, “After planning for so many years, the Mystic Moon Plan’s most important step has started. My dear boss, there are more than 10 billion humans on Earth! There are much more than on the Galois Star and Pegasi Star, which you have already conquered. Only a genius like me could think of this perfect Mystic Moon Plan! Now, the souls of $\frac{2}{3}$ of all humans have entered the cage I have designed. When the time is ripe, I will trigger the final step of the Mystic Moon Plan. The souls from Earth will allow the Godchild to directly grow to full maturity. Even if the Burning Heavens Plan fails, it won’t matter, heheheh!”

“The Burning Heavens Plan failing? That’s the best joke I’ve heard in a while!” The well-built hologram mocked.

“So what is this Artificial Godhood that you were talking about?”

Could it be that you were researching something special all these years?”

“My dear boss, you’re exactly right. With this genius me, anything can become reality. These years, I’ve successfully pushed two of my experimental subjects past the limits of humans. Their bodies cannot become bodies of gods, but their minds have nearly reached the level of gods! Especially the one called ‘Adam’, his mental energy is something that makes even me fearful! In the end, he even escaped from the mental energy seal that I put on him, and helped another experimental subject escape. Heheheh... no less than expected from something created by my genius! Remarkable! He is the greatest creation of my life!

“It’s just that my mental energy seal isn’t that easy to escape from-these two experimental subjects have only escaped from its control, but they have no way to completely get rid of it. They can only use 1/3 of their mental energy at most. However, even with this 1/3 of their mental energy, they are absolute monsters. One day, if they can completely escape from the seal, heheh... just thinking about it makes me shiver. Perhaps even King would not be able to compare to their mental energy!”

“Hmph! It seems you really are a madman. You’re comparing a human to our glorious King?” The tall hologram rebuked him, “However, if their mental energy really is strong enough, then they could be suitable sacrifices for the Godchild.”

“It’s a pity that they escaped though,” The short hologram sighed, “Right now, my Mystic Moon Plan is going into its final stages, so I don’t have any time to bother with them. However, as

long as they're on Earth, they'll never be able to escape from me, heheh..."

"Enough with your bullcrap, Mad Scientist, tell me how much longer you need to complete the Mystic Moon Plan."

The short hologram once again lifted its hand to its nose as it replied, "Perhaps two years, perhaps three years, perhaps even longer. Absorbing the souls of 10 billion people... my dear boss, I'm sure you know how difficult it is."

"I know how difficult the Mystic Moon Plan is, as well as how many people there are on Earth. However, the eastern god source is something that the God Creation Plan requires-King doesn't want there to be any mistakes. And now, it's not just you who's in charge of the Mystic Moon Plan-didn't King tell 'Yue' to help you?" [TLN: 'Yue' can be translated as Moon, but I'm going to be leaving it as 'Yue'. Some of you may be able to guess why]

"Yue? Heheh, don't you know that that woman hates being with me? She just went to Earth with me, but these years, I've only met her three or so times. Moreover, her participating in the Mystic Moon Plan is not her main mission; she has another mission."

"What is it?" The tall hologram asked. Evidently, he didn't know what else 'King' had asked 'Yue' to do.

"I heard that it was to create a creature called the 'Shura'. Before the Godchild awakens, the Shura's blood is used to dye the Godchild's body... that way, after the Godchild awakens, the

Apocalypse Plan can directly be started, which would be simply wonderful. Moreover, apart from this mission, Yue seems to be searching for something even more interesting... a way to resurrect creatures from the dead.”

“What? Resurrect from the dead? Hmph! How can such a thing be possible? Even True Gods cannot be revived. Why would Yue think she can do such a thing? Oh? Unless she’s thinking of bringing her mother back?”

“Heheheh, who knows? Perhaps it really does exist. Although I don’t know where Yue is right now, or what she’s doing, but from the messages she occasionally sends, everything seems to be progressing quite smoothly. I’m looking forward to what is going to happen,” The small hologram looked up towards the empty place to the west of the crystal orb.

“Don’t forget what Yue’s identity is. Let her do whatever she wants. I will report what we talked about today to King. Moreover, the deadline King has given us is five years. Within five years, the Burning Heavens Plan and Mystic Moon Plan must be completed! However, it seems like we won’t need five years. You can leave now.”

“Roger. I’ll immediately return to the Xiya Star. Tell King that everything will be complete within two years.”

“My dear boss, don’t forget to tell the great King how much I miss him...”

After the voices and holograms disappeared, only the blue crystal ball remained, and the blue motes of light began to float about again.

Chapter 399 - Selfish And Stupid!

Granny Witherwood and the ten elders soon arrived together. It was silent within the wooden room in the Central District of the Fairy Realm. Yun Meng Xin faced the 12 most powerful and respected Fairies of the entire Fairy Clan, but was exceptionally calm, which in turn earned their respect. They were all surprised and curious towards Yun Meng Xin and her reason for being there.

Yun Meng Xin greeted them all individually, and didn't waste any words as she got to the point, "Granny Witherwood, Chief Greenwood, ten elders, I'm sure you have many questions. I've heard much about the Fairy Clan from Ling Tian. Can I ask you all a few questions?"

Granny Witherwood smiled, "Young human girl, Ling Tian is our whole clan's benefactor. Since you're his friend, you are a distinguished guest. Feel free to ask any questions."

The Fairies saw that Yun Meng Xin was not only incredibly gorgeous, but had a remarkable aura around her as well, which caused them to marvel at her. Within the human world, she was definitely extremely exceptional, and she most certainly had a purpose in coming here.

Yun Meng Xin slightly nodded, and said, "The Fairy Clan had been sealed by the barrier for thousands of years. It was because of this that the Fairy Clan went into decline, and desperately searched for a way out. Not too long ago, this barrier was destroyed by my friend, Ling Tian. What are your plans from now on? Will you once again join the human world?"

After Yun Meng Xin finished talking, the room lapsed into silence. This question was something they had been considering for a while.

Greenwood replied, “The answer to this question is something we’ve been thinking about and seeking for these past few days. Our clan has low fecundity, so if we rely on reproducing within the clan, our numbers will continue to dwindle. After being sealed for thousands of years, our clan fell into despair, until Ling Tian appeared and destroyed the barrier. Before that day, we, as well as many of our ancestors, had dreamed of leaving the Fairy Realm, but after the barrier was destroyed, we became uncertain.”

“Oh? Can you tell me why you’re uncertain?” Yun Meng Xin looked slightly shocked, as she adjusted her body to show that she was paying attention.

“There are many reasons,” Greenwood said. With Yun Meng Xin’s beauty and aura, no male could resist answering her, “The first is the reason why our ancestors led our clan to live here originally. There are countless battles in the Forgotten Continent, and my clan hates conflict. Our ancestors witnessed many battles, and in the end, helped destroy the Demon Beast Clan, causing much loss to our clan.

“After destroying the Demon Beast Clan, our ancestors thought that the fighting would cease... however, what caused our ancestors much grief was that the humans, who no longer had the fearsome Demon Beast Clan as their enemies, did not value the peace, but instead erupted into internal conflict over power. The

battles were fierce, and many people died. In fact, because of their greed, they started to plot against their friends, the Fairies who had protected them... Adding on a few other things, our ancestors lost faith in the humans, and didn't want to be tainted by them, so they decided to hide away.

“Before, while we were sealed, we would often complain that our ancestors had been too rash. However, now that the barrier is gone, we realised that the ancestors would have foreseen the consequences of being sealed away. And yet, our ancestors still did what they did. Back then, out of the Fairy Kings and Queens, only one rejected this idea, and the others all approved... could it be that all of the Fairy Kings and Queens had been rash? Of course not! Rather, if they didn't choose to hide away, and remained in the Forgotten Continent that was filled with evil and conflict, the Fairy Clan would have declined even faster! Who knows, perhaps we would have been eradicated already. Even if our clan still remained, we would have been tainted by the world, becoming evil, and corrupting the Nature energy we receive from the Nature God. We would no longer be Fairies, and our great Nature God would leave us... it would be better for our clan to go extinct than for that to happen.”

“As such, after considering these things, you started to doubt whether you should leave the Fairy Realm?” Yun Meng Xin calmly asked.

Greenwood nodded. What he said was what every Fairy in the room was thinking. When the barrier was there, they wished that it was gone. After it was gone, they had considered many things that they had not considered before, and the more they thought, they more hesitant they became... and the more they wanted to

stay within the Fairy Realm.

Yun Meng Xin looked up, and gazed at each of the Fairies in turn as she said, “If this is really what you and your ancestors believe, then please excuse my rudeness, but there is something I must say... your ancestors, and all of you... are selfish and stupid!”

Yun Meng Xin’s words caused the atmosphere to freeze, and every Fairy’s face stiffened.

The head elder jumped up, yelling furiously, “Girl! You... You can insult us, but you can never insult our ancestors! Our ancestors made great sacrifices for the peace of the Forgotten Continent; how can you call them selfish?! And our ancestors were wise and intelligent; how can you call them stupid? We can accept you being rude to us, but saying such words about our ancestors, even if you’re Ling Tian’s friend... you are not welcome here!”

In response, Yun Meng Xin gave a light smile as she continued to speak, “Am I wrong? No one can deny that the Fairy Clan is the kindest and most beautiful race that values peace the most. Back then, the Fairy Clan played a great role in exterminating the Demon Beast Clan... but that’s all. You hate conflict, and the conflict between the humans caused you to become disappointed and fall into despair, resulting in your ancestors deciding to hide away. Well, do you know why there was conflict among the humans? And what the result was?”

“.....”

“Back then, the human race was incredibly weak. Humans were intelligent and wise, but had very little power, so they would often be oppressed and bullied. After the Demon Beast Clan was destroyed, they could finally breathe. However, without an advanced civilization, and without unified beliefs and ideologies, everyone acted in their own interests. In order to continue living, they lived like beasts; they didn’t strive to improve, nor did they try to develop their clan-they just wanted to survive. As such, conflict erupted... the thing that you hate most!

“However, does conflict only bring about death and evil? Not at all. Back then, the humans needed conflict to unify them as a people. Without any conflict, the human race would have always been a pile of loose sand. After engaging in conflict for a long time, and before it concluded, your clan hid away. Many people died, and many heroes emerged. From the conflict emerged ‘tribes’, then ‘kingdoms’, until the entire human race was unified under one Emperor.

“Although humans were weak, but currently, more than half of all creatures in the Forgotten Continent are humans. It can even be said that the Forgotten Continent belongs to the humans. The Forgotten Continent has a Royal City created by humans, as well as four Main Cities, which have Mysterious God grade beasts acting as their guardian beasts. These five cities show the power of our human race, as well as how much our civilization has advanced.

“As the humans developed, the Forgotten Continent has also changed. It has become prosperous and beautiful, and there are barely any beggars anymore... all of this is because of the conflicts that happened back then. Without conflict, the Forgotten Continent would not have been able to develop to what it is now.

Moreover, our human race is now unified, and most, if not all, people live happily. There is no reason for any more conflict; even if you wanted to see conflict, it is already impossible. What I need to ask is...”

Yun Meng Xin paused for a moment, and her tone became softer, “After thousands of years, the humans that you were disappointed in and didn’t want to come into contact with have made such great contributions to the Forgotten Continent. As for you Fairies, who are no less intelligent than the humans, and are much more powerful than humans, and even have the Nature God protecting you... what have you done for the Forgotten Continent since you’ve gone into hiding?”

Yun Meng Xin’s words caused all of the Fairies to stare in shock. When she asked that final question, all of the Fairies felt as if they had been struck by lightning, and their bodies stiffened.

What had they done for the Forgotten Continent since they went into hiding?

“The answer is nothing! No contribution at all! All you’ve done is hide and run! You were afraid that your hearts and energy would be ‘polluted’, and you wanted to protect your bloodline from becoming extinct... that’s right! It was all to protect yourselves. You think that you’re noble and dignified, because of the energy the Nature God has given you, and so you don’t want to be contaminated by humans. However, all you’ve done is protect yourselves, whereas the humans have been improving and developing the Forgotten Continent, making life better for all those who live in it. Don’t you think this is laughable? Am I wrong

in calling you selfish and stupid?”

Greenwood stood up from his chair, and opened his mouth, but couldn't say anything... there was no rebuttal available for him.

Chapter 400 - The Fairy Clan's Territory

“Back then, if you had stayed in the Forgotten Continent, who could have destroyed your clan? Your ancestors’ worries about being eradicated were absurd. As for being polluted, that’s also utter nonsense. In fact, humans are not as bad as you think. After all, humans are not demons; we have kindness in us, as well as intellect, emotions and desires. There are those who do good, and there are those who do evil. The good outnumber the bad, otherwise your ancestors wouldn’t have become friends with our human clan in the first place. Those who made your ancestors disappointed were the evildoers, the minority.

“Back then, if the Fairy Clan didn’t go into hiding, perhaps the Fairy Clan and humans would have been as close as a family, and perhaps there would be millions of Fairies. Moreover, maybe the Forgotten Continent could have been developed even more. Now, there are a measly 2,000 Fairies left, but your clan could have covered the entire Forgotten Continent, with every year being a better year!

“In order to ‘protect’ your clan, your ancestors cut off the future of the Fairy Clan. Not only did this almost drive your clan to extinction, but also caused the rest of the Forgotten Continent to forget about you! That’s right, your clan isn’t in decline because of the sacrifices you made; it’s because you hid away. The powerful Fairy Clan, that even the Moon God Clan asked for help from, disappeared just like that, and is being forgotten, year after year.

“Now, in the Forgotten Continent, people only know from the history books that there was a clan called the “Fairy Clan”, and know that they were a kind race who loved peace, but nothing else!

One day, if your clan really does go extinct, no one would ever remember you. However, even if the human race went extinct, because of the traces we left behind, even if a hundred, or a thousand, or even ten thousand years pass, we won't be forgotten, as long as the Forgotten Continent still exists!”

“A clan that exists, but is forgotten by the rest of the world... don't you feel that this is quite pitiful? Do you really want to continue to hide? Don't you think that your ancestor's actions back then were stupid?” Yun Meng Xin looked at them as she straightforwardly said.

Greenwood's body swayed, and the ten elders' faces became pale white. Yun Meng Xin's words boomed in their ears like thunder.

“Bang!!”

Granny Witherwood's walking stick smashed into the ground, causing Greenwood to flinch. He thought that she had become angry, but what she said surprised him, “Well said... young lady! Excellently said! That was incredibly sobering and eye-opening! Well said!”

The head elder breathed out, as he said in frustration, “Indeed, well said... only now have my eyes been opened... what were we running away from? Our clan has been in decline for thousands of years; we felt safe, but we were being forgotten by the rest of the Forgotten Continent. We felt proud of ourselves, but had nothing to be proud of... what is the point of living like this? Human girl, well said, well criticised!”

All of the other elders heavily nodded. It was as if they had all been woken up from a dream.

Yun Meng Xin's tone became gentler as she gave a slight bow, "What I said just then was to wake everyone up. I apologise for my rudeness, I hope the seniors won't hold it against me."

Greenwood shook his head and sighed, "Not at all, not at all. What you said was correct. These years, we've been living in our own world. Thank you for waking us up from that. After hearing what you had to say, I am no longer hesitant. The Fairy Clan... must leave from here!"

"Indeed, it is time to leave." Granny Witherwood slowly nodded.

The elders who had been bickering for the past few days all nodded in unison. There was no doubt in their hearts anymore.

"It's just that we have hidden away for too long, and have almost been forgotten by the rest of the Forgotten Continent. Moreover, we only have 2,000 Fairies; how can we rejoin the human world? Young lady, do you have any ideas?"

Greenwood's attitude and tone towards Yun Meng Xin had completely changed. He respected her from the bottom of her heart. This human girl who had peerless looks and incomparable aura was actually very intelligent and persuasive as well. Every word had impacted them greatly, causing them to completely agree with her. Greenwood guessed what her purpose was in coming,

and so courteously asked her for her 'ideas'.

Yun Meng Xin gave a faint smile. Perhaps she had forgotten how powerful her smiles were, but all of the 10 elders were sent into a daze upon seeing it. She said, "I want to ask Chief Greenwood why it is that you need to rejoin the human world, as opposed to getting the humans to draw nearer to you and absorb your clan into the rest of the world? If you rejoin the human world, you will definitely be welcomed and given much respect, but wouldn't you always feel like you were depending on others? Moreover, the power would be in the humans' hands, instead of your own hands."

Yun Meng Xin's words caused them to feel stunned. Greenwood replied, "What you said is true. However, we only have 2,000 Fairies, and the human race has occupied more than half of the Forgotten Continent, and is incredibly large. In their eyes, we are almost nothing. What right do we have to make the humans draw near to us?"

In actuality, the Fairy Clan wasn't as pitiful as Greenwood made it out to be. Although they only had 2,000 Fairies left, they were still a monstrous power that could shake the human world. However, Yun Meng Xin's words had deeply affected them... she had even wiped out all of their arrogance and pride.

Yun Meng Xin didn't directly answer Greenwood's question. Instead, she said the words she had prepared, "Recently, I was reading through the Forgotten Continent Chronicles in order to gain an understanding of the human race and the Fairy Clan. I found that the Fairy Realm is in the Fairy Forest, which isn't the

territory of monsters, nor is it the territory of humans. Rather, it's the Fairy Clan's territory!" "This..."

"I looked over all sorts of records, and confirmed that the Fairy Forest belongs to the Fairies completely. At the same time, the 100 miles around the Fairy Forest does not belong to anyone else. As such, it can be counted as part of the Fairy territory as well. This is because back then, this land belonged to your clan. After you hid yourselves away, no one took the land because the Moon God Clan protected it, indicating that this place would forever belong to the Fairies. Humans were prevented from taking it for their own, so there are no traces of humans in Fairy Forest, as well as in the area 100 miles around it. All of the monsters around here are fairly weak and calm as well."

Those 10 days, Yun Meng Xin had spent all of her time on reading the Forgotten Continent Chronicles. She wanted to understand the Fairy Clan, and was surprised to find that the Fairy Forest, as well as the area around it, still belonged to them.

This was why the Fairy Forest was so beautiful and pure, and had never been developed before.

"Is... Is this true? We still have such a large territory within the Forgotten Continent? This... This is a great blessing from the Moon God Clan." Granny Witherwood said emotionally.

According to their clan records, the Fairy Forest belonged to their Fairy Clan, but after hiding away for thousands of years, they hadn't expected that it still belonged to them, and even the name was still the same.

“Of course it’s true. That piece of land will always belong to you. I believe that the best way to rejoin the world is to build your own city, a city that belongs to the Fairies!”

Yun Meng Xin’s eyes shone beautifully, as she stated her purpose in coming here.

Building a city...

Only with a City Creation Token did one have the right to create a city. The next step was to go to the Forgotten City and ask for a piece of land from the Emperor... only the Forgotten Continent’s Emperor could determine where the city would be built! Moreover, obtaining a piece of land to build a city required an astronomical amount of money. And also, the land that the Emperor gave was usually the worst land... in fact, even meeting the Emperor was incredibly difficult. After all, players could only enter the Royal City after reaching LV50.

However, Yun Meng Xin had discovered something incredible after reading through the Forgotten Continent Chronicles.

That was that they didn’t need permission from the Emperor to build a city on the land owned by the Fairies!

In fact, they didn’t even need a City Creation Token... because the Fairies had absolute control over the land.

However, that didn't mean that the City Creation Token was useless. Only with the City Creation Token did one have the right to become the Lord or Lady of the city, as well as control the settings and rules of the city...

“Build... our own city?” Greenwood's face was filled with confusion. He asked, “Let alone ask what the purpose of building a city is, how would we even build a city? We only have 2,000 Fairies, and don't know anything about construction.”

“Building the city will not be done by just yourselves. Another clan will help you with that. They are the experts at this sort of thing!” Yun Meng Xin said as she smiled.

“Another clan?” The Fairies were completely confused.

“The Dwarves! 30,000 Dwarves! With their talents and their numbers, creating a city won't take too long.” Yun Meng Xin said.

“The Dwarves?!”

The Fairies were completely flabbergasted. Fairy Chief Greenwood, Granny Witherwood, and the 10 elders all shot to their feet. Granny Witherwood hurriedly asked, “Are you really talking about the Dwarves? From the way you're talking... could it be that the Dwarf Clan has reappeared? Didn't their clan go extinct?”

Their reaction made Yun Meng Xin feel shocked. She shook her head, “The Dwarf Clan never went extinct. However, they hid

themselves away more than 10,000 years ago, even earlier than your clan. Recently, Ling Tian coincidentally found them, and discovered that there were still 30,000 of them... it seems that you care about the Dwarves. Could there be some sort of relationship between your clans?”

“The Dwarf Clan... didn’t go extinct, but hid themselves away... this... this is great!” Greenwood looked absolutely delighted, “Young lady, another reason our ancestors led the clan to hide away was because of the Dwarf Clan. The Dwarves are a kind and simple clan, but suffered disaster because of their talents. Our guardian weapon, the Jade Verdict was gifted to us by the Dwarf Clan, so our ancestors tried to help and protect the Dwarves as much as possible... however, the Dwarves suffered a catastrophe, and disappeared. There were rumours that they had become extinct because of the Demon Beast Clan. Our ancestors felt incredibly guilty, and blamed themselves for the Dwarves’ demise. If... If we can become closer with the Dwarves, that would be wonderful-even if it was to make up for our inability to protect them back then and fulfill our ancestor’s wishes. The Dwarves are incredibly talented, but harbor no ill-will. We can be completely at ease with them!”